

ÉDITIONS GALAAD

# **Inquisitiô**

**(The three angels' message), tome III.**

The reality of the attack of the little horn of Daniel 7 against the Law of God and the times of prophecy. Prophetic part

(Revised and supplemented version – reissue)

1st collector's edition: *Love of Heaven  
for the salvation of the Christian people*

**IMPORTANT:**

**This book is free and not for sale**

Kenny Ronald MARGUERITE

## Table of contents

° 1 - Introduction.....	7
° <b>The reality of the times of the tragedy of the centuries.....</b>	<b>11</b>
° 2 - The purpose of the messages of the three angels of the apocalypse .....	12
- 2.1. The purpose of the message of the first angel of the apocalypse.....	13
° 3 - The manifestation of God's grace through the crucifixion of Jesus Christ.....	26
- 3.1. The purpose of the plan of salvation through God's grace that was enacted by the crucifixion of Jesus Christ.....	30
- 3.2. The measures put in place to redeem man from the wages of sin.....	41
- 3.3. The role that the law plays in the great cosmic conflict between the devil and his servants against God and his people.....	62
- 3.4. The difference between those living under God's grace and those living under the law.....	71
- 3.5. What role should the law play in the lives of those who are saved by the grace that has been manifested in Jesus Christ?.....	82
- 3.6. The unloved commandment and its sustainability in God's work.....	95
° 4 - The role of the law that God magnified through his son Jesus Christ.....	108
- 4.1. Practical application of the royal law which was fulfilled by Jesus Christ.....	126
° 5 - Biblical guidelines for keeping the Sabbath.....	154
- 5.1. ABC of Bible basics for keeping the Sabbath.....	155
- 5.2. The Sabbath is a bond of Love between men.....	174
- 5.3. Basis for the prohibition of working on the Sabbath and the exceptions.....	183
- 5.4. New works of love that can be done on the Sabbath.....	190

° 6 – Satanic Counterfeit Sabbaths.....	209
– 6.1. Can the Sabbath day be swapped with another day?.....	210
– 6.2. The Sabbath and jet lag.....	219
– 6.3. Difference between the Sabbath (fourth of the ten commandments) and the sabbaths (commandment of the ceremonial law).....	223
– 6.4. The nonsense of the observance by modern-day Christians of the ancient Jewish holidays.....	228
° 7 – The mystery of the missing day from the three days when Jesus Christ remained in the tomb.....	241
° 8 – The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn.....	259
° 9 – The obscure plans of the dominator of nations.....	295
– 9.1. New type of action from the iniquitous falsifier.....	313
° 10 – The reality of prophetic times .....	327
– 10.1. The anti-dream/vision and anti-Law of God plans fomented by the little horn.....	345
– 10.2. The true value of time attacked by the little horn.....	353
° 11 – The purpose of the message of the second angel of the apocalypse.....	365
° 12 – Prophetic realities presenting the identity of the beastly lamb of Revelation 13.....	400
° 13 – Literal materialization of the iniquitous union of the bestial lamb and the beast with seven heads and ten horns.....	424
° 14 – The reality of the false prophet who is at the service of the apocalyptic beast, servant of the demon.....	444
° 15 – Who has the most interest in the falsification of the Prophecy.....	462

° 16 – The purpose of the message of the third angel of the apocalypse	476
– 16.1. The modalities of the sealing of the two peoples (that of God and that of the beast)	479
– 16.2. The prophetic reality that hides behind the symbols “buy” and “sell”	516
° 17 – The reality of the judges of the last judgment and the subtle plans of the demon by which he seeks to make these judges ineligible	547

## **Thanks to my friend**

### **Mrs. Nicole MARIE-LOUISE**

Before telling you about her, I would like to invite you to pause for a moment, to consider a concept that is directly related to the text of *[Romans 13 verse 7]*.

This text invites us, among other things, to give praise where it is due. Based on this text, I am going to tell you about my friend Nicole, and to do this, I would like to tell you that she has collaborated on all of my books, including this one, giving shape to my words and magnifying my ideas without altering them.

It is she who gives meaning to my ideas and manages to faithfully transcribe my thoughts by making them come alive.

However, she worked, and still works, knowing that these books will be offered free of charge in a digital format. So the precious help she gives me is not based on self-interest, but rather only out of love of God, and her passion for writing and her desire to support me.

In return for all of this time that she has graciously granted, I ask you to keep her and her family in your prayers and to grant them your blessing, in the mighty name of Jesus Christ our Lord and Master.

## **Dedication to my daughter**

*This book is for you, my little princess, my daughter Laëlou.*

*With these lines, I want to tell you that I love you!*

May these pages, like an anchor, root you in the Lord. You are in my life, like an eternal dream and an Edenic vision, even if circumstances have not always allowed me to express it to you.

I am writing these lines to you so that you may always know the truth which, in Jesus Christ, enlightens and liberates. May this book be for you a guide leading to eternity. The objective being that you are an Edenic light on the celestial mountain!

I glorify the Lord for allowing you to grow in wisdom by endowing you with a beautiful soul. May the love of the truth manifested in the Lord always be your priority. Never bow down to injustice !

By doing so you will always be victorious.

ÉDITIONS EDT SAS



*Culture is the lever allowing  
men to aspire to excellence.*

*Do not neglect it.*

**(Of Feather and actions)**

Copyright © 2023 ÉDITIONS GALAAD  
Californie 97232 Le LAMENTIN (MARTINIQUE)  
**<https://kenny-ronald-marguerite.com>**

All rights of reproduction, adaptation and translation, in whole or in part, reserved for all countries The author is the sole owner of the rights and is responsible for the contents of this book.

ISBN : 978-2-37399-107-9

### **GOOD TO KNOW:**

Only 60% of the English in this book has been corrected by a professional, so there are bound to be some mistakes in it, for which I apologise in advance. I did not want to delay sending it out as quickly as possible to those for whom it is intended and that is why I decided to publish the English version without it being fully corrected.

Nevertheless I would like to congratulate and thank Mr. Howard Eeles for the quality of his work which means that English-speaking readers can now fully understand and appreciate the contents of the already corrected parts of this book.

I salute his enthusiasm, the excellence of his work and his professionalism and I know that he has succeeded in his task.

I therefore hope that you too will appreciate the great value of his work already done. God bless him!

**M. Howard J. Eeles,**  
**The Marlow Language Centre Limited, Oxford Road,**  
**Marlow, Buckinghamshire, SL7 2NN, Royaume-Uni.**

## 1 Introduction

To get to the heart of the matter, I would like to tell you that, in a world that is invisible to us, tragedies are currently taking place whose repercussions for humanity are worse than those recounted by the Greeks. Their consequences being the death of the greatest number of people both literally and spiritually.

As far as physical deaths are concerned I know that you will certainly not disagree with me, because all of humanity has been under the yoke of the *deadly Coronavirus* for many months.

This scourge has wreaked and continues to wreak havoc across the face of the earth, holding all nations hostage and decimating their populations. Faced with this dramatic and unprecedented situation, questions are pouring in:

*Where does this disease come from? Is it a virus that originated in nature and which has mutated? Or is it a chemical weapon, created intentionally? And if so, why is this virus in the wild? And if so, how did this virus get into the wild? Has it been inadvertently released, or is it part of a conspiracy by an obscure group to destroy much of humanity?*

As I am not a scientist or an investigator for the secret service, I cannot answer you, but, I can tell you who is behind all of the diseases and calamities which strike the world. To discover his identity, I invite you to read the texts of [Job 1] and [Job 2].

In these lines we see how Satan killed Job's children. To do this, he used high winds to simultaneously batter the four corners of the house where they were gathered. The devil also manipulated bloodthirsty tribes to kill Job's servants in order to steal his flocks.

We also discover how the devil controls and uses disease.

He struck Job down with an ulcer that left sores all over his body.

In [Matthew 24] and [Luke 21 verses 10-36], we get a hint of what the final days will be like, there will be wars, diseases, famines, etc. By reading this, we understand that it is the devil who is at the helm.

The purpose of all of these things is to mark the end of the world and to let us know that we live in the century when the devil runs amok, because he knows he has little time left and that's why he is unleashed like a hungry lion

The devil is always at work when there is trouble in the air and he will soon inflict another tragedy on humanity much worse than *Covid 19* and here I am talking about the *mark of the beast!* It will be a spiritual tragedy and will lead to the loss of *millions of people.*

Whoever receives this mark will *end up burning in the lake of fire and brimstone* and whoever does not have it will not be able to “*buy*” or “*sell*” and will be killed by an iniquitous entity which is an apocalyptic lamb with two horns.

As we shall see, only the “*saints*” will be spared!

This eminently strange being, although he is the one who bestows the mark of the beast, the latter does not belong to him.

He who is, is a beast with seven heads and ten horns, who serves the devil. The mark of the beast is therefore by extension the mark of the demon! It thus appears that two choices will soon be offered to all of humanity:

*The first is to receive the mark of the beast which is acquired by revering the devil, rejecting the Lord or his Word.*

*The second choice is to remain faithful to God and to be sealed by the Holy Spirit to avoid the grip of the demon and his minions.*

What we have just seen is the core of the message of the three angels of the apocalypse, the gist of which is the plea to leave Babylon, which practises the works of the lamb-like two-horned beast.



This leads, as we have seen, to receiving the mark of the beast, without which no one can buy or sell.

We will also see how over the centuries God's people, the Lord's beautiful and delicate bride, came to copulate with the beast and worse, like a courtesan, she has conceived illegitimate children with her iniquitous lover. In these lines we will lift the veil on the identity of Babylon the Great (*the sultry horsewoman who rides a scarlet beast*).

We will also decipher the reality hidden behind the mark of the beast which, in the Book of Revelation, seems to come out of nowhere and will afflict vast numbers of people.

For many, it would be an implanted chip, by means of vaccines against *covid 19*. However, is that what the Bible tells us about this?

We will see it! We will also see the literal reality behind the “*sell and buy*” symbols inseparable from the mark of the beast. Is it literal money here? Are they not rather prophetic symbols, presenting a completely different reality, which is in no way monetary?

We will see it! In addition, we will also do a study on how God's seal works (*without which no one will be able to have access to the Kingdom of God*) and will find out about its nature and how it is obtained.

The seal of God and of Christ being directly linked to obedience to the Holy Scriptures, we will first see the place occupied by God's law and especially the Sabbath in the great cosmic conflict between Satan and his fallen angels (*demons*) and God, those holy angels and the Lord's chosen people.

The devil's greatest need is not to be judged and that's why his supreme goal is to seduce God's faithful children, if he possibly can [*Matthew 24 verse 24*].

The devil does this with the primary purpose of making God's people unworthy, because he is the one who will have to judge them ; In order to achieve his ends, he infiltrated his servants among God's people who, while serving him (*the devil*), gave themselves the facade of holiness [*1 Corinthians 6 verses 2-3*], [*2 Corinthians 11 verses 13-15*].

The most powerful, the most virulent and the bloodiest of his servants is presented prophetically as a little horn, which will *martyr, despoil* and *kill*, God's people. His mission will also be to try to change *times* and the *law* [Daniel 7 verses 23-27].

*We will discover how the plans of the devil to take out of the hands of the people of God these two powerful weapons, the law and the times – these times are, as we shall see, in fact those of prophecy – have been fully realized through his powerful servant called the little horn.*

The attacks of this iniquitous being are aimed at making God's people unfit to be with Jesus upon his return. In order to understand this, we must first of all know that this people that Christ will seek upon his return is known as the remnant church.

The points that make them recognisable are that they keep the Lord's commandments (*therefore his holy law*) and that they have the testimony of Jesus (*the spirit of prophecy*).

We will discover how keeping or not keeping God's law will decide who are God's people and who belong to the devil. We will also discover how the law and God's grace are complementary and according to the Lord must co-exist among his faithful people.

Once these basics have been established, we will continue our journey to the Holy Land, but we will make another type of stop.

*We will stop to study the three most important days and nights in the history of mankind.*

*Without them no one would have been saved! To do this we will go to the foot of the bloody cross of Christ at Golgotha, then to the tomb of the King of kings and we will end our excursion with the resurrection of the Lord of lords.*

*Through historical and prophetic biblical texts, we will discover the mystery hiding behind the three days and three nights where, like Jonah, Jesus Christ had to remain in the grave.*

## *The reality of the times of the tragedy of the centuries*

*"One of the most valuable goods that exists, and that we cannot sell or buy, is time. Although we are free to enjoy it as we see fit, we are not the owners but the stewards to whom God has entrusted its management. The Lord has instituted various types of times in order to give victory to His children over all the forces of evil.*

*May we, therefore, always know these times, in order to be always, in time and in hours and in all times, victorious over all the sophisms and bastions of the enemy of our souls, the devil, to whom there is no more time left, and who in order to gain time has perverted the times".*

*[Quote from Kenny R MARGUERITE].*

## 2 The purpose of the messages of the three angels of the apocalypse

**7**o begin this chapter, I would like to point out that we often handle things that are familiar to us without fully understanding them.

Then one day a person comes along and explains a feature of one of these objects that we didn't know about, even though we thought we knew and mastered all of its ins and outs.

I've been through this situation before:

*I had my car for a good five years, but I didn't know it had six gears. Having always had five-speed cars before and having bought it second-hand, it was obvious to me that five gears were normal for this type of car.*

*Therefore I was very surprised when after having lent it to my brother he told me the news.*

*It took me almost five years to master all of the intricacies of my car, even though for a long time I thought I knew it inside out.*

*I believe that this situation I have just presented is synonymous with the message of the three angles of the apocalypse and especially with regard to the first of these messages.*

Christians are familiar with this message. At least the most devout ones are. It represents the last phase of salvation.

In this book we will therefore consider the relevance of these angelic messages in this important century, because they separate people into two categories, one for God and the other for the devil.

This book will present these messages in turn, as well as the symbols related to the final conflict. If we do not recognize them, we will be surprised when their time comes and that would be fatal to us! So let's be vigilant!

## 2.1 The purpose of the message of the first angel of the apocalypse

In the following sections we are going to discover the message of the first angel of the apocalypse, but this study is not conducted in the way a trained theologian would deal with it. My objective in this regard is to present the evidence from God's Word.

In order to carry out this study, I am going to highlight the main symbols of the various texts that we are going to consider.

I will explain them to you, as laid out in God's word.

*With this foundation in place we can then get to the heart of the matter.*

The objective of this chapter is to present the correlation that exists between the message of the first angel of the apocalypse and the fourth commandment of the decalogue urging us to observe the Sabbath. We are going to consider this fact immediately. In order to do so we will read what the Bible says about this message:

**"And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him;**

**For the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters".** [*Revelation 14 verses 6-7, King James Bible*].

The message of the first angel is important, because it is the key to determining who will be the saints, as well as those who will receive the mark of the beast.

Its primary purpose is a call to worship the Lord, fear Him and give Him glory.

To understand the true scope of the message of the first angel of the apocalypse, it is important to understand how we ought to give glory to the Lord and how we should worship Him.

The following provides information: "*And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth:*

**I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. [...]**

**I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world:** *thine they were, and thou gavest them me;*

*And they have kept thy word. [...]* **For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. [...]** **I have given them thy word;**

*And the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. [...]* **Sanctify them through thy truth:**

**Thy word is truth. [...]** **And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.**

**And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them".** [John 17 verses 3-4, 6, 8, 14, 17, 19, 26, King James Bible].

Let's conclude with this text: "**But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all: And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest;**

*And so falling down on his face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth".* [1 Corinthians 14 verse 24-25, King James Bible].

We worship the Lord by walking in accordance with the guidelines He has established in His Word and it is also imperative that as Christians, we teach others to do the same. The same principle applies when it comes to glorifying the Lord. The following text explains: "**And I'll be the poet who sings your glory — and live what I sing every day".** [Psalm 71 verse 8, The Message Bible (MSG)].

Now that we have seen how we ought to worship and glorify the Lord, let us discover how these things can be rejected:

**"For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.**

*For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:*

**Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.**

*Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.*

*Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:*

**Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen".** [*Romans 1 verses 18-25, King James Bible*].

Whenever we practise the teachings of men at the expense of God's Word, we take away the glory that is due to the Lord, instead we unwittingly glorify those who have brought those teachings to us.

By honouring the teachings of men at the expense of God's Word, we dishonour the Lord and become hypocrites before Him.

We find evidence of this in the work of the Pharisees.

This is how they acted: *"So the Pharisees and scribes asked Jesus, "Why do Your disciples not live their lives according to the tradition of the elders, but [instead] eat their bread with [ceremonially] unwashed hands?"*

*He replied, "Rightly did Isaiah prophesy about you hypocrites (play-actors, pretenders), as it is written [in Scripture], "These people honor Me with their lips, But their heart is far from Me.*

*'They worship Me in vain [their worship is meaningless and worthless, a pretense], Teaching the precepts of men as doctrines [giving their traditions equal weight with the Scriptures].'*

**You disregard and neglect the commandment of God, and cling [faithfully] to the tradition of men.”**

He was also saying to them, “You are experts at setting aside and nullifying the commandment of God in order to keep your [man-made] tradition and regulations. For Moses said, ‘Honor your father and your mother [with respect and gratitude]’;

And, ‘He who speaks evil of his father or mother must be put to death’; but you [Pharisees and scribes] say, ‘If a man tells his father or mother, “Whatever I have that would help you is Corban, (that is to say, already a gift to God),” then you no longer let him do anything for his father or mother [since helping them would violate his vow of Corban];

*So you nullify the [authority of the] word of God [acting as if it did not apply] because of your tradition which you have handed down [through the elders]. And you do many things such as that.” [Mark 7 verses 5-13, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

By rejecting God’s precepts in order to follow other teachings like the Pharisees, we become the children and the servants of the devil [John 8 verses 38-48], [1 John 3 verses 8-12].

There is no need to hold black masses to worship the devil, because by transgressing God’s Word, we then become willingly or unwillingly the servants and children of the devil. Selectively adapting the Gospel in order to justify our religious teachings, makes us reprehensible before God. We must remember that we should never add to or subtract from God’s Word. We must bear in mind that we ought to put it into practise as laid out in His word.

*Let's return to our study.*

The epicentre of the message of the first angel of the apocalypse is the reason why we must worship the Lord. Let us review what is presented: “[...] **And worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters**”.

Here, this angel invites humanity to give glory to God for his creative work.

*To those who reject the Sabbath have you ever wondered how you can give glory to God as the Creator of all things?*



God established the Sabbath as an everlasting eternal monument in recognition of His work as creator of heaven and earth: *"Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God:*

*In it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates:*

**For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it".** [Exodus 20 verses 8-11, King James Bible].

Let's finish with this other text: **"If you refrain from trampling the sabbath, from following your own pursuits on my holy day;**

**If you call the sabbath a delight, the Lord's holy day glorious;**

**If you glorify it by not following your ways, seeking your own interests, or pursuing your own affairs"** [Isaiah 58 verse 13, New American Bible "Revised Edition" (NABRE)].

The Sabbath is to be observed as a memorial of God's creation.

He who worked and created all things in six days and rested on the seventh. This day was not established because he was tired – for he is God and does not grow weary [Isaiah 40 verse 28] –, but to be a day of celebration to commemorate the memorial of his divine creation, where everything that was created was very good.

*The Sabbath is meant to present the glory of God manifested in creation. When we observe the Sabbath we submit to God and publicly pledge our allegiance to Him recognising Him as the creator of all things and the supreme ruler over our lives.*

By rejecting the Sabbath, we take away from the Lord the glory and worship that He deserves as the creator.

As we continue our study, I would like to emphasise the message of the first angel of the apocalypse in his call to fear God, keep His commandments and give glory to Him as the creator of all things.

It is true that it is by God's grace that we are saved and not by the works of the law. God wants us to keep his law not in order to be saved by it, but because we love him.

And for those who are saved by God's grace, it is not difficult since the holy Spirit has engraved God's law in their hearts. Nevertheless, they should bear in mind that the observance of the fourth of the ten commandments is what testifies to the world that they are God's people. Here is what we can read about it in the scripture:

*"Then the LORD said to Moses, "Tell the Israelites [sons/ children of Israel], 'You must keep the rules about [guard; keep] my Sabbaths, because they will be a sign [reminders of the covenant; 9:13; 17:11] between you and me from now on.*

**In this way you will know that I, the LORD, make you holy.**

*[...] There are six days for working, but the seventh day is a day of rest, a day holy for the Lord. [...]*

**The Sabbath day will be a sign between me and the Israelites [sons/ children of Israel] forever, because in six days I, the Lord, made the sky [heavens] and the earth. On the seventh day I did not work; I rested [Gen. 2:1-3]". [Exodus 31 verses 12-13, 15 and 17, Expanded Bible (EXB)].**

We have already seen that God's law has been given to Israel and from now on God's children are made up of all those who make a covenant with Christ as well as the Jewish people.

The Sabbath is therefore the visible sign that allows the nations (*those living without God*) to know that the Lord has set a people apart who belong to Him. To those who do not keep the Sabbath, do you now realise what it means not to keep the Sabbath and failing to give the Lord the glory due to Him on this day?

*By not observing the Sabbath you keep silent in the face of those who do not serve or do not know the Lord.*

**The commandment of the Sabbath is the only one which requires a public witness of our love for the Lord.**

**You can quietly observe all of the others, but not the Sabbath!**

**Example:** *You can be an adulterer and hide in a foreign country so that no one sees you.*

*You can be an idolater without worshipping a statue, but having money as an idol or love of the world as a totem [Matthew 6 verse 24], [James 4 verses 1-10].*

*Or you can, like the Pharisees quoted in [Mark 7 verses 1-13] find a way to break the law not to honour your parents, without it being considered in the eyes of the majority as a reprehensible act, etc. You can do all this without others ever knowing it, but he who keeps the Sabbath gives distinctive signs, the most remarkable of which is not to work on that day!*

The commandment of the Sabbath calls for a testimony and a stand on behalf of the Lord, to the detriment of our will.

By agreeing to worship God on the Sabbath, we proclaim loud and clear that we are not ashamed to testify before our fellow men, that we submit to and love the eternal Father as the creator of all things.

We are called upon not to be ashamed to testify for the Lord in all that we do. Those who do otherwise will be rejected by Him [Matthew 10 verses 32-39].

Therefore those who do not give the glory due to Him on the Sabbath will be rejected by the Lord.

*Furthermore I would like to tell you that for every action there is a reaction. This being the case the falsification of the fourth commandment, which enjoins us to observe the Sabbath, has repercussions that go far beyond human beings.*

*As human beings we have a choice between two masters (God and Satan). Our choice of whether or not to observe the Sabbath day that the Lord has instigated, determines who we serve. To understand the scope of rejecting the Sabbath and in order to follow the teachings of our religion, one must never lose sight of the fact that you cannot serve two masters at the same time.*

Here is what God's Word says on this subject:

**"No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; Or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon". [Matthew 6 verse 24, King James Bible].**

Since we cannot serve the Lord while practising the teachings of men, the devil incites men to defy God's Word by making changes to His word which automatically assures him of their allegiance.

We must be aware that Satan does not want us to worship God and give Him the glory that is due to Him.

*This fact is unbearable for the devil! Due to his insatiable desire for power and glory, which resulted in him fomenting a war in heaven, Lucifer (the angel of light) lost his place in heaven and brought misery and desolation to the world.*

*The devil's desire is to be worshipped and he entices people to follow the teachings of man instead of the principles of God.*

Satan's immeasurable thirst to be worshipped is clearly demonstrated in the following text [Luke 4 verses 1-13], where, among other things, we see him putting plans in place to try to get Jesus to worship him.

We also see the devil asking Christ to walk using his sight and not his faith. Had Jesus fallen down and worshipped Satan, he would have given His allegiance to the devil and therefore despised His Father's (The eternal GOD's) word.

This would have resulted in Christ losing His place in heaven and the plan for man's salvation would have gone!

*It is important to know that because of the character of the Sabbath that requires people to worship and glorify God, the devil, through his servant "the little horn" perpetrated a vendetta against the observers of the Sabbath.*

*Going so far as to strip them of their earthly belongings and put many of them to death. To discover these awful facts, I invite you to read the volume II of this book in the chapter entitled "The bloodthirsty legislative legacy".*

*All of the innocent blood that has been shed as well as the new doctrines of certain religions that desecrate the Sabbath had and have only one goal, namely to take from the Lord the worship and glory due to Him.*

*It is for this reason Satan attacks the Sabbath in particular, causing people not to honour the Lord on this day.*

Satan's objective is not to lead you to defy all of God's commandments, for he knows that by studying the Bible you will see through "*the ruse*". Rather, it is based on a biblical fact which is presented in the following text:

*"This royal law [because God the king decreed it, or because it is the supreme law] is found in the Scriptures: "Love your neighbor as you love yourself [Lev. 19:18; Matt. 22:37–40]." If you [or If you really;*

*Or If you, however,] obey [fulfill; carry out] this law, you are doing right [well]. But if you treat one person as being more important than another [show favoritism/partiality; 2:1], you are sinning.*

*You are guilty of breaking God's law [convicted by the law as lawbreakers/ transgressors]. [For] A person who follows [keeps; obeys] all of God's law but fails to obey even one command [stumbles/falls in one point] is guilty of breaking all the commands in that law.*

*[For] The same God who said, "You must not be guilty of [commit] adultery [Ex. 20:14; Deut. 5:18]," also said, "You must not murder anyone [Ex. 20:13; Deut. 5:17]."*

*So if you do not take part in [commit] adultery but you murder someone, you are guilty of breaking all of God's law [you have become a breaker/ transgressor of the law; Matt. 5:18–19; Gal. 5:3].*

**In everything you say and do, remember that you [So speak and so act as those who] will be judged by the law that makes people free [of freedom/liberty]". [James 2 verses 8-12, Expanded Bible (EXB)].**

The bible says **"A person who follows [keeps; obeys] all of God's law but fails to obey even one command [stumbles/falls in one point] is guilty of breaking all the commands in that law"**.

Even though you may not be an adulterer, murderer, idolater, thief, etc., if you do not keep the Sabbath, before God, you are as guilty as those who practise these things.

The Lord has not changed; He does not accept that we worship Him in a way that transgresses His Word. The Lord calls upon us to worship him truthfully with all our heart.

Those who have not paid heed to God's specific instructions in the past, have paid with their lives. Here is a famous example:

**"And when they came to Nachon's threshingfloor, Uzzah put forth his hand to the ark of God, and took hold of it; for the oxen shook it. And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Uzzah; and God smote him there for his error;**

*And there he died by the ark of God. And David was displeased, because the LORD had made a breach upon Uzzah: and he called the name of the place Perezuzzah to this day". [2 Samuel 6 verses 6-8, King James Bible].*

Let us conclude with this: **"And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire therein, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the LORD, which he commanded them not.**

*And there went out fire from the LORD, and devoured them, and they died before the LORD.*

*Then Moses said unto Aaron, This is it that the LORD spake, saying, I will be sanctified in them that come nigh me, and before all the people I will be glorified. And Aaron held his peace". [Leviticus 10 verses 1-3, King James Bible].*

Uzza acted out of love for the Lord and did not want the ark of God to fall to the ground. Unfortunately for him only the Levites were allowed to touch the ark.

Since he did not belong to this tribe the Lord struck him down for his transgression.

For their part, Aaron's sons brought strange fire before the Lord.

Despite their position as priests amongst God's people they perished by the Lord's fire. Therefore, the Lord cannot accept the abnormal cults that some Christians bring to Him, where they claim to worship Him whilst offending His Word.

Here is what our God declares on this subject: **"Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth: for the LORD hath spoken, I have nourished and brought up children, and they have rebelled against me. The ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib:**

*But Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider. [...] Why should ye be stricken any more? ye will revolt more and more: the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint.*

*From the sole of the foot even unto the head there is no soundness in it; but wounds, and bruises, and putrifying sores: they have not been closed, neither bound up, neither mollified with ointment. [...]*

**To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the LORD: I am full of the burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he goats. When ye come to appear before me, who hath required this at your hand, to tread my courts?**

**Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination unto me [...] I cannot away with; it is iniquity, even the solemn meeting. [...]**

**And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear: Your hands are full of blood".** [Isaiah 1 verses 2-3, 5-6, 11-13, 15, King James Bible].

*Our worship of the Lord Almighty whilst breaking the Sabbath which is reserved for Him is an abomination to Him!*

By not observing the Sabbath while worshipping the Lord, we become as guilty before Him as if we had gone to a pagan temple to sacrifice our first-born son to the "Sun god" on his day of worship.

So, if we don't repent by making a firm decision to keep the Sabbath, we will be rejected by the Lord because of this sin that we commit.

And thus, no matter how much service you may have rendered in the cause of God, this is what happens to those who commit such an offence, which we find in this text:

**"Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name?"**

**And in thy name have cast out devils? And in thy name done many wonderful works?**

**And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity".** [*Matthieu 7 verses 21-23, King James Bible*].

*What happens in this text is terrible.*

You can imagine here we have people in whom the Spirit of God lives, because it is the Holy Spirit who gives the spiritual gifts which are reserved for God's people.

Therefore, they are consecrated persons [*1 Corinthians 12 verses 1, 4-11*], [*1 Corinthians 14 verses 12*].

They have worked for the Lord in spectacular ways, the proof of which relates to the miracles that some did, when casting out devils, healing the sick, raising the dead etc. all in the name of the Lord.

*Yet on the day when Jesus Christ returns they will be rejected.*

And the reason for this rejection is that they committed the iniquity, which is a sin and which in itself is the transgression of God's law [*1 John 5 verse 17, Bible Louis Second*], [*1 John 3 verses 4, Bible Louis Second*].

As Christians we must not treat God's law like a buffet, where we can choose what pleases us and reject what we don't like.



By doing so we become guilty of breaking all of the commandments. Many people have no issue with the commandments "*do not steal*" and "*do not kill*" but when it comes to the observance of the Sabbath, they say that this commandment has been abolished.

Many people reject this fact and sadly, they will be shocked when they are rejected by the Lord on judgment day.

These people who are shown to be sinning against God's law will face destruction.

*What I have just presented is terrible!*

In spite of all of the good works that they have carried out for and through the Lord, these people will be judged to have broken all of the commandments. They will be thrown into the flames of hell along with the murderers or adulterers.

**Example:** *by violating the Sabbath, you are as reprehensible as Hitler, because it is not the amount of sin that condemns you. Look at Adam and Eve.*

*Their only sin was to eat a fruit that God had forbidden.*

*Know that the wages of sin is death, so that the severity of violation of God's Word makes the serial killer and the violator of the Sabbath entitled to the same final fate: To be burned in gehenna of fire!*

It is vital to understand that once we are saved in Jesus Christ, we have a choice to make, because we cannot revere God and violate His holy law in order to practise human teachings.

In the text of [*Hebrews 4 verses 1-11*], we will soon study that it remains a Sabbath day. Therefore, be wise, choose today to observe the Lord's holy Sabbath!

Remember the goal will be the destruction of Satan, as well as all of those (*angels and human beings*) who violate the Lord's commandments and who because of their behaviour will receive the mark of the beast.

Throughout the chapters that make up the two volumes of this book, we will continue to see how God's law is the basis of the messages of the three angels.

### 3 The manifestation of God's grace through the crucifixion of Jesus Christ

To begin this chapter I want to tell you that, in my opinion, some words only take on any real significance for us when we have to face what they actually mean in our everyday lives.

One of these words is “*discrimination*”. Until we have suffered its “*sting*”, we cannot understand how much this word can hurt.

**Example:** *You are a woman and you work hard, in order to deserve an executive position within your company.*

*You already hold this position on an interim basis following the death of the manager who occupied it and your superiors have repeatedly complimented you on the excellent work you provide.*

*When the new executive is about to be appointed everyone quite naturally thinks that you will get the job.*

*But to your surprise and to everyone's amazement, it is your subordinate, whom you have trained, but who has not yet mastered all of the tricks of the trade who gets the job.*

*When discussing it with the big boss, i.e. with the company's Managing Director, he tells you that a strategic choice had to be made for the image of the company, because a woman is less credible than a man in such a position.*

*And, although he does not have your training, your colleague has charisma, which according to your boss will be a most important asset for the company.*

Unfortunately, in this century, this little story is only too common!

*Sex, skin colour or religion* can be the reasons that discriminate against us. The moral of the story is that when we are discriminated against, whatever its source, it always hurts.

For me the second word which has a very far-reaching influence in our lives and which we only really measure when we come across it is GRACE. The most glaring manifestation of this word was the crucifixion of Jesus Christ in order to redeem us.

And here are the ways enabling us to benefit from it: **"That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.**

**For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God"** [*Ephesians 2 verses 7-8, King James Bible*].

Throughout this chapter, we will discover the manifestation of God's grace that was offered to us, through the bloody cross of Christ to redeem us from sin. To continue, I want to tell you that we live in a world where we often pay more attention to effects rather than causes.

Let's take a concrete example:

*That of a mother who is very permissive with her child and has not taught him any limits. From an early age she allowed him to do whatever he pleased.*

*When he wanted something, even if she said no, she allowed him to take it anyway. This is the situation that unfolded as this mother, laughingly declared to her friends, who were watching one of these scenes when her son was disobedient:*

*"He has a lot of character!" And is very proud, she added: "He will not let anyone stand in his way when he is older!"*

*Unfortunately what is grown in the privacy of one's own home always ends up bearing fruit in society. We now find our little rascal at 6 years old. He is in the supermarket with his mother and he wants a packet of candy, which he asks for out loud.*

*But to his amazement, she replies: "NO! You eat too much sugar!" Upon hearing these words, under the astonished eyes of those who were in the same queue at the checkout, we see him disregarding his mother and putting the object of his desire in the shopping cart as if nothing had happened.*

*Feeling outraged by her son's reaction, she scolds him and puts back the object of the crime. But there, much to her surprise, the little scoundrel starts to cry and collapses on the ground gesturing and shouting, leaving his mother ashamed and practically on the verge of a heart attack.*

*To justify herself, she says: "This is the first time he has done this to me!" Morality matters, because what we sow we reap.*

*This scene was none other than the results of what had been fuelled long ago.*

*By doing so the sown seed now bore fruit.*

What I have just presented highlights for me the importance of the rules of decency which are the basis of the education we have received and which we instil in our children.

Likewise, the rules governing society, of which established laws are a part, guarantee its balance. It is thanks to them that the wicked cannot rob the weak with impunity.

They are what keeps society from falling apart. It is the same with God's people. Here is what we can read about it in the Holy Book:

**"To the law and to the testimony! If people do not speak according to this word, there will be no dawn for them.**

**They will pass through the land, distressed and starving, but when this takes place and they are starving, they will be frustrated, and they will curse their king and their God.**

**They will turn their faces upward"** [*Isaiah 8 verses 20-21, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Let's finish with this: *"Where there is no word from God [vision; prophecy], people are uncontrolled [the people perish], but those who obey what they have been taught [guard the law] are happy [blessed]"*. [*Proverbs 29 verse 18, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

*In God's Word as in everyday life, causes always have their effects!*

The lack of any instilled and enforced rules of conduct inexorably ends up leading *to anarchy and perdition.*

In this world, as in the spiritual one, the law is intended to allow us to live a balanced and therefore happy life.

I humbly believe that everyone who loves God's Word should agree with what I have just said.

*Because who does not like to know that one is legally and spiritually protected against theft, adultery, embezzlement and false testimony, etc. initiated by strangers or even our own children.*

However, although we love the peace that observance of the law, by others and ourselves, provides, in my view there is a great deal of confusion among some Christians between the sustainability of the law and its coexistence with *God's grace as manifested in Jesus Christ.*

Some are aware that God's law, in the form of his ten commandments, has not been repealed, but they are convinced that it exists only for those who have not made a covenant with Jesus.

For them, as they are saved by Christ's grace and are therefore no longer subject to the law, they are not required to observe it!

Paradoxically, the very people who say that by being under God's grace they no longer have to keep the law, naturally observe nine of the Ten Commandments every day:

*They only revere the Eternal God, they do not bow down before statues (idols), they revere the name of the Lord, they refrain from adultery, robbery, murder or false testimony.*

*In addition, they live lives free from lust and honour their parents.*

What I have just presented is certainly your situation. If that is the case, a problem remains, because if your answer is yes, well, I regret to inform you that you are mechanically observing the law.

So that you may be clear about everything that we have just listed in this chapter, with Bible in hand, we will study what place the law must have in the lives of those who are saved by God's grace.

### 3.1 The purpose of the plan of salvation through God's grace that was enacted by the crucifixion of Jesus Christ

With the advent of the *Coronavirus* in our daily lives and the measures put in place to eradicate it, we understand that any plan to save as many people as possible must have a common enemy.

It is the same with the plan of salvation, which was manifested through Jesus Christ. In this context, it is a powerful angel (*a cherub*) who takes on the role of *the evil bad guy*. His story is told to us in [Ezekiel 28 verses 11-18].

This text teaches us that a guardian angel, who was the model of perfection, which for me is a powerful and flawless being, sinned because his heart was uplifted due to his beauty and his brilliance perverted his wisdom.

The one whose brilliance is mentioned in this text appears to be "like a beacon", therefore a "torch-bearer of God", hence his name:

*Lucifer, which is a word based on the Latin words "lux" and "ferre", which mean respectively "light" and "to bear". Lucifer therefore means "bearer of Light".*

There is mention in the Bible of a being who can be qualified as a "bearer of Luciferian light": "This does not surprise us [And no wonder, since...]. Even Satan changes himself to look like [disguises himself as; masquerades as] an angel [messenger] of light [trying to fool people into thinking he is from God, who is pure light]". [2 Corinthians 11 verset 14, Expanded Bible (EXB)].

For your information, in order to understand the definition of the word "Satan", it is necessary to analyse its Hebrew root "Šāṭān" which means "the adversary" or "the accuser". Having become proud and pretentious and full of himself, he perverts his light which became darkness. This perversion of light is very well presented in the following text: "Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness". [Luke 11 verse 35, King James Bible].

When we analyse different points presented in this text from the prophet Ezekiel, that we have just seen, we realise that the description which is made of the king of Tyre cannot be applied in a literal way to this monarch. As we go through these verses, we realise that although there is no mention of Satan or the devil in this text, it is these works that are being portrayed.

To understand this, we must first of all bear in mind that this text is of the prophetic kind and, as such, *it presents allegories*. In prophetic language, what we see usually represents something quite different. *For example, a cow is worth a year in [Genesis 41 verses 26-27].*

In order to discover how Satan is represented by the symbol of the king of Tyre, we will study several images of this text. Thus, you will see that they cannot be those of a human being:

**The inhabitant of the Garden of Eden:** it is said that the king of Tyre was in Eden, God's garden and that he was the seal of perfection:

*"Moreover, the word of the Lord came to me:*

*"Son of man, raise a lamentation over the king of Tyre, and say to him, Thus says the Lord God:*

*"You were the signet of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were in Eden, the garden of God [...]" [Ezekiel 28 verse 11-13, English Standard Version Bible (ESV)].*

This image cannot be that of this monarch, because, apart from Adam and Eve who were perfect (*until he sinned*), no human being without sin lived in Eden. After Adam and Eve sinned, God kicked them out and no human being returned [*Genesis 3 verses 1-24*].

**The protective cherub:** the king of Tyre is presented as a protective cherub: **"You were the anointed cherub who covers and protects [...]"** [*Ezekiel 28 verse 14, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

This symbol is not human since the cherub is an angel who lives with God, like those who look after Eden [*Genesis 3 verse 24*].

In addition to being presented in the guise of a cherub, he is described as having "*wings*", so that we know that it is an angel we are dealing with and not a man:

**"You, a winged creature, were installed as a guardian".** [*Ezekiel 28 verse 14, Common English Bible (CEB)*].

**The inhabitant of the mountain of God:** it says, that the king of Tyre was on the holy mountain of God: **"[...] You were on the holy mountain of God; you walked among the fiery stones".** [*Ezekiel 28 verse 14, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

It should be noted that the mountain of God is his home [*Isaiah 56 verse 7*], [*Revelation 21 verse 10*].

On this mountain there are gleaming stones, and these stones are *diamonds, sapphires, emeralds, etc.* [*Ezekiel 28 verse 13*].

This wonderful mountain whose ground is strewn with precious stones is not terrestrial.

The only way to go there while alive is to be taken from among men by God to live with him, as was the case with Enoch [*Genesis 5 verses 21-24*], or Elijah [*2 Kings 2 verses 1-14*].

**Integrity personified:** it is said that the king of Tyre was blameless in his actions from the day he was created until the day when iniquity was found in his home: **"You were blameless in your ways from the day that you were created, until iniquity was found in you".** [*Ezekiel 28 verse 15, New Revised Standard Version Bible (NRSV)*].

This image cannot be that of a man, because, apart from Adam and Eve who were created without sin, no other human being on this Earth, apart from Jesus Christ who never sinned, is not or was not without sin.

We are all born sinners in Adam [*Genesis 1 verses 24-31*], [*1 Peter 2 verses 21-25*], [*1 John 3 verse 5*], [*Genesis 3*], [*Romans 5 verses 12-21*].

Furthermore this being was created. Adam is the only one that God created, Eve was drawn from his rib, apart from that, human beings are begotten. So it cannot be the King of Tyre here.



**Wisdom personified:** before the king of Tyre was corrupted in his perfection, he was full of wisdom: "*[...] You were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom [...] For the sake of your splendor you corrupted your wisdom. [...]*" [*Ezekiel 28 verses 12, 17, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

This image is one of wisdom that cannot be human, because the wisdom of men is vanity and folly [*1 Corinthians 3 verses 18-20*].

Since sin has infected the world, only Jesus Christ, as the son of man, has this wisdom that has not been corrupted [*1 Corinthians 1 verse 30*].

The wisdom which is described as that of the King of Tyre is divine and man cannot possess it.

**Perfect beauty:** it is said that the king of Tyre was the model of perfection, he was beauty personified: "*You were the seal of perfection [...] and perfect in beauty [...]*

*Your heart became proud because of your beauty [...]*" [*Ezekiel 28 verse 12, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

This kind of perfection cannot be that of a man, because humanity has suffered the ravages of sin [*Romans 3 verses 9-24*], [*Romans 8 verses 19-23*].

No human being can boast of being the model of perfection. Since sin entered the world, the only one who is a man and can claim such beauty is Jesus Christ who never sinned.

*Adam and Eve experienced this kind of perfection before sinning. They were created in the image of God and everything that had been done before sin was very good [Genesis 1 verses 24-31].*

So we see that this text cannot be talking about a human monarch, because the only one in the Bible who fulfils all of these criteria is Satan, the fallen angel who was once called Lucifer.

The following text tells us a lot about the reasons for the malicious works instigated by this sparkling cherub: *"You shall take up this [taunting] parable against the king of Babylon and say, How the oppressor has stilled [the restless insolence]! [...]*

*Your pomp and magnificence are brought down to Sheol (the underworld), along with the sound of your harps; [...]. How have you fallen from heaven, O light-bringer and daystar, son of the morning! How you have been cut down to the ground, you who weakened and laid low the nations [O blasphemous, satanic king of Babylon!] And you said in your heart, I will ascend to heaven;*

*I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will sit upon the mount of assembly in the uttermost north.*

*I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High. Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol (Hades), to the innermost recesses of the pit (the region of the dead)". [Isaiah 14 verses 4, 11-15, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].*

First of all, I would like to point out that the elements contained in this text demonstrate that the prophetic images of the kings of Babylon and Tyre represent the same individual. Like the king of Tyre who played *the tambourine and the flute [Ezekiel 28 verse 13], the king of Babylon is also a musician because he plays the harp.*

We are presented here with a being who *has magnificence and who lives in heaven*, from where he will be cast out. He is also a radiant being, a *"brilliant star"*.

Because of his thirst for power, he chose the wrong path. From the height of his magnificence, the angel Lucifer, the *"Edenic torch-bearer"* wanted to become *similar to the Most High, therefore to be God.*

He wanted his throne to be above everything. He aspired to be *more powerful than the Eternal God.*

In these texts mention is made of the birth of sin and it is under the features of the kings of Tyre and *Babylon* that God's Word represents the *angel of light*, who was *Lucifer*, who by his malicious works became Satan.

In what follows we have more details about the impacts of his iniquity: *"Then another sign appeared in heaven:*

**There was a great fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and on its heads were seven crowns. Its tail swept away a third of the stars in heaven and hurled them to the earth.**

**And the dragon stood in front of the woman who was about to give birth, so that when she did give birth it might devour her child. [...] Then war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon.**

**The dragon and his angels also fought, but he could not prevail, and there was no place for them in heaven any longer.**

**So the great dragon was thrown out — the ancient serpent, who is called the devil and Satan, the one who deceives the whole world. He was thrown to earth, and his angels with him.**

*Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say, The salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ have now come, because the accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been thrown down.*

*They conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; for they did not love their lives to the point of death.*

**Therefore rejoice, you heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has come down to you with great fury, because he knows his time is short".** [Revelation 12 verses 3-4, 7-12, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].

In order to make this text easier to read, it is important to note that the dragon here is presented as being Satan. Meanwhile in order to understand the symbol of the stars, we must refer to the following text:

*"The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches".* [Revelation 1 verse 20, King James Bible].

This text presents a star as being an angel. But the symbol of the star also represents a servant of God who is a human being.

This is what we see in this text:

*"And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever". [Daniel 12 verse 3, King James Bible].*

A star therefore represents a servant of God who can be either an angel or a human being whom God consecrates, as was the case with David [2 Samuel 19 verse 27], [Zechariah 12 verse 8].

Now that these points have been noted, we can continue our study. Since the stars that the dragon casts out are from heaven, they are servants of God who are already in heaven.

So these are the fallen angels. The angel of Light's thirst for power perverted him and led him to take up arms against God.

This is how Satan raised an army of malicious angels to dethrone the Lord. Lucifer rose up against God and brought a third of the angels with him in his treachery. Their objective was to make their leader become the all mighty. Thus, having taken the wrong path, the light of the powerful cherub protector became dark and he could no longer be called Lucifer, the "torch-bearer".

*He became an "unclean spirit", hence becoming known as the devil.*

These same titles of devil and unclean spirit were also attributed to the angels who sinned by allying themselves with Satan in his rebellion.

The Bible does not tell us how long it took the devil to foment his plans for an uprising against God. But we know that during this time he did not only win a third of the angels to his cause.

In [Genesis 3], [2 Corinthians 11 verses 3, 13-15], we see him in Eden coming to Eve (*in the form of the serpent*) to seduce her.

Eve, on the other hand, won her husband Adam to the devil's cause and led all of humanity into sin. See for yourself:

**"Now the serpent was more subtle and crafty than any living creature of the field which the Lord God had made.**

**And he [Satan] said to the woman, Can it really be that God has said, You shall not eat from every tree of the garden? And the woman said to the serpent, We may eat the fruit from the trees of the garden, Except the fruit from the tree which is in the middle of the garden.**

God has said, You shall not eat of it, neither shall you touch it, lest you die.

But the serpent said to the woman, You shall not surely die, For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing the difference between good and evil and blessing and calamity.

And when the woman saw that the tree was good (suitable, pleasant) for food and that it was delightful to look at, and a tree to be desired in order to make one wise, she took of its fruit and ate; And she gave some also to her husband, and he ate". [*Genesis 3 verses 1-6, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

Let's finish with this: "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned [...]"

Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression [...]" [*Romans 5 verses 12 and 14, King James Bible*].

The consequences of sin have not only touched man, but have also impacted all of nature causing suffering everywhere. These facts are described as follows:

"For [even the whole] creation [all nature] waits eagerly for the children of God to be revealed.

For the creation was subjected to frustration and futility, not willingly [because of some intentional fault on its part], but by the will of Him who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will also be freed from its bondage to decay [and gain entrance] into the glorious freedom of the children of God.

For we know that the whole creation has been moaning together as in the pains of childbirth until now". [*Romans 8 verses 19-22, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

This victory over man gave the devil a powerful boost.

To understand the power acquired by the devil on Earth it is necessary to read the following text: "So he took him up and showed him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.

**The devil said to him, “I will give you their splendor and all this authority, because it has been given over to me, and I can give it to anyone I want. If you, then, will worship me, all will be yours”.** [*Luke 4 verses 5-6, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

Satan declares that the dominion over the kingdoms of the Earth was given to him. We will discover in this text who this generous “patron” is: *“So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.*

**And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it:**

**And have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth”.** [*Genesis 1 verses 27-28, King James Bible*].

To understand how the dominion of the Earth passed from Adam’s hands to those of the devil, it is necessary to take into account the following biblical fact: **“When a strong man with many weapons guards his own house, the things in his house are safe.**

**But suppose a stronger man comes and defeats him.**

**The stronger man will take away the weapons that the first man trusted to keep his house safe. Then the stronger man will do what he wants with the other man’s things”.** [*Luke 11 verses 21-22, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

This truth is reinforced by this text: **“[...] A person who is defeated by something, you see, is enslaved to it”.** [*2 Peter 2 verse 19, New Testament for Everyone Bible (NTE)*].

As soon as Adam disobeyed God and ate the forbidden fruit he became the devil’s slave who defeated him.

Thus he also subjected all of his descendants and therefore all of humanity to the devil’s power.

Satan uses the law of sin to keep humanity, us, captive and this from our birth [*Romans 7 verses 14-25*], [*Hebrews 2 verses 14-15*].

Here is our status when entering this world:

**"Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me".** [*Psalm 51 verse 7, English Standard Version Anglicised Bible (ESVUK)*].

Let's discover this text in this other version: **"For I was born a sinner — yes, from the moment my mother conceived me".** [*Psalm 51 verse 7, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

Let us complete our study with this text: **"So [What then?]-are we Jews [or are we Christians; are we]-better than others [or making excuses for ourselves]?-No [Not at all]!**

We have already said [charged; made the accusation] that Jews and Gentiles alike are all guilty of [or under the power of; under] sin. As the Scriptures say: **"There is no one who always does what is right [is righteous], not even one.**

*There is no one who understands. There is no one who looks to God for help [seeks God]. All have turned away.*

*Together, everyone has become useless [worthless]. There is no one who does anything good [or shows kindness]; there is not even one [Ps. 14:1-3]".* [*Romans 3 verses 9-12, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

By agreeing to follow the devil's directions Adam sold us into sin. Here is the state of mankind:

*"We know that the Law is spiritual, but I am a creature of the flesh [worldly, self-reliant — carnal and unspiritual], sold into slavery to sin [and serving under its control]".* [*Romans 7 verse 14, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

As a consequence here is the state of mankind before the devil: *"We are sure that God's children do not keep on sinning. God's own Son protects them, and the devil cannot harm them.*

*We are certain that we come from God and that the rest of the world is under the power of the devil".* [*1 John 5 verses 18-19, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

Two distinct groups make up humanity, those who have made an alliance with Jesus Christ and remain faithful to him and the others.

The devil can do nothing against those who walk according to the whole truth manifested in Christ. He cannot dominate or keep them captive. On the other hand all of the rest of humanity is under his domination. Because of the inheritance that Adam and Eve left us, we are not able to resist sin on our own.

This is why for humanity to be redeemed it required a substitute, Jesus Christ. Here is what the Bible tells us about it:

**"Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who did not sin in the likeness of Adam's transgression. He is a type of the Coming One. *But the gift is not like the trespass.***

**For if by the one man's trespass the many died, how much more have the grace of God and the gift which comes through the grace of the one man Jesus Christ overflowed to the many.**

*And the gift is not like the one man's sin, because from one sin came the judgment, resulting in condemnation, but from many trespasses came the gift, resulting in justification.*

**If by the one man's trespass, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive the overflow of grace and the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ.**

**So then, as through one trespass there is condemnation for everyone, so also through one righteous act there is justification leading to life for everyone.**

*For just as through one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, so also through the one man's obedience the many will be made righteous. The law came along to multiply the trespass.*

**But where sin multiplied, grace multiplied even more so that, just as sin reigned in death, so also grace will reign through righteousness, resulting in eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord". [Romans 5 verses 14-21, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].**

In the following section, with Bible in hand, we are going to study the ways the redemption of humanity took place through Jesus Christ.



### 3.2 The measures put in place to redeem man from the wages of sin

Many viruses exist in the world, each more terrible than the next. Among the most virulent are *Ebola* or even the *Coronavirus* whose horrific effects we are currently experiencing.

Yet, as terrible as they are, they do not have the capacity to touch all of humanity by continuing to perpetuate themselves from generation to generation. As we have seen, Adam and Eve's delicious bites from the prohibited fruit that they ate accomplished this feat.

Through this forbidden fruit, which they ate, the virus of sin spread to all of humanity. Generally, when we are confronted with a virus, the essential approach needed to eradicate it is to find an antidote.

Often, even before this virus reaches humans, if need be, studies are carried out with a view to eradicating it. Similarly, with regard to sin, an "*antidote*" was prepared long before it arrived on the scene to infect the world. To introduce it to you, I would say that it takes the form of God's grace that was manifested in Jesus in order to save all humanity.

To understand its significance, we must go back to the time when our salvation by God's grace was enacted in Christ.

Many believe that it was decreed on the bloody cross of Calvary. But for my part, this is not how I see it, because although it was on the cross that the death of Jesus manifested God's grace, its enactment was much earlier. This is what we discover in the following text:

*"For you know that you were not redeemed from your useless [spiritually unproductive] way of life inherited [by tradition] from your forefathers with perishable things like silver and gold, But [you were actually purchased] with precious blood, like that of a [sacrificial] lamb unblemished and spotless, the priceless blood of Christ.*

*For He was foreordained (foreknown) before the foundation of the world, but has appeared [publicly] in these last times for your sake and through Him you believe [confidently] in God [the heavenly Father], who raised Him from the dead and gave Him glory, so that your faith and hope are [centered and rest] in God". [1 Peter 1 verses 18-21, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

The bloody sacrifice of our Lord and Master Jesus Christ was not prepared in a hurry and in an emergency, as if one was preparing protective measures against the *Coronavirus*.

As we can see, the Lord was not overwhelmed by the events of his son's passion, because to compensate for this, a plan was put in place free of any interference before the world was even created and long before the arrival of sin.

To continue I would like to say that generally, when we think of salvation, we automatically see Jesus crucified.

But we do not always take into consideration the unity and the organisation that existed at the level of the Holy Trinity so that things could be done.

Being omniscient our God knew that sin would enter the universe. This is why the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit worked out a rescue plan for humanity, where the Holy Trinity would come to die on the cross for us.

Although it was Jesus Christ who suffered in the flesh and died for us, his Father was with him and by extension, his Holy Spirit. This is what we learn from the following text:

*"[For] The love of Christ controls [compels; drives] us, because we know [are convinced; have concluded] that **One died for all, so all have died [we died spiritually with Christ, the penalty for our sins].***

*Christ died for all so that those who live would not continue to [no longer] live for themselves, but for him who died for them and was raised from the dead. [...]*

**All this is from God, who through Christ made peace between us and [reconciled us to] himself, and gave us the work of telling everyone about the peace we can have with him [ministry/service of reconciliation].**

**[For] God was in Christ, making peace between the world and [reconciling the world to] himself.**

*In Christ, God did not hold the world guilty of its sins [count their trespasses against them]. And he gave [committed/entrusted to] us this message of peace [reconciliation]". [2 Corinthians 5 verses 14-15, 18-19, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

As we read these lines, we can get the feeling that the Eternal God was with his Son on the cross, but that for his part the Holy Spirit was absent. Yet he was not!

Before learning more about this fact, I think it is important to take a *break* so that we have a clear vision of who God's Spirit is. In my opinion, it is difficult to grasp the concept that the Holy Spirit has an individual character and yet is an indivisible part of the divine trinity.

For many, he is like the spirit of man, just a force that works from within, without having a personality or a purpose of his own as would be a sentient being, endowed with feeling and free will.

This is not so, for he is a fully-fledged sentient being and although he is part of the divine trinity he has a character of his own.

This fact is well represented in [*Ephesians 4 verse 30*] where we discover that he can feel emotions, because we can sadden him and like a mother who surrounds her child, he shows tenderness and consoles us [*John 14 verse 16-17*].

In addition, God's Spirit is also a guide and manager who gives directions to God's people. To realise this, we must consider [*Acts 13 verses 1-4*].

Notice that here it is not God the Father speaking, but the Holy Spirit and this clarification is brought home to us.

Usually when it is the Eternal God who is speaking the text makes mention of it, like in [*Exodus 3 verses 4-22*].

Let us return to this text from the book of Acts. To picture what is going on here, I would like to portray the Holy Spirit as the general who governs God's people. It is he who sets his troops in motion.

We discover in this text, a thinking and coordinated being, who independently sets plans in motion. However, these are not his, but those of God the Father and which are supported by Jesus Christ [*John 16 verses 12-15*].

Apart from what we have just seen, the text of [*Matthew 12 verses 31-32*] unambiguously presents the Holy Spirit to us, as being a person distinct from God the Father or from Jesus Christ.

Before continuing, it is important to note that the word *son of man*, used in Matthew's text represents Jesus [*Matthew 17 verses 22-23*], who while being God, took flesh in Mary, a human being [*Philippians 2 verses 5-7*], [*Galatians 4 verse 4*], [*Matthew 1 verse 18-25*].

So we find that not all blasphemies are considered the same.

Only those which are uttered against the Holy Spirit are totally prohibited and heavily repressed. All the others, even those which would concern Jesus Christ who is the true God [*1 John 5 verses 20*] can be forgiven. So by extension it is the same for all of the blasphemies that men would have uttered against God, the Father.

Thus, in the case of blasphemies proffered against the three persons of the divine trinity, *the Father, the Son or the Holy Spirit*, only those which are committed against the latter remain forever unforgivable.

In [*Romans 8 verses 26-27*] the Holy Spirit and the Eternal God are presented to us as two very distinct persons.

We are told that it is *the Holy Spirit*, who collects our prayers to convey them to God, therefore God the Father and it is he who prays for us and some versions say: *That he intercedes for us, with the Lord.*

So here we have a ministry that is unique to the Holy Spirit. He leads our prayers to God, as would an ambassador representing his nation to a person of authority in another country.

So, we understand that God is God and remember, the Holy Spirit is a very different person.

I understand that this fact is complex from the point of view of our human thought processes.

Yet it is this same bond that exists between Jesus and his Father. This is what we find out in [*John 14 verses 7-10*].

In this text Jesus declares that he and his Father are one, so much so that he who sees him also sees his Father.

One could therefore think that it is a question of one and the same person, in fact a single being, bearing two different names. This theory is swept away by [*Matthew 27 verses 46*], which presents Jesus agonising on the cross and desperately calling for his Father.

So we understand that they are two very distinct beings, yet intrinsically united.

It should be noted that each member of the Divine Trinity works on a different level. We find out in [*John 16 verses 12-15*].

The roles are distributed as follows:

*God the Father is the master of works [John 17 verse 3-4], [John 6 verses 38-40], Jesus his son is the order giver and the Holy Spirit carries out the works.*

This unity in the biblical sense (*very distinct entities but yet intrinsically linked*) is found at various levels, within the framework of marriage [*Matthew 19 verses 4-6*] or even within God's people [*Ezekiel 11 verses 19*].

*Mystery of the Trinity, each of the three supreme beings are persons in their own right, but who ultimately form one.*

After what is, in my opinion, this useful digression on this complex idea of the Holy Spirit and the divine Trinity, let us return to the passion of Christ.

I therefore emphasised that the Holy Spirit was also with Jesus on the cross. To understand this, we must not lose sight of the intrinsic bond which binds the three persons of the divine trinity and especially the importance of the Holy Spirit.

To find out, I invite you to read this: "**Now the Lord is the Holy Spirit. [...] And this glory comes from the Lord, who is the Holy Spirit**". [*2 Corinthians 3 verses 17-18, New International Reader's Version Bible (NIRV)*].

In these lines we learn that the Lord and the Holy Spirit are one and that the Lord is the Spirit.

So when in [*2 Corinthians 5 verses 14-19*] we read that God was in Christ, when he died to redeem mankind, we must understand that we are talking about God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

*It is through this incredible magnanimous act, where the divine trinity was to die on the infamous cross, that human beings were able to be reconciled with the Lord.*

Once implemented this reconciliation between humanity and God was to occur at a definite time, but until Jesus came to redeem us, he being the the lamb of God who takes away the sins of the world, plans for the substitution were established with the intention of anticipating his divine sacrifice.

*Innocent animals were to be sacrificed instead of humans.  
They thus assumed the sins of humanity.*

For the sins of men to be erased, sacrifices were presented in a timely manner and on a date defined by the high priest [*Hebrews 9 verse 7*], [*Hebrews 10 verses 1-4*].

The animal sacrifices, intended to be substitutes for the sins of men, lasted for centuries without having the capacity to definitively cleanse from sin those for whom they were offered.

Because of the imperfect nature of the sacrifices that were offered to erase sin, it was therefore necessary that a powerful antidote could be given.

*This antidote was like the blood that is given to a patient in order to save him. A special blood had to flow, which was not that of the sacrificial beasts!*

*This blood that had to flow was divine. It was that of the son of God who is himself God. He came to sacrifice himself in order to redeem humanity.*

Here is how this fact is presented: "*In fact under the Law almost everything is cleansed with blood, and without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness [neither release from sin and its guilt, nor cancellation of the merited punishment]. [...]*

*Nor did He [enter into the heavenly sanctuary to] offer Himself again and again, as the high priest enters the Holy Place every year with blood that is not his own.*

**Otherwise, He would have needed to suffer over and over since the foundation of the world; But now once for all at the consummation of the ages He has appeared and been publicly manifested to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself.**

*And just as it is appointed and destined for all men to die once and after this [comes certain] judgment, so Christ, having been offered once and once for all to bear [as a burden] the sins of many, will appear a second time [when he returns to earth], not to deal with sin, but to bring salvation to those who are eagerly and confidently waiting for Him". [*Hebrews 9 verses 22, 25-28, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].*

Let's also read this to enhance our study:

*"Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; Which are offered by the law; Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God.*

*He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.*

**By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins:**

**But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;**

**From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified".** [*Hebrews 10 verses 8-14, King James Bible*].

Until Jesus Christ came, the blood that was presented for the redemption of man was that of beasts, but this blood only atoned for sin for a time, because it was insufficient. This is why the son of God had to offer himself as the ultimate sacrifice in order to redeem us.

Let me continue by asking you a question:

*Did you know that as far as the plan of salvation is concerned, we are the holders of a great privilege which was neither offered to the ancient prophets nor to the angels and by extension nor to the demons (who are fallen angels) [1 Peter 1 verses 10-12]?*

The plan of salvation was jealously guarded for centuries and was called "*the hidden mystery*". But thanks be to God who revealed this mystery to us. This is what it was:

*"Of which \*I\* became minister, according to the dispensation of God which [is] given me towards you to complete the word of God, the mystery which [has been] hidden from ages and from generations, but has now been made manifest to his saints;*

**To whom God would make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the nations, which is Christ in you the hope of glory"** [*Colossians 1 verses 25-27, Darby Translation Bible (DARBY)*].

Let's read this to learn more about this: **"And that by [divine] revelation the mystery was made known to me, as I have already written in brief. By referring to this, when you read it you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ, which in other generations was not disclosed to mankind, as it has now been revealed to His holy apostles and prophets by the [Holy] Spirit;**

**[It is this:] that the Gentiles are now joint heirs [with the Jews] and members of the same body, and joint partakers [sharing] in the [same divine] promise in Christ Jesus through [their faith in] the good news [of salvation]".** [*Ephesians 3 verses 3-6, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

The Lord gives us the benefit of revealing the reality of the plan of salvation, which was based on the fact that the pagans (*the nations*) were also called to salvation through Jesus Christ, which was normally only reserved for the Jewish people.

As we have seen, in order to do this, so that humanity can be redeemed, the Holy Trinity made plans long before the first atom of our world was created.

These plans were jealously guarded over all of the centuries preceding the sacrifice of Jesus and they remained so until his death.

Do you understand why the plan of salvation through Christ's crucifixion was hidden for centuries and than no one heard of it before Jesus died on the infamous cross in Golgotha?

Well, it's because the main actor who had to implement it was the devil himself. Without Satan's help we would not be saved.

*You are certainly thinking that Kenny has gone completely mad... SOS, we need the assistance of the men in white coats from the asylum!*

But before I am pilloried, it is important to reposition yourself with regard to what God's Word has to say about the role that the devil played in the plan of salvation.

In [*John 14 verse 30*] Jesus prophesied that Satan's time was coming, as his hour of glory was to get men to nail the son of God to this infamous cross.



The first act of this tragedy took place when Judas, under the devil's influence, accepted the soaked piece of bread, thus choosing to betray Jesus, his master. Here is how this fact is presented in this text:

*"After Jesus had said these things, He was troubled in spirit, and testified and said, "I assure you and most solemnly say to you, one of you will betray Me and hand Me over."*

**The disciples began looking at one another, puzzled and disturbed as to whom He could mean.**

*One of His disciples, whom Jesus loved (esteemed), was leaning against Jesus' chest. So Simon Peter motioned to him (John) and [quietly] asked [him to ask Jesus] of whom He was speaking.*

*Then leaning back against Jesus' chest, he (John) asked Him [privately], "Lord, who is it?" Jesus answered, "It is the one to whom I am going to give this piece [of bread] after I have dipped it."*

**So when He had dipped the piece of bread [into the dish], He gave it to Judas, son of Simon Iscariot. After [Judas had taken] the piece of bread, Satan entered him. Then Jesus said to him, "What you are going to do, do quickly [without delay]." [...]**

**After taking the piece of bread, he went out immediately; and it was night".** [John 13 verses 21-27 and 30, Amplified Bible (AMP)].

The betrayal of Judas was only the first act of the bloody symphony that Satan composed to humiliate and kill the son of God.

Once Judas found himself possessed by the devil, following his acceptance of the soaked bread, he led the enemies of Jesus straight to him in order to seize him [John 18 verses 3-5, 12-14].

The devil is also the great murderer who stirs up hatred in the hearts of the wicked to persecute God's people: [John 8, verses 39-59], [1 John 3, verses 4-17], [John 15, verses 18-25].

He is also the dominator of nations [1 John 5 verses 18-19].

Therefore the world and those who are dominated by the devil and under his influence persecute those who belong to the Lord. Those who are doing so are presented as the children and servants of the devil [1 John 3 verses 4-10] and [John 8 verses 12, 38-48].

As we have seen, Satan is the perpetrator of evil, he is the one who drives men to do wrong, so he was at the helm during Jesus' passion and encouraged men to mistreat him.

We know that it is the devil who creates hatred in the hearts of men so we understand that he inspired the Jewish people of Jesus' time to claim the life of God's son by asking for his blood to be shed on them and their children [*Matthew 27 verses 20-26*].

If Satan and his minions were omniscient, they would never have made plans for Jesus to be crucified, since it was this act that gave him dominance over them. Here's what we can read about the subject:

*"When you were dead in your sins and in the uncircumcision of your flesh (worldliness, manner of life), God made you alive together with Christ, having [freely] forgiven us all our sins, having canceled out the certificate of debt consisting of legal demands [which were in force] against us and which were hostile to us.*

**And this certificate He has set aside and completely removed by nailing it to the cross.**

**When He had disarmed the rulers and authorities [those supernatural forces of evil operating against us], He made a public example of them [exhibiting them as captives in His triumphal procession], having triumphed over them through the cross".** [*Colossians 2 verses 13-15, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

The biggest and only victory the devil ever won over Jesus was also his biggest and fatal defeat. By inciting the Jews to crucify him, through the Romans, the devil realised the secret plans (*the divine mystery hidden through the ages*), which were that God is made flesh among men, that he suffers, that his blood flows and that He dies and is then resurrected in order to redeem humanity.

When one analyses what has happened during the plan of salvation it is simply mind-boggling. Here God's son, who is equal to his father, therefore God, suffered and died like a humble servant in order *to save an inferior race consisting of the living-dead and slaves!*

And what is more they were his enemies. This is evidenced by the following text:

**"For while we were yet weak, in due season Christ died for the ungodly. For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: For peradventure for the good man some one would even dare to die.**

**But God commendeth his own love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.**

*Much more then, being now justified by his blood, shall we be saved from the wrath of God through him. For if, while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, shall we be saved by his life;*

**And not only so, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation".** [*Romans 5 verses 6-11, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Let's finish with this text: **"Indeed, let this attitude be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus. Indeed, let this attitude be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.**

**Though he was by nature God, he did not consider equality with God as a prize to be displayed, but he emptied himself by taking the nature of a servant.**

**When he was born in human likeness, and his appearance was like that of any other man, he humbled himself and became obedient to the point of death — even death on a cross.**

*Therefore God also highly exalted him and gave him the name that is above every name, so that at the name of Jesus every knee will bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father".* [*Philippians 2 verses 5-11, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

The son of God came and took on human form by becoming the son of a man and adopting the role of a humble servant and agreeing to die on the ignominious cross to redeem mankind.

Because of sin, man was separated from God, but thanks to the atoning blood of his son, which flowed on the cross, reconciliation could be achieved.

This is what mankind has gained through *Jesus Christ*, for whom the whole universe must now bend its knees. As you can see, God's plan of salvation for mankind, its hidden mystery throughout the ages, was carried out with the help of the devil.

Satan could never have imagined such a scenario! How could he have known that death was not the end for God's son and that by Jesus' death, he the devil, would be defeated together with all of the forces of evil. However, that's what happened.

The devil lost because of his pride. I imagine him jubilant each time that Christ had to undergo immense suffering in order to redeem us.

In my opinion, the worst of all of this suffering was not, only physical, but was also psychological. Let us read this to figure it out:

**"God made Christ [the one] who had no sin [or never sinned; did not know sin] to become sin for us, so that in Christ [him] we could become right with [the righteousness of] God". [2 Corinthians 5 verse 21, Expanded Bible (EXB)].**

This other text reinforces the first: *"For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again;*

*When he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: By whose stripes ye were healed. For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls". [1 Peter 2 verses 21-25, King James Bible].*

First of all, notice that we are not just told that Jesus took on our sins as a friend would take from his or her own funds to pay a debt for us. We learn that *"Jesus became sin, to redeem us"*, without ever having sinned. When reading these lines, we may not realise the true significance of Jesus' unprecedented gesture on the cross. Indeed, we all simply repeat that he gave his life in redemption of our sins and then we move on.

Have we even for a moment tried to imagine the atmosphere of that scene on the cross, the intensity of that moment, the immeasurable pain that Jesus experienced both physically and psychologically? To understand this, I give you an example:

*Imagine that you are a devoted wife and a devout Christian who, out of love and fear of the Lord, chose to wait until marriage to have your first sexual encounter on your wedding night. The honeymoon was even more beautiful, because you got married at forty after many years of abstinence.*

*For his part, your husband who was also a fervent servant of God, let go of the Lords' hand, after the death of your only son by choosing to live a worldly life, where gambling has become his one and only love. As any action leads to a reaction, one fateful evening, he telephones you to ask you to come to a "bad" place.*

*When you arrive, you are stunned to find him covered with wounds having been brutally beaten. The reason for all of this is the large sum he lost at gambling. It is so large that even if you sell all of your assets, you will not be able to pay it off.*

*To recoup his funds, your husband's bookie has left him two options: the first is to be tortured to death. The second, which is even worse, but especially for you, is that you agree to become a prostitute in order to repay your husband's debts, without any guarantee that this "extraordinary" sacrifice, will bring about an awareness on his part that will enable him to stop playing.*

*Out of love and mercy for him, with your heart in tatters, you accept the deal.*

This imagined scene, although terrible and particularly shocking, is nothing compared to what Jesus Christ has done for us. For he, the pure, he the just, he the integral, had to become sin in order to redeem us. The mystery of salvation is incomprehensible to those living without God as well as to the Jewish people who lived at the same time as Jesus. Here is what we can read about it:

**"But we preach Christ crucified, which is a scandal to Jews and foolishness to Gentiles".** [1 Corinthians 1 verse 23, Common English Bible (CEB)].

The plan of salvation seems incomprehensible without faith, because it is not for a just race that Christ died on this infamous cross, but *for a race of slaves and for the living dead.*

This text presents this fact: *"Therefore, since the children share flesh and blood, he also shared the same flesh and blood, so that through death he could destroy the one who had the power of death (that is, the Devil) and free those who were held in slavery all their lives by the fear of death".* [Hebrews 2 verses 14-15, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)].

You will certainly read these lines in a relaxed way, because you are used to going through them, but are you aware of what the plan of salvation that was manifested through Jesus was?

So that you may be fully aware of the grace which you have received from the Lord God, through the sacrifice of his son Jesus Christ, I am going to tell you an extraordinary story:

*Imagine a rich landowner who only has one son, who makes him proud, because he is obedient, hardworking, courteous and brilliant in his studies. The kind of son-in-law every mother dreams of having and the son every parent calls for.*

*In addition, this man has a nephew who, from a very young age, devotes himself to drugs, alcohol, cigarettes as well as all of the vices imaginable.*

*And while his uncle and his cousin, whom I have just presented to you, have never ceased to support him and to lavish love upon him, he in return does everything to harm them. Years go by, until the day when the said nephew's heart needs to be replaced, because it is unable to bear the hectic pace of life that was before him. In order to be saved, he needs to have a heart graft.*

*But as his rhesus blood type was very rare, a heart for a graft under these circumstances was almost impossible to find.*

*His life which he had burnt like a candle at both ends, seems to be drawing to an end and his death is imminent.*

*When everything seems lost for him, an unexpected miracle happens. Out of love for him, his uncle and his cousin, by mutual agreement, decide that his cousin, this exemplary young man, is going to give his own heart to save him to the detriment of his own life.*

*And all the while knowing that once this new heart is functional, the young rebel could, if he wishes, continue to live recklessly and without any regard for his own health until death ensues.*

For those of you who are parents, how do you view this story? If it was your child, would you do it? Certainly not! Because as a parent and especially for mothers, our children are the apple of our eye.

Yet that's what the Lord did for us through Christ. Here's what we can learn about it: *"And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.*

**For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life".** [John 3 verses 14-16, King James Bible].

I ask you to re-read these verses while keeping in mind the previous story of the father, his son and his iniquitous nephew, so that you will be able to understand how the act of Jesus suffering and dying on the infamous cross is without precedent and so powerful that words cannot describe his divine sacrifice.

For me, I think that parents who love their children are the most capable of understanding what the Lord felt when he saw his only son, so perfect, pure and just, dying for fallen and sinful humanity.

This fact is even more remarkable when we consider the motivation of the Lord which led him to give his son, his only son, the one he loves, to redeem us humans, who, *as we have seen, are a lower race and the living dead, etc.* Here is how this fact is presented in the Holy Book:

*"Dear friends, we should love each other, because love comes from God. Everyone who loves has become God's child.*

*And so everyone who loves knows God. Anyone who does not love does not know God, because God is love. This is how God showed his love to us: He sent his only Son into the world to give us life through him. True love is God's love for us, not our love for God.*

**He sent his Son as the way to take away our sins. That is how much God loved us, dear friends! So we also must love each other".** [*1 John 4 verses 7-11, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

*What is presented in this text is powerful!*

And I believe takes on a whole new dimension, if we juxtapose it with our story of the father, the son and the nephew:

*The nephew had done nothing to be loved and in fact he was not lovable and I would even say that he was a detestable human being. However, without deserving it, his uncle loved him unconditionally and chose with his son's agreement, that the latter would give his life for the unjust nephew.*

The Lord does not love us because we are righteous people or exceptional people, he loves us unconditionally, because his nature is Love. No matter what we have done the Lord wants to save us!

Do not look at your situation. Do not look at what you have already done to think that you do not deserve salvation.

Eternal life is not granted according to your good works or your high degree of spirituality, but it is by God's grace that we are saved and by means of our faith in Jesus Christ.

All we have to do is accept Jesus as the Christ, the son of God and as our saviour in whom salvation is found: **"And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins;**

**Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:**

**Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind;**



**And were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.**

**But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)**

*And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:*

*That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.*

**For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them".**  
*[Ephesians 2 verses 1-10, King James Bible].*

Before making a covenant with Christ, we are the living dead, but it is not what God looks at, as unlike men who only judge their fellow human beings by their appearance, God is only interested in what is in our hearts *[1 Samuel 16 verse 7]*.

In this text we have a beautiful example of God's Grace that is manifested through Jesus Christ, without our personal situation, physical aspects or our state of sin being taken into account:

**"And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?**

**This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not. So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.**

**And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last:**

**And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers?**

**Hath no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more".** [*John 8 verses 3-11, King James Bible*].

No reproach was made to this woman, just a recommendation :

*Go and sin no more!*

To those of you reading this, if your life is not yet sanctified through Jesus Christ and if your sins lead you to believe that you are not worthy of being loved, know that God loves you and that he gave his life for you.

He did not come to call the righteous but he came to save sinners, so he came for all of humanity and above all for you and me.

This text lays its foundations: **"Later that day, Jesus and his followers ate at Levi's house. There were also many tax collectors and others with bad reputations eating with them.**

*(There were many of these people who followed Jesus.) When some teachers of the law who were Pharisees saw Jesus eating with such bad people, they asked his followers, "Why does he eat with tax collectors and sinners?"*

**When Jesus heard this, he said to them, "It is the sick people who need a doctor, not those who are healthy. I did not come to invite good people. I came to invite sinners."** [*Mark 2 verses 15-17, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

As you can see, Jesus did not snub people with an unsavoury lifestyle (*those with a poor reputation*), as he loves all mankind. The Lord hates sin, but loves man no matter what his situation!

The immeasurable and incomprehensible love of the Lord for us is manifested on the cross! This is why the word GRACE by which we are saved takes on its full meaning. This word GRACE represents what is undeserved, because what we receive through grace is offered. He who is pardoned owes his future to the one who gives him grace!

In the case of a death row inmate the pardon granted to him saves his life. Likewise the grace we acquire through Jesus saves our lives and enables us to inherit eternal life. This is what is now offered to all those who accept Jesus Christ as their personal saviour:

*"Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this ?"* [John 11 verses 25-26, King James Bible].

What Jesus won on the cross was victory over death itself. By doing so, since his sacrificial death and resurrection, he holds the keys to death. Here is what happened: *"The Revelation of Jesus Christ [...] And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last:*

**I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death".** [Revelation 1 verses 1, 17-18, King James Bible].

By his divine sacrifice Jesus removed the obstacle which prevented humanity from reaching salvation and for which the wages of sin had to be paid, namely death. Henceforth, he frees from this yoke all those who make an alliance with him.

Thanks to this key, Christ now offers *eternal life to all*. Although Jesus Christ now holds the keys to death, only those who make a covenant with him can enjoy the eternal life he offers. This tells us:

**"He who hath believed, and hath been baptized, shall be saved; and he who hath not believed, shall be condemned".** [Mark 16 verse 16, Young's Literal Translation Bible (YLT)].

Let's finish with this: **"And Peter said unto them, Repent ye, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ unto the remission of your sins;**

**And ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For to you is the promise, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call unto him".** [Acts 2 verses 38-39, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

It is he who accepts Jesus as his personal saviour, who confesses and forsakes his sins and who makes a covenant with him through the waters of baptism, who obtains mercy. Henceforth he receives the spirit of God which makes him a child of the Lord, one of his heirs and a co-heir with Christ [*Romans 8 verses 16-17*].

Now being subject to God's grace by making a covenant with Jesus Christ, we have direct access to God the Father.

Here is what God's Word says about the access his people have to him through Jesus Christ: **"Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: No man cometh unto the Father, but by me"**. [*John 14 verse 6, King James Bible*].

Through Jesus Christ we can now go to God the Father. These are not just words that have been used just to brighten up the subject, because this access to God is real. In the following text we find that we now have free entry into God's heavenly sanctuary:

**"Therefore when He cometh into the world, He saith, "Sacrifice and offering Thou wouldest not have, but a body hast Thou prepared for Me.**

**In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin Thou hast had no pleasure. Then said I, 'Lo, I come (in the volume of the Book it is written of Me) to do Thy will, O God.'"**

*Above when He said, "Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings, and offering for sin Thou wouldest not have, neither hadst pleasure therein" (which are offered in accordance with the law), then said He, "Lo, I come to do Thy will, O God,"*

**He taketh away the first, that He may establish the second.**

**By this will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. [...] For by one offering He hath perfected for ever those who are sanctified. [...]**

**"This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord:**

**I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more."** Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

**Having therefore boldness, brethren, to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living Way, which He hath consecrated for us through the veil (that is to say, His flesh), and having a High Priest over the house of God, let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water".** [*Hebrews 10 verses 5-10, 14, 16-22, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

We have this access through the flesh of Jesus Christ who was sacrificed for us. This text is one of those that all Christians cherish or should cherish if they do not yet know it.

Unlike in biblical times, the grace granted to us through Jesus Christ enables us to go directly to God, without needing a priest to bring our complaint to the Lord.

*This is really good news presented to us here.*

However, not everyone has the capacity to borrow this access, because the text specifies that it is only those who participate in the second covenant, the first being lapsed at the sacrificial death of Jesus, who obtain forgiveness for their sins and can thus take this new road through Jesus Christ.

The sign of this new covenant, opening the door of heaven to God's people, is God's law which is written in the hearts and minds of those who are united to God through Christ. This is how sins that had hitherto been committed will be forgiven and forgotten.

In doing so, if God's law is not written in our hearts, we have neither the possibility of enjoying the new covenant which the Lord offers through the blood (*the divine sacrifice*) of his son, nor the means to obtain forgiveness of our sins.

*So no possibility of salvation!*

By extension, we cannot also enter into the heavenly sanctuary of God through his son. So the law has a most important role to play to enable God's people to participate in the Lord's new covenant.

Which brings us to our awareness of the place of God's law among his people saved by God's grace. In the next part we will develop this most thorny biblical fact!

### 3.3 The role that the law plays in the great cosmic conflict between the devil and his servants against God and his people

In this part, we will consider God's law from an angle that I believe to be innovative. It is important to understand that the law is the primary focus that will determine who is a child of God or the devil.

It is important to understand what sin is in order to comprehend how important the law is in the lives of God's children and how it is the foundation which, once broken, makes us the devil's slaves.

This biblical text enlightens us on this subject: **"Everyone who sins breaks God's law, because sin is the same as breaking God's law. You know that Christ came to take away sins. He isn't sinful, and people who stay one in their hearts with him won't keep on sinning. If they do keep on sinning, they don't know Christ, and they have never seen him. Children, don't be fooled.**

*Anyone who does right is good, just like Christ himself. Anyone who keeps on sinning belongs to the devil. He has sinned from the beginning, but the Son of God came to destroy all that he has done.*

*God's children cannot keep on being sinful. His life-giving power lives in them and makes them his children, so that they cannot keep on sinning. You can tell God's children from the devil's children, because those who belong to the devil refuse to do right or to love each other. From the beginning you were told that we must love each other.*

**Don't be like Cain, who belonged to the devil and murdered his own brother. Why did he murder him? He did it because his brother was good, and he was evil".** [1 John 3 verses 4-12, *Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

Before continuing, let us review the first sentence of this Bible text in this other version: **"Whoever commits sin, also transgresses the Law. For sin is the transgression of the Law"**. [1 John 3 verses 4, *Revised Geneva Translation Bible (RGT)*].

In this text you will find a crucial factor for our study which is brought to us here:

*He who sins is of the devil. We have a strong image that describes this fact in the person of Cain.*

*Although he was born at a time when sin had not done as much damage as it does now, because of his murderous acts, he became a child of the devil. In addition, this text presents the difference between two very distinct groups:*

*The first describes those who faithfully serve the Lord and are called God's children. We also discover another group whose members are called the the devil's children. The act of this second group, which qualifies them as such, is the transgression of God's law with this behaviour being presented as sinful.*

*This text highlights the importance of God's law.*

Those who violate it commit sin and, like it or not, end up becoming the devil's children and his servants. To do this, no voluntary action is required, it is enough not to have made a covenant with Jesus or to have made it and not to be faithful to him.

This is what the text of [1 John 5 verses 18-19] teaches us.

By doing so, one can be a child of the devil while being a religious man who masters God's Word, but who is unfaithful to the Lord. We find this situation in the life of the Pharisees. These men were very religious and generally did not overtly sin. The parable of the Pharisee and the tax collector sums up their lives well [Luke 18 verses 9-14].

The transgressions of God's Word practised by the scribes and the Pharisees were the result of their efforts to make their religion more practical [Mark 7 verses 5-13].

It is because of such deeds that without their knowledge, they became the servants and children of the devil [John 8 verses 38-48].

In this text of the apostle John, it is striking to note what a high opinion of themselves the Pharisees had.

They were scandalised when Jesus depicted them as children and servants of the devil, whose sole purpose was to serve him. Likewise he who is of God's people and who is unfaithful to him will, like it or not, be practising the works of the devil.

Now that these points are factored in, let us return to the situation which is manifested in [1 John 3 verses 4-12], [1 John 5 verses 18-19].

God's people who remain faithful to him do not practice sin which is the transgression of God's law, in so doing, the devil cannot touch them. On the other hand, the rest of humanity, as well as those who made a covenant with Jesus, but who are unfaithful, place themselves under *the devil's domination who will use the law to keep them captive*.

He will use the inability of the man living without God to observe the divine law in order to dominate him. Here is what we can read about the state of iniquitous man in the face of God's law:

*"For I do not understand my own actions [I am baffled and bewildered by them]. I do not practice what I want to do, but I am doing the very thing I hate [and yielding to my human nature, my worldliness — my sinful capacity].*

**Now if I habitually do what I do not want to do, [that means] I agree with the Law, confessing that it is good (morally excellent). So now [if that is the case, then] it is no longer I who do it [the disobedient thing which I despise], but the sin [nature] which lives in me. For I know that nothing good lives in me, that is, in my flesh [my human nature, my worldliness — my sinful capacity].**

**For the willingness [to do good] is present in me, but the doing of good is not. For the good that I want to do, I do not do, but I practice the very evil that I do not want.**

**But if I am doing the very thing I do not want to do, I am no longer the one doing it [that is, it is not me that acts], but the sin [nature] which lives in me. So I find it to be the law [of my inner self], that evil is present in me, the one who wants to do good.**

*For I joyfully delight in the law of God in my inner self [with my new nature], but I see a different law and rule of action in the members of my body [in its appetites and desires], waging war against the law of my mind and subduing me and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is within my members". [Roman 7 verses 15-23, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

What is presented here is important!



Among other things, we discover how our state of being sinful, which we inherited from Adam, makes us unable to keep God's law.

At every moment there is a war going on within us, between the two forces of good and sin and furthermore we cannot conquer sin on our own. This is how man finds two laws inside him, that of God which is spiritual and that of sin which is carnal. Because of man's sinful state, he is ruled from birth by the law of sin, which makes him unable to follow the terms of God's law by himself.

The law is presented as being spiritual, while the human being is carnally captive of sin. In doing so, following God's law and his holy commandments would have lead to life, if mankind had not inherited sin in Adam, in which case it lead to death. In order to allow you to really appreciate this, I am going to tell you a true story:

*It is most tragic and features the brother of one of my very good friends. After undergoing his full annual check-up, he learned that he had lung cancer. Although malignant, the tumour had not yet metastasised and could therefore be operated on.*

*However the concern was that it was located too close to an artery, which made the operation dangerous. Doctors therefore preferred to prescribe chemotherapy so that the tumour could be eradicated. They were confident, because for them it was just a formality. The patient therefore received a number of chemotherapy drugs until the day a new doctor arrived in the department and realised that his colleagues had prescribed the man the wrong chemotherapy treatment.*

*The result was that the cancer metastasised in both the sick and healthy lungs. The result was the patient's death.*

In this story can we say that chemotherapy is a bad thing? Surely the answer must be no, because if the right treatment had been given, this man could have been saved. Yet this powerful weapon to save a life ended up in death. It is the same with God's law.

Normally, if mankind refrains from sin, God's law is intended to lead to life, but as we have previously seen given that humanity is under the yoke of sin, God's law leads to death. Here is the fate reserved for those who sin and therefore who violate God's law:

**"For the wages of sin is death [...]"** [*Romans 6 verse 23, King James Bible*].

The transgression of the law is the sin which itself results in death.

So the problem does not come from God's law, but from those who live without being able to observe it. As we also discovered, God's Word presents us as being anxious to fulfil the recommendations of God's law, but we are incapable of doing so, because we have another law within us that makes us captive to sin.

The wages of sin being death and sin being the transgression of God's law, this fact is the weapon par excellence the devil uses in order to dominate mankind. He has been doing this since he defeated Adam and Eve. Understanding the role of God's law in the great cosmic conflict between Satan (*and his servants*) and God (*and his children*) is therefore essential for our future. This tells us:

**"The sting of death is sin; and the power of sin is the law"** [*1 Corinthians 15 verse 56, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

This verse is short but comprehension of what is presented here is one of the keys to understanding how the devil uses the law to make men captive.

Before continuing, it is important to also consider this text: **"Therefore, since the children share flesh and blood, he also shared the same flesh and blood, so that through death he could destroy the one who had the power of death (that is, the Devil) and free those who were held in slavery all their lives by the fear of death"**. [*Hebrews 2 verses 14-15, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

When I summarise these two texts, here is what I get from them:

*The devil retains his captives (slaves) through the power of death. His subjects are bound to him by fear of death. Sin is what gives death its power, for death is the wages of those who sin. And we have seen that sin is the transgression of God's Law. For its part, the power of sin is the law.*

*It is this that highlights the transgression, which when committed leads to death.*

This text highlights this fact: **"What should we say then? Is the law sin? Absolutely not! But I would not have known sin if it were not for the law. For example, I would not have known what it is to covet if the law had not said, Do not covet.**

**And sin, seizing an opportunity through the commandment, produced in me coveting of every kind. For apart from the law sin is dead. Once I was alive apart from the law, but when the commandment came, sin sprang to life again and I died. The commandment that was meant for life resulted in death for me.**

*For sin, seizing an opportunity through the commandment, deceived me, and through it killed me. So then, the law is holy, and the commandment is holy and just and good.*

*Therefore, did what is good become death to me? Absolutely not! But sin, in order to be recognized as sin, was producing death in me through what is good, so that through the commandment, sin might become sinful beyond measure. For we know that the law is spiritual, but I am of the flesh, sold as a slave under sin". [Roman 7 verses 7-14, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].*

Although God's law is holy and good, it is that which highlights sin, because it is that which establishes that the wages of sin are death. Thus, when we transgress God's law, we sin and we become Satan's slaves and therefore, we belong to him.

What I have just presented, the devil knows and uses and abuses. This is why he will always come to claim from God those who have sinned. This text explains this point: **"Then he showed me the high priest Joshua standing before the angel of the Lord, with Satan standing at his right side to accuse him. The Lord said to Satan, "The Lord rebuke you, Satan!**

*May the Lord who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you! Isn't this man a burning stick snatched from the fire?" Now Joshua was dressed with filthy clothes as he stood before the angel. So the angel of the Lord spoke to those standing before him, "Take off his filthy clothes!"*

*Then he said to him, "See, I have removed your iniquity from you, and I will clothe you with festive robes". [Zechariah 3 verses 1-4, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].*

In order to understand how the devil operates, we must never lose sight of the fact that he is a snitch, an accuser, who highlights the sins that men commit before God.

Here Joshua is wearing dirty clothes which represent his iniquity and therefore his sins [*1 John 5 verse 17, Bible Louis Second*], (*which by extension represents the transgression of God's law*).

Whenever a human being sins, the devil will claim him as his. The fact that death occurs is not reason enough for the devil to no longer claim his captives. This fact is described in the following:

**"But when [even] the archangel Michael, contending with the devil, judicially argued (disputed) about the body of Moses, he dared not [presume to] bring an abusive condemnation against him, but [simply] said, The Lord rebuke you!"** [*Jude 1 verse 9, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

To better understand what is happening here, it is necessary to understand what made the devil claim the remains of Moses.

This tells us: **"And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron thy brother, and speak ye unto the rock before their eyes;**

*And it shall give forth his water, and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of the rock: so thou shalt give the congregation and their beasts drink. And Moses took the rod from before the LORD, as he commanded him. And Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before the rock, and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels;*

*Must we fetch you water out of this rock? And Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod he smote the rock twice:*

**And the water came out abundantly, and the congregation drank, and their beasts also.**

**And the LORD spake unto Moses and Aaron, Because ye believed me not, to sanctify me in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore ye shall not bring this congregation into the land which I have given them.**

*This is the water of Meribah; because the children of Israel strove with the LORD, and he was sanctified in them".* [*Numbers 20 verses 7-13, King James Bible*].

Before continuing, it is important to understand that striking a rock so that water comes out was familiar to Moses, because he had already experienced such an occurrence [*Exodus 17 verses 5-7*].

The difference between the two occasions when Moses struck the rock was that the first time it happened the Lord asked him to do it, whereas the second time he acted because he was exasperated by the recriminations of the people.

This simple gesture cost him dearly, because that day he lost the possibility of entering Canaan for which he had fought so hard by marching at the head of God's people.

And this, when he was the only prophet in all of biblical history to whom God spoke mouth to mouth [*Numbers 12 verses 6-8*].

It is for this reason that after his death, the brothers' accuser, the devil, came to claim the body of Moses for himself.

Whenever we prefer to act according to our own interests at the expense of divine directives, the devil will claim us for himself.

He is on the alert to see every sin that God's people commit. The goal is to keep God informed.

The devil is the one who encourages men to sin, then he accuses them before God night and day [*Revelation 12 verses 9-12*].

As God's people we are at war and our enemy is unleashed, knowing that he has little time left, roaming like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour [*1 Peter 5 verse 8*].

We must be aware of the significance of the law and the role it plays in the sealing of God's people and that of the servants of the devil.

We have seen in the text of [*1 John 3 verses 4-12*] that sin is what differentiates God's children from the devil's children.

The devil's children are characterised by the fact that they practise sin, which is the violation of God's law. For their part the Lord's children acquire the capacity not to sin through Jesus and it is by abiding in him, where there is no sin, that this is possible.

The first step to gaining victory over sin as well as over the devil is to make a covenant with the Lord through the bond of baptism.

Before continuing, it is vital to reiterate that there are *7 steps* or rungs to be put in place during baptism. If you go through the baptismal waters without having them all in place, you will not receive the Holy Spirit because your baptism is incomplete.

In the text of [*Acts 19 verses 1-7*] we find a specific example of what I am saying.

So that you are clear about this baptismal situation, I invite you to read my book entitled “*The act of baptism and Christian growth (The reality of the latter rain that is to fall on God’s people)*”.

In these pages you will find all of the baptismal guidelines that God approves and which will allow you to receive the Holy Spirit at the end of your baptism. If you are to be baptised, I urge you to read this book before the big day.

Now that point is made, we can proceed. Once baptised, with a baptism in accordance with the seven biblical stages, one must remain faithful to the Lord so that one is not claimed by the devil.

In [*Galatians 5 verses 16-18, 22-25*] we read that those who have God’s Spirit living in them cannot walk in the fruits of the flesh for they walk in the spirit.

The only possibility we have that the law of sin cannot dominate our lives is to have the Spirit of God within us.

It is important to specify that as the Holy Spirit cannot live in the ungodly and is not given to those who do not obey God [*2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-16*], [*Acts 5 verse 32*], all those who reject Jesus Christ or who have not made a covenant with him through baptism remain under the original death decree and therefore remain under the law.

All who have this position the devil will claim as his property.

God’s law is therefore at the centre of the great cosmic conflict between Satan (*and his minions*) and the Lord (*and his people*).

It is God’s law that determines which master rules over us, God or the devil! If the Spirit of God is not in us, we remain under the yoke of the law and not being able to fulfil its requirements by ourselves, we become liable to the wages that its transgression demands, namely death.

This study is important because, as we shall see, the salvation of many depends on it.

It is for this reason that it is the central thesis of this book. In order to broaden our understanding of what we have just seen, we will continue to develop this theme in the following parts of this book.

### 3.4 The difference between those living under God's grace and those living under the law

It is really important to understand the difference between those who are living under God's grace and those who are living under the law. To illustrate this biblical doctrine presenting those who are living under the law and those are not living under the law, I will give you two examples:

*First, let's take the case of a kleptomaniac. Because of his illness, he will live all of his life under the law. Because he cannot help stealing he will always be in the custody of justice.*

*Those living without Christ are like this, because no one has the power to act justly unless the spirit of Jesus lives in them.*

*Since human beings are all born under the yoke of sin and by themselves are incapable of resisting sin, his law being embedded in them, they remain under the yoke of the law for all their life.*

*This situation changes as soon as a person accepts Jesus Christ as his personal saviour.*

*Which brings us back to the second case. Now let's take the case of a person who does not suffer from kleptomania and who is also a fervent Christian. He will have no impulse to steal.*

*What makes this possible is that whoever makes a covenant with Christ and in whom the Holy Spirit lives cannot do the Holy Spirit's deeds and those of the flesh at the same time.*

*Thus, he will never be worried by the judicial authorities regarding theft and will therefore never be under the yoke of the law. However although he will not be brought to justice under the law, this does not imply that there is no law established in society which prohibits theft.*

*It is the same for those living under God's grace!*

Living under God's grace and not being under the law does not mean living without God's law.

But living under the justice of the law presupposes not being under God's grace. In my opinion, this fact could be summarised as follows:

*Those who have made a covenant with Jesus Christ are under God's grace and have the capacity to resist sin and it is through the action of the Holy Spirit that this is possible.*

*While the rest of humanity, not being under God's grace, remains under the law and has no strength to resist sin.*

*This situation comes about due to the fact that, through the action of the Holy Spirit, the seed of God, his holy law becomes active in the hearts of those who make a covenant with Jesus, so they do not practise sin.*

*We will develop this concept in the chapter entitled "What role should the law play in the lives of those who are saved by the grace that has been manifested in Jesus Christ?"*

*On the contrary, the rest of humanity not being connected to Christ, does not naturally have in it the capacity to overcome the law of sin, which dominates it and makes it unfit to observe God's law [Romans 7 verses 14- 25].*

*Man doesn't have the capacity to act otherwise. If he still tries to be governed by the law, he finds himself under the curse because he is incapable of abiding by the whole law.*

In order to present the state of the sinful man faced with the law, let's read this text: **"For as many as are of the works of the law are under a curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one who continueth not in all things that are written in the book of the law, to do them.**

*Now that no man is justified by the law before God, is evident: for, The righteous shall live by faith; and the law is not of faith;*

*But, He that doeth them shall live in them". [Galatians 3 verses 10-12, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

It is in order to change man's situation in the face of the curse, which is attached to the law, that Jesus came and gave his life [Colossians 2 verses 10-15].



Thanks to Christ, we no longer live under the yoke of the law. Our baptism gives us freedom and life in Christ.

Before the baptism, we were like all of humanity, under the burden of the death penalty inherited from Adam, but once united to Jesus we were redeemed from this death sentence that the law imposed on us!

Sin being the transgression of God's law and its purpose being death, there had to be death before this edict could become obsolete.

Since neither an angel nor a human being has power over life and death, it had to be an eternal being who made the sacrifice.

By his death, Christ nailed to the cross this death sentence, which condemned humanity. He redeemed us from the curse which was attached to the law and which condemned all men, exposing them to pay the price of the edict which decrees that the price of sin is death.

To do this, the son of God redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us. To understand this, let's read the following text: **"Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written:**

*Cursed is everyone who is hung on a pole. He redeemed us in order that the blessing given to Abraham might come to the Gentiles through Christ Jesus, so that by faith we might receive the promise of the Spirit". [Galatians 3 verses 13-14, New International Version Bible – UK (NIVUK)].*

*What qualified Jesus as the ideal sacrifice was the fact that dying was not enough to redeem mankind, as it was also necessary that the sacrifice that was offered could be resurrected in order to be able to give life to all those who would make a covenant with him.*

That's what Christ did for us. This text reveals these facts: **"Or are ye ignorant that all we who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death?**

**We were buried therefore with him through baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we also might walk in newness of life.**

**For if we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection;**

**Knowing this, that our old man was crucified with him, that the body of sin might be done away, that so we should no longer be in bondage to sin; for he that hath died is justified from sin.**

*But if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him; knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more;*

*Death no more hath dominion over him. For the death that he died, he died unto sin once: but the life that he liveth, he liveth unto God. Even so reckon ye also yourselves to be dead unto sin, but alive unto God in Christ Jesus". [Romans 6 verses 3-11, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Here we are presented with what is happening when we bond with Jesus. At baptism, being immersed, we die with Jesus and also to sin.

Then by emerging we resurrect with Christ and receive the Spirit of God [Acts 2 verses 38-39] and become God's children and his heirs. This text gives more details on the matter: **"So then, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh:**

**For if ye live after the flesh, ye must die; but if by the Spirit ye put to death the deeds of the body, ye shall live. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. For ye received not the spirit of bondage again unto fear; but ye received the spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit himself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are children of God:**

*And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified with him". [Romans 8 verses 12-17, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Once we accept Jesus Christ as our personal saviour and make a covenant with him, the Spirit of God brings about a drastic transformation in us. A radical change of direction takes place in the heart of the one who makes a covenant with Jesus and in whom the Spirit of God lives. Here is what happened to Paul: *"Even though I have grounds for confidence also in the flesh. If anyone else thinks that he has grounds for confidence in the flesh, I have more:*

*Circumcised on the eighth day, of the people of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews; in regard to the law, a Pharisee;*

*In regard to zeal, persecuting the church; in regard to the righteousness that is in the law, blameless.*

**But, whatever things were a profit for me, these things I have come to consider a loss because of Christ. But even more than that, I consider everything to be a loss because of what is worth far more: knowing Christ Jesus, my Lord.**

**For his sake, I have lost all things and consider them rubbish, so that I may gain Christ and be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own, which comes from the law, but that which comes through faith in Christ, the righteousness that comes from God by faith.**

**I do this so that I may know him and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of his sufferings, being conformed to his death, in the hope that in some way I may arrive at the resurrection from the dead".** [*Philippians 3 verses 4-11, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Once we have made a covenant with Jesus we change masters.

We move from the dominion of the devil where we were and become untouchables in Christ [*1 John 5 verses 18-19*].

Another strong image of this change of direction is given to us here: "*What then? shall we sin, because we are not under law, but under grace? God forbid.*

**Know ye not, that to whom ye present yourselves as servants unto obedience, his servants ye are whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?**

**But thanks be to God, that, whereas ye were servants of sin, ye became obedient from the heart to that form of teaching whereunto ye were delivered; and being made free from sin, ye became servants of righteousness.**

*I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye presented your members as servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity, even so now present your members as servants to righteousness unto sanctification.*

*For when ye were servants of sin, ye were free in regard of righteousness. What fruit then had ye at that time in the things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death. But now being made free from sin and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto sanctification, and the end eternal life". [Romans 6 verses 15-22, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Whoever becomes a slave to justice is not detained against his will, but he chooses to no longer walk in the flesh, despite the fact that he is free through Jesus Christ. This freedom is given to us by the Holy Spirit. Let's read this text which highlights this point:

**"My brothers and sisters, God called you to be free [freedom], but do not use your freedom as an excuse to do what pleases [opportunity/occasion for] your sinful self [sinful nature; flesh].**

*[But; Rather] Serve each other with love. [For] The whole law is made complete [summed up; fulfilled] in this one command: "Love your neighbor as you love yourself [Lev. 19:18]." So I tell you: Live [Walk] by following [guided by; in the power of; L by] the Spirit.*

*Then you will not do what your sinful self [sinful nature; flesh] wants [desires; craves]. Our sinful self [sinful nature; flesh] wants [desires] what is against the Spirit, and the Spirit wants [desires] what is against our sinful self [sinful nature; flesh].*

*[For] The two are against [opposed to; or hostile toward] each other, so you cannot do just what you please [want]. But if the Spirit is leading you, you are not under the law.*

*[...] Those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified their own sinful selves [the sinful nature; The flesh].*

*They have given up their old selfish feelings and the evil things they wanted to do [its passions and desires]". [Galatians 5 verses 13-14, 16-18, 24, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

By accepting Jesus as our personal saviour a transformation takes place in us from that moment onwards. Whereas before we did not have the capacity to resist sin and were therefore subject to the law, our situation changes and we are no longer under the law.

The law is a guide or a tutor who helps man to walk until such time as he becomes a man or a woman made in Jesus Christ's image.

Here is the biblical image describing this situation: *"Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could make alive, verily righteousness would have been of the law. But the scripture shut up all things under sin, that the promise by faith in Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.*

**But before faith came, we were kept in ward under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. So that the law is become our tutor to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.**

**But now that faith is come, we are no longer under a tutor. For ye are all sons of God, through faith, in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as were baptized into Christ did put on Christ. There can be neither Jew nor Greek, there can be neither bond nor free, there can be no male and female; for ye all are one man in Christ Jesus. And if ye are Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, heirs according to promise.**

**[...] But I say that so long as the heir is a child, he differeth nothing from a bondservant though he is lord of all; but is under guardians and stewards until the day appointed of the father.**

**So we also, when we were children, were held in bondage under the rudiments of the world: but when the fulness of the time came, God sent forth his Son, born of a woman, born under the law, that he might redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.**

**And because ye are sons, God sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father. So that thou art no longer a bondservant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir through God".** *[Galatians 3 verse 21 to Galatians 4 verse 7, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Here we discover the state of humanity without Christ! All human beings are slaves to the worldly elements or to the law of sin.

The latter leads to not having the capacity of doing the good that we would like to do, but moreover, it encourages us to do the evil that we do not want to do *[Romans 7 verses 14-25]*.

*Which places us under the domination of the law and therefore under its yoke.*

Then by making an alliance with Jesus Christ, who paid the price on the cross for the redemption of mankind, which had been decreed by law, namely *death* [Romans 6 verse 23], we have become able to live without being under this constraint (*guardian*) of the law.

The result is that in Christ we are therefore no longer under the law. Now we live under God's grace.

To imagine what this text presents, here is an example:

*Imagine having a puny little sapling, which essentially is intended to become a powerful oak. Being too weak to grow straight, you tie it to a stake, which you insert next to it. But as soon as it starts to look more like a tree and stands straight you will remove its support, as leaving it would only hinder it.*

*It is the same in the spiritual world. Those who have not made a covenant with Jesus and who are not able to walk alone in all of the ways of the Lord need a guide so they don't go astray.*

*It is there that the law becomes the tutor intended to guide humanity, until such time as Jesus returns and gives to those who are united in him (by baptism), the capacity to live by Spirit at the expense of the flesh.*

It should be noted that, being without sin, Adam and Eve did not need to have a safeguard like the Ten Commandments in order to remain faithful to God, because they did not yet have uncontrolled desires that could have caused them to give in to their urges.

As soon as they disobeyed and transmitted the virus of sin to mankind, it was therefore essential for the Lord to put in place a universal law intended to govern all aspects of life. In the following text we discover that the law was given because of transgressions:

*"For if the inheritance [of what was promised] is based on [observing] the Law [as these false teachers claim], it is no longer based on a promise; however, God granted it to Abraham [as a gift] by virtue of His promise. **Why, then, the Law [what was its purpose]?***

**It was added [after the promise to Abraham, to reveal to people their guilt] because of transgressions [that is, to make people conscious of the sinfulness of sin], and [the Law] was ordained through angels and delivered to Israel by the hand of a mediator [Moses, the mediator between God and Israel, to be in effect] until the Seed would come to whom the promise had been made". [Galatians 3 verses 18-19, Amplified Bible (AMP)].**

Humanity having lost the capacity that Adam and Eve had, before they sinned, to live without the compulsion to sin causing us to violate God's Word, the Lord provided a safeguard in the form of his Holy Law! The primary purpose of God's law is to be guided thereby imposing limits.

The Lord, through Moses, presents the law as a safeguard (*witness*) established to guide the people and to keep them from wandering spiritually [Deuteronomy 31 verses 24-29].

The law is therefore intended to preserve God's people from making mistakes and to present to them the paths to follow in order to be faithful to the Lord.

By doing so, they will receive a pledge that the various misfortunes and plagues described in [Deuteronomy 28 verses 15-68] will not strike them down as will be the case with the law breakers. Here is what the law says as a guide to stop you from going astray:

**"Where there is no word from God [vision; prophecy], people are uncontrolled [the people perish], but those who obey what they have been taught [guard the law] are happy [blessed]". [Proverbs 29 verse 18, Expanded Bible (EXB)].**

Those who made a covenant with Jesus and in whom the Spirit of God lives are no longer under the law, but are free.

They no longer need this guardian to support them, because they walk with the Spirit of God and not in the flesh.

The law acting as a guardian dominates man until he is baptised into Jesus Christ. Those who are thus united with him are no longer under the law, for they are enabled by the Holy Spirit to walk in all truth.

The grace manifested in Christ enables us to choose not to practise sin. Here is how this situation is presented:

**"What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? [...] Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.**

*Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin:*

*But yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace". [Romans 6 verses 1-2, 11-14, King James Bible].*

It is important to understand that being saved by God's grace does not destroy the law. Here is what God's Word has to say on the matter: **"Do we then nullify the Law by this faith [making the Law of no effect, overthrowing it]? Certainly not! On the contrary, we confirm *and* establish *and* uphold the Law [...]". [Romans 3 verse 31, Amplified Bible (AMP)].**

I would just like to comment on this verse by telling you, that God's grace does not nullify the law, but rather magnifies it.

We cannot live a renewed life in Jesus Christ through God's Spirit, if God's law is not our guide. We will not develop this last text any further at this stage, because I have made a detailed analysis on this subject in the following section.

Finally, I will tell you that although God's law is not indelibly engraved in the hearts of those living without Christ, they too are guided by it, because the spirit of the law directs their conscience. Here is a comment on the subject:

*"All who have sinned without knowledge of the Law will die without reference to the Law; and all who have sinned knowing the Law shall be judged according to the Law. It is not familiarity with the Law that justifies a man in the sight of God, but obedience to it.*

**When the Gentiles, who have no knowledge of the Law, act in accordance with it by the light of nature, they show that they have a law in themselves, for they demonstrate the effect of a law operating in their own hearts.**



**Their own consciences endorse the existence of such a law, for there is something which condemns or commends their actions.**

*We may be sure that all this will be taken into account in the day of true judgment, when God will judge men's secret lives by Jesus Christ, as my Gospel plainly states". [Romans 2 verses 12-16, J.B. Phillips New Testament Bible (PHILLIPS)].*

Human beings know from childhood when they have made mistakes, because the Holy Spirit speaks to their hearts. The difference between God's people and the pagans can be formulated as follows:

*The pagan lives under the yoke of the law and the Holy Spirit speaks to his conscience in order to divert him from evil acts by means of the law.*

*The one who made a covenant with Jesus Christ, on the other hand, is not under the yoke of the law, insofar as it is now written in his heart by the Holy Spirit, which strengthens him and speaks to his conscience to guide him.*

In both cases, the law is not abolished, because it is the guide that leads the steps of men in a just way.

It is thanks to the law written in his heart that the Christian can walk with the spirit to the detriment of the flesh. This is how he can protect himself, so that the evil one does not touch him [1 John 5 verse 18].

Those who are justified in Jesus Christ are those who practise what God's law says! Nevertheless, if it is not embedded by God's Spirit in our hearts, we are not justified by the divine sacrifice of Jesus Christ, because what seals the covenant between him and us is the law which is written in our hearts.

I sincerely believe that those who reject God's law on the pretext that they are under God's grace, have already understood that without the law no grace would exist, because it is God's law that makes the grace of Jesus Christ possible.

### 3.5 What role should the law play in the lives of those who are saved by the grace that has been manifested in Jesus Christ?

I will begin this part by telling you that when we live in righteousness, we are not always aware of the significance of keeping the law in our lives. To allow you to be more clear about this, let's take a concrete example:

*When you, as a child of God claiming to belong to the Lord, the great Emmanuel, are at the cash desk of a supermarket and the cashier inadvertently gives you back the 100 € note that you gave him to pay for your purchases and also inadvertently gives you change of 100 € as well.*

*What do you do? Do you take the money and scamper off like a cat which has just had a bucket of cold water thrown over it.*

*Your catchphrase being: "I did not rob this cashier!"*

*I only took what he gave me. You reassure yourself by saying to yourself "Anyway everything contributes to the good of those who love God", so it was the Lord who allowed this mistake.*

*So you take advantage of your "blessing" without thinking of this poor cashier who, at worst may lose his job and at best may have to take it from his salary to compensate for the fruits of your mischief, hum... SORRY... your "blessing".*

*I tell you this story, knowing that this scenario cannot in any case, I repeat... in any case, be the attitude of those people who are faithful to God, of whom you are certainly one.*

*Wouldn't your first reaction be, like mine, to discreetly point out this error to the cashier? Yes of course!*

*In this case, which is a most striking one, without even realising it, you have put into practice what the eighth commandment of the decalogue requires in relation to prohibiting theft.*

*Keeping God's law becomes second nature to those who are saved by God's grace and who remain connected to the Lord.*

In the text of [1 John 3 verses 4-12] we read that it is by binding ourselves to Jesus that the seed of God comes into us and allows us not to practise sin. It is important to understand what this divine seed is, which remains in God's children and which allows them to walk as sanctified beings!

Especially since we have already studied that human beings do not have the capacity by themselves to keep God's law because of the law of sin which is in them.

Here is what God's Word has to say concerning this force which is in those who have made a covenant with Jesus Christ and which allows them not to sin and therefore not to violate God's law:

**"Behold, the days come," saith the Lord, "when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah — not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in My covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.**

**For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord: I will put My laws into their minds and write them in their hearts, and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to Me a people.**

*And they shall not teach every man his neighbor and every man his brother, saying, 'Know the Lord,' for all shall know Me, from the least to the greatest.*

*For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more". [Hebrews 8 verses 8-12, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

To make what we have just seen a little clearer, I will give you a practical example:

*There are chewing gums available whose packaging provides an image that can be affixed to your body.*

*To do this you have to wet the skin, then take the image (which is on a small piece of paper resembling tracing paper) and then stick the drawing on your skin.*

*It is necessary to pass your fingers delicately over the back of the image and then remove the small sheet and the drawing remains on your skin. As for the small sheet, it becomes empty because the image it contained is now on your skin.*

It is important to note that this change of status, allowing God's Law to be written, therefore engraved in the hearts and minds of those who make a covenant with the Lord, through Jesus Christ, does not happen as if by magic. Here is what we can read about it:

*"Then I will sprinkle pure water on you and make you pure. I will wash away all your filth, the filth from those nasty idols, and I will make you pure.*

**I will also put a new spirit in you to change your way of thinking. I will take out the heart of stone from your body and give you a tender, human heart.**

**I will put my Spirit inside you and change you so that you will obey my laws. You will carefully obey my commands.**

*Then you will live in the land that I gave to your ancestors. You will be my people, and I will be your God". [Ezekiel 36 verses 25-28, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].*

We do not inherently have the ability to keep God's law. It's the Holy Spirit who gives God's people a new heart and a new spirit in which the law is written.

It is important to understand that it is because God's Spirit has engraved the law of the Lord in our hearts that we are more able to walk with the Spirit and not in the flesh.

The difference between those who are guided by God's Spirit and those who are not is very well represented in this text:

**"This I say then: Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh;**

**And these are contrary the one to the other, so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. But if ye are led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law. Now the works of the flesh are manifest, and they are these:**

*Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, quarreling, rivalry, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envying, murders, drunkenness, revelings, and such like.*

*About these things I tell you again, as I have also told you in times past, that those who do such things shall not inherit the Kingdom of God. **But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance:***

*Against such there is no law. And those who are Christ's have crucified the flesh with its affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit". [Galatians 5 verses 16-25, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

This fact is the key giving God's people victory over the devil, for we have seen that he keeps men captive, using death as retribution for sin and that the law is the stimulus that allows him to act.

Since God's law is sealed in the hearts of his children, they do not violate it by practising sin.

Thus, the devil cannot touch them or claim them as his own as he did for Moses after his death.

Man cannot observe the law by himself, but in Jesus we acquire a portion of God's Spirit, which allows us to obey God's law out of love [2 Corinthians 1 verses 20-22], [Ephesians 4 verse 30].

Being guided by the Holy Spirit, God's people have only two possibilities, either to walk in accordance with the fruits of the Spirit or those of the flesh.

*It is impossible to do both simultaneously!*

When they no longer walk according to the works of the flesh, they are no longer subject to the dictates of the law, but as we have seen, the law becomes their basis of conduct.

We have just seen that the Lord's promise is that in his new covenant manifested in Jesus Christ, the Holy Spirit engraves the divine law in the hearts of the chosen people.

The following text describes its transfer from the tablets of stone to be engraved on the hearts of God's children:

"You show that you are a letter from Christ, delivered by us, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts. [...]

He has qualified us [making us sufficient] as ministers of a new covenant [of salvation through Christ], not of the letter [of a written code] but of the Spirit; *For the letter [of the Law] kills [by revealing sin and demanding obedience], but the Spirit gives life.*

Now if the ministry of death, engraved in letters on stones [the covenant of the Law which led to death because of sin], came with such glory and splendor that the Israelites were not able to look steadily at the face of Moses because of its glory, [a brilliance] that was fading, how will the ministry of the Spirit [the new covenant which allows us to be Spirit-filled] fail to be even more glorious and splendid? [...]

Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty [emancipation from bondage, true freedom].

And we all, with unveiled face, continually seeing as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are progressively being transformed into His image from [one degree of] glory to [even more] glory, which comes from the Lord, [who is] the Spirit". [2 Corinthians 3 verses 3, 6-8, 17-18, Amplified Bible (AMP)].

What is shown here is important! As long as the law remained on the stone tablets its result was the death of sinners, because the letter kills and it is through it that the wages of sin, therefore death, was ratified.

On the other hand, from now on, it is God's Spirit that keeps the law engraved in the hearts of God's children.

Thus it becomes a law of life, because it is no longer the law that has control over the heart and therefore over the minds of those who are bound to Christ, but it is the Holy Spirit and here's what He does to them: "**It is the Spirit that quickeneth ; the flesh profiteth nothing.**

*The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life".* [John 6 verse 63, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].

It is because the Spirit of God enlivens the heart that this is possible.

It allows those who have the law engraved in their hearts (*spirits*) to be transformed by God's grace into the image of Jesus whom they contemplate.

In this way they can no longer act as they please, but instead enjoy the fruits of God's Spirit to the detriment of those of the flesh.

The result will be that as long as they remain connected to Christ like this, the devil will not be able to touch them. This fact is presented in the following:

**"We know that no child of God keeps on sinning. The Son of God watches over him and the devil cannot get near him".**  
[1 John 5 verse 18, New Life Version Bible (NLV)].

By understanding where God's law goes once we have made a covenant with Jesus Christ, we can understand its sustainability.

Thanks to the action of the Holy Spirit, by being in us, the law found the most beautiful of jewel cases.

*The price that was paid for this divine jewel to be inside us was no minor one, because it was the bloody sacrifice of God's son!*

These biblical texts that we have just seen highlight the fact that the covenant that God makes with men through Christ, means that thanks to the Holy Spirit, He engraves his laws in the hearts of those who so unite with Him.

This fact therefore establishes that without God's law, we cannot adhere to this new covenant that God has prepared for us, because this commitment requires that He writes the law in our hearts (*minds*).

Thus, those who reject God's law cannot access the throne of God's grace, through the flesh (*therefore of the divine sacrifice*) of Christ because to do this, one must be eligible for the new covenant that the Lord makes with those who accept Jesus as their personal saviour.

Here is how this situation is presented:

**"This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them;**

**And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more."** Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

**Having therefore boldness, brethren, to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living Way, which He hath consecrated for us through the veil (that is to say, His flesh), and having a High Priest over the house of God, let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water".** [Hebrews 10 verses 16-22, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].

For there to be the forgiveness of sins God's law must be etched in our hearts and minds. As we have already seen, if it (*the law*) is not in us, or if we reject it, we cannot enter into the presence of the Lord in the Most Holy Heavenly place.

God being three times holy, no one charged with sin can approach him. There has to be a radical change of course before we can do so. Only those who are perfect and sanctified can approach the Lord.

This is why Jesus sanctified himself, so that whoever made a covenant with him should also be sanctified. By his divine sacrifice, He also makes perfect those who become one with him.

The following text highlights this: **"So when Christ came into the world he said, "You don't want sacrifices and offerings, but you have prepared a body for me. You are not pleased with the sacrifices of animals killed and burned or with offerings to take away sins. Then I said, 'Here I am, God.**

*It is written about me in the book of the law. I have come to do what you want."* Christ first said, *"You don't want sacrifices and offerings. You are not pleased with animals killed and burned or with sacrifices to take away sin."*

*(These are all sacrifices that the law commands.) Then he said, "Here I am, God. I have come to do what you want."*

**So God ends that first system of sacrifices and starts his new way. Jesus Christ did the things God wanted him to do.**

**And because of that, we are made holy through the sacrifice of Christ's body. Christ made that sacrifice one time — enough for all time. [...] With one sacrifice Christ made his people perfect forever. They are the ones who are being made holy".** [Hebrews 10 verses 5-10, 14, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].



To reinforce this fact, let's read the following: "*And such were some of you. But ye are washed, ye are sanctified, ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God*". [1 Corinthians 6 verse 11, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].

Let us finish with this other very relevant text: "**That I should be a minister of Christ Jesus** *unto the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be made acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Spirit*". [Romans 15 verse 16, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].

It is the law that once written in our hearts (*our minds*), by God's Spirit, changes our status and makes us holy.

As we have seen, this fact is linked to the ministry of the Holy Spirit in us, which enables us to no longer walk in the flesh.

This is how the forgiveness granted by God through Jesus remains as we no longer enjoy sinning because our life has been renewed.

*If God's law is not in us, or if we sin by violating these commandments, we become ineligible for the new covenant that the Lord made through the flesh and blood of his son on the cross.*

*The primary repercussion is that we cannot wrap ourselves in Christ (be covered by his justice) which means, that like Joshua, we remain wrapped in our dirty clothes (we remain covered in our sins). The final result will be that the devil will come and claim us as his own presenting as his evidence the law declaring that the wages of sin is death.*

*We have seen that the law which led to death has become a law which, through the Holy Spirit, leads to life. This fact is the key highlighting the predicted change in the law.*

This predicted occurrence in the change of God's law, which went from the tablets of stone to the hearts of God's people had been presented by Jesus as being the fulfilment of the law.

Here is what Jesus teaches us about it:

**"Do not think that I have come to do away with or undo the Law or the Prophets; I have come not to do away with or undo but to complete and fulfill them.**

**For truly I tell you, until the sky and earth pass away and perish, not one smallest letter nor one little hook [identifying certain Hebrew letters] will pass from the Law until all things [it foreshadows] are accomplished.**

*Whoever then breaks or does away with or relaxes one of the least [important] of these commandments and teaches men so shall be called least [important] in the kingdom of heaven, but he who practices them and teaches others to do so shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.*

*For I tell you, unless your righteousness (your uprightness and your right standing with God) is more than that of the scribes and Pharisees, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven". [Matthew 5 verses 17-19, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

To understand the term “*fulfil*” that the Lord uses here relating to the law, one must return to the state of man before sin.

*Adam and Eve were created without sin, which is why they walked with the Spirit of God and since God’s law was written in their hearts they did not commit sin.*

*Nevertheless the Lord, not having created them as robots, left them free will. This is why Eve ate the fruit after being seduced by the serpent and Adam, meanwhile, in all conscience followed his wife’s example [Genesis 3].*

Having lifted mankind from where Adam fell, Jesus Christ came to instil the law in man and to place it in the hearts of those who made a covenant with him. This ensured that God’s law was not abolished, but went from the stone tablets to the hearts of God’s people.

The presence of the law in man is revealed by this little voice that guides our conscience and this is the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to us. It serves as our guide reminding us that we are God’s children.

Here is how the Holy Spirit works in the minds of God's children:

**"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit that we are the children of God"** [*Romans 8 verse 16, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

This is how we know in our conscience what is good and what is not. It is this basis that determines our choices between good and bad.

Furthermore, as we have seen, it is the Holy Spirit that makes a renewed life through Jesus Christ possible!

It enables us to naturally observe God's law. It is also the Holy Spirit who allows us to master God's ordinances!

Something which is impossible for the rest of humanity living without Christ. Here is how this fact is presented:

*"But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God."*

**For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.**

**Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth;**

**Comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.**

*But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ". [1 Corinthians 2 verses 10-16, King James Bible].*

As you can see, the action of the Holy Spirit in the minds of those who receive it is beyond measure. It is he that enables mankind to understand Godly things.

He is also responsible for managing all of the facets of the life of God's people [*John 16 verses 8-15*].

Furthermore, I want to tell you that through baptism, we become new creatures in Christ and no longer live for ourselves but for our Saviour, who has reconciled us with God and made us his ambassadors [2 Corinthians 5 verses 14-21].

As ambassadors for God, we are called to rescue souls for him. The quest for a soul must lead us to become like a chameleon that adapts to its environment. The goal is to win souls for the Lord without denying our convictions. This is how Paul presents it:

**"For though I was free from all men, I brought myself under bondage to all, that I might gain the more.**

*And to the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, not being myself under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law;*

**To them that are without law, as without law, not being without law to God, but under law to Christ, that I might gain them that are without law.**

*To the weak I became weak, that I might gain the weak: I am become all things to all men, that I may by all means save some.*

*And I do all things for the gospel's sake, that I may be a joint partaker thereof". [1 Corinthians 9 verses 19-23, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

This text is important and is a *snub* for those who think that being under God's grace means not observing God's law.

*Here Paul says he is keeping God's law!*

*He specifies being under Christ's law. We will see later what Christ's law consists of.*

Those who love the Lord cannot deny his Holy Law, for it is by keeping his commandments that one retains his love.

Here is how this situation is presented: **"Those who keep his commandments dwell in God and God dwells in them. This is how we know that he dwells in us, because of the Spirit he has given us". [1 John 3 verse 24, Common English Bible (CEB)].**

Let's also read the following:

**"If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; Even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.**

*This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you". [John 15 verses 10-12, King James Bible].*

In the first of the two texts that we have just read, there is a parallel between the fact of keeping the Lord's commandments and that of having his Spirit living within us.

In the second text we discover that if we do not keep God's commandments we will not retain his love.

Which implies by extension that his Holy Spirit cannot reside within you. Whoever says he loves God must keep his commandments.

Doing otherwise qualifies you as a liar in whom the truth does not exist. Here is what God's Word says:

**"And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him". [1 John 2 verses 3-4, King James Bible].**

Acquiring the ability to become children and servants of God in Christ does not give us the assurance that we will inherit eternal life if we do not remain faithful to our master.

This is what we can see in the text of *[Matthew 7 verses 21-23].*

God's law has kept all of its power and all of its justification, for it will be the basis of the final judgment. Here's how it was established:

**"Speak and act as those who are to be judged by the law of freedom. For judgment is without mercy to the one who has not shown mercy. Mercy triumphs over judgment". [James 2 verses 12-13, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].**

As we see, it is by God's law that we will be judged.

*Being under God's grace does not preserve us from God's law!*

God's grace allows us to live enacting deeds of love and mercy, which are the foundations enabling us to triumph over judgment.

Living under God's grace does not protect us from judgment, if we err and perform iniquitous acts, such as discriminating against or speaking ill of our brother. Here is a review:

**"Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: But if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.**

**There is one lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy: Who art thou that judgest another?"** [*James 4 verses 11-12, King James Bible*].

In these two texts the apostle James appeals to us to keep the law and not to be its judge.

Finally, I will tell you that living under God's grace does not exempt you from obeying the law, but makes you capable of doing so.

**Example:** *as a faithful member of God's people in whom his Spirit lives, it is only natural that you will not steal, will not commit incest, and it is also normal that you will not kill.*

*You will not have sex with a person of the same sex as you and just as you would abhor and reject the worship of statues or idols, you would not countenance having sex with an animal, etc.*

No longer being under the yoke of the law, but under God's grace, does not mean that we no longer observe God's law.

It merely allows us to apply it, through the action of the Holy Spirit, without it being a burden.

It is true that what is disturbing about God's law, for those who reject it because they are living under God's grace, is the Sabbath. In order to be clear on this subject, I invite you to read the next chapter.

I realise that it is because you have not yet fully grasped this fact that many of you are shying away from it.

The next part will serve to enlighten you so that the glory of God can now shine on his holy Sabbath day.

### 3.6 The unloved commandment and its sustainability in God's work

To begin, I would like to ask a question to those who reject God's law or who claim that it is abolished:

*What do you want to remove from the law? Would you like to become an adulterer, murderer or thief? Is it your intention to dishonour the Lord by using his name in vain or by prostrating yourself before an idol? On this day, did you choose to abandon the voices of the Lord in order to worship "pagan gods"?*

*Finally, is it your goal to covet your neighbour's possessions or are you making plans to dishonour your parents? Are you aware that as Christians you already do almost everything that God's law requires of us as a matter of course?*

*If the law is in our hearts, it would simply not be possible for us to steal, kill, covet, be adulterous or idolatrous, etc. If Christ lives in us we cannot do such things!*

For many Protestants the reality of the Ten Commandments *minus 1* is evident in their lives. Generally, I've found that as far as God's law is concerned, what bothers a lot of people (*and leads them to want it repealed*) is *the Sabbath*. In these lines, we will discover that the Sabbath has holy foundations, which can determine whether or not one enters paradise.

Before getting to the heart of the matter, I'm going to tell you an anecdote. This chapter was already written and my basic text showing that the Sabbath will last forever was that of [*Isaiah 66 verses 22-24*].

These lines speak of the Sabbath keepers, who will come and bow down to the Lord during the Sabbath on the new earth. This text is very meaningful, but can be confusing, because it also speaks of new moons or that everyone will also come to bow down before the Lord.

By doing so it is an image that the Lord conveys in order to present something else. In the chapter "*The nonsense of the observance by modern-day Christians of the ancient Jewish holidays*", I demonstrate how dangerous it is to try to interpret a prophetic text literally.

If I had kept this text from Isaiah, to support my thesis, my opponents could have used this portion of my writings to cut me into slices with their spiritual swords. And they would have been right, because I myself do not hesitate to confuse those who, whilst claiming the name of the Lord, are not efficient in the doctrines they proclaim.

Having lost my major asset in establishing the sustainability of the Sabbath, I prayed and the Lord gave me another text which shows that there will be a Sabbath day until such time as the Lord Jesus returns.

This text therefore became the focus of my study. Having changed my tune, the important thing for me now is to demonstrate, Bible in hand, in this part that until our Saviour and Lord Jesus Christ returns, there will be a Sabbath day for His people. To present to you the said alternative text that the Lord inspired me to choose and which I have just spoken about, let me say right away that:

*There are spiritual and above all biblical realities that even those who claim to live under God's grace cannot deny and I am talking here about the children of God who gave their lives to the Lord and who think they no longer need to keep the Sabbath. One of them is that the end of the world is coming at the appointed time.*

In [Matthew 24] our saviour and master himself, the great Emmanuel, gives us the various signs which must precede his second coming and the end of the world.

He tells us that amongst others there will be:

*Famines, earthquakes and wars and the persecution and murder of God's children will also take place. He also warns us of the emergence of false christs and false prophets etc.*

*As Christians we cannot help but wait for all of these signs, because they are the warnings that our master and saviour Jesus Christ has left us. He warned us that as soon as we see them, it will be a sign that he is at the door and that he is coming to look for us. For a decade, these signs are being realised one after the other.*



*The most impactful among them is the Coronavirus which is one of the signs intended to warn us that very, very, very soon, the Lord will return to take us with him.*

All of these signs anticipating the second coming of Jesus and the end of the world are true and as God's people, we believe in it, because it was our saviour himself who prophesied them.

In doing so, you will not be able to dispute another sign which must precede his coming and which he also gives us.

To find out more, I would like to share this text with you:

*"And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? **And what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? [...]***

**But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day"** [Matthew 24 verses 3, 20, King James Bible].

In this biblical text presenting the end of the world and its second coming, Jesus prophesies that the Sabbath will still exist when he returns, because he says: *"But pray ye that your flight be not [...] on the sabbath day"*. Since Christ is not a liar, because he is without sin, the Sabbath, which is the fourth of the ten commandments, [Exodus 20 verses 3-17 (especially verses 8-11)], could not be abolished by him.

To continue I will tell you that often, in order not to trouble their conscience when they don't keep the Sabbath, many people hide behind the fact that, for them, the New Testament does not speak of the keeping of the Sabbath.

They argue that, as it is only in the Old Testament where one is asked to observe the Sabbath, for them it is therefore obsolete!

On the strength of what I have just presented to you, we can clearly see that this is not the case. Furthermore, in order to demonstrate the nonsense of this anti-Sabbath argument advocated by these people and to strengthen my study, I present the following text:

**"Let us fear therefore, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest, any one of you should seem to have come short of it.**

For indeed we have had good tidings preached unto us, even as also they: But the word of hearing did not profit them, because it was not united by faith with them that heard.

For we who have believed do enter into that rest; *even as he hath said, As I sware in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest:*

Although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. For he hath said somewhere of the seventh day on this wise, And God rested on the seventh day from all his works;

*And in this place again, They shall not enter into my rest.*

Seeing therefore it remaineth that some should enter thereinto, and they to whom the good tidings were before preached failed to enter in because of disobedience, he again defineth a certain day, To-day, saying in David so long a time afterward (even as hath been said before), To-day if ye shall hear his voice, Harden not your hearts.

*For if Joshua had given them rest, he would not have spoken afterward of another day.* There remaineth therefore a sabbath rest for the people of God. For he that is entered into his rest hath himself also rested from his works, as God did from his.

Let us therefore give diligence to enter into that rest, that no man fall after the same example of disobedience". [*Hebrews 4 verses 1-11, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

In this century, the Lord is calling his people, those from the new covenant in Christ, not to despise his holy Sabbath day. He states that those who will not enter in the seventh day Sabbath rest give an example of disobedience analogous to what once occurred. Those who do so will fall as was the case with the former Sabbath transgressors.

It is specified that those who once rejected the Sabbath did so because of the fact that they did not let the teaching, stating that it should be observed, penetrate their faith.

They did not have the same faith in God, which is based on obedience, as those who had listened and kept the Sabbath.

They are therefore unbelievers! Furthermore, it is said that for those of us who still keep the Sabbath, it is through faith in God's word that we are requested to do so.

The goal being that we may rest from our labours, as the Lord himself rested from his on the seventh day, the crowning achievement of his creation. It is imperative to understand that the primary purpose of keeping the Sabbath is to glorify God as the creator of all things.

To discover this fact see the chapter entitled "*The purpose of the message of the first angel of the apocalyps*".

As you can see, in order to reaffirm the validity of the Sabbath, God reiterated his instruction in the New Testament asking that it be kept, therefore some time after the divine sacrifice of Jesus Christ. He also called for our hearts not to be hardened against keeping the Sabbath.

In order to continue to demonstrate the sustainability of the Sabbath, we are now going to study other texts, which present the place that it will occupy within God's chosen people in the final days of humanity before Christ's return.

Certainly you must know these texts, but you may not have made the connection between what is written and the reality of what must occur in these final days before Christ's return.

In order to present them to you, I will tell you that the worship that his people, stemming from all of nations of the world, should provide to the Lord (*in the final days before Christ's return*) during the Sabbath is very well defined in [*Isaiah 58 verses 12-14*] and [*Isaiah 56 verses 1-8*].

We will discover the content of these texts in the rest of this chapter. It is important to note that the substance of this second text of the prophet Isaiah describes God's justice and his salvation to come. These two things happened through Jesus [*Romans 5 verses 12-21*].

Part of the realisation of this fact can be found in Jesus' ministry in favour of the pagans who, through him, are called upon to be God's people. Here is how the Bible presents these facts:

*"There was the true light, even the light which lighteth every man, coming into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made through him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and they that were his own received him not.*

**But as many as received him, to them gave he the right to become children of God, even to them that believe on his name:**

**Who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.**

**And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father), full of grace and truth".** [*John 1 verses 9-14, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Let us investigate further with this most instructive text: "*For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.*

*For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.*

**Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands;**

**That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:**

**But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.** *For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us [...]*

*Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God;*

*And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone" [Ephesians 2 verses 8-14, 19-20, King James Bible].*

Finally, let's end with this text: "*So then, Israel failed to achieve what it had strived for, but the divinely chosen remnant receives it by grace, while the rest were hardened and unable to receive the truth.*

*Just as it is written: God granted them a spirit of deep slumber. He closed their eyes to the truth and prevented their ears from hearing up to this very day. [...] So, am I saying that Israel stumbled so badly that they will never get back up? Certainly not!*

**Rather, it was because of their stumble that salvation now extends to all the non-Jewish people, in order to make Israel jealous and desire the very things that God has freely given them.**

*So if all the world is being greatly enriched through their failure, and through their fall great spiritual wealth is given to the non-Jewish people, imagine how much more will Israel's awakening bring to us all!*

**[...] My beloved brothers and sisters, I want to share with you a mystery concerning Israel's future. For understanding this mystery will keep you from thinking you already know everything. A partial and temporary hardening to the gospel has come over Israel, which will last until the full number of non-Jews has come into God's family.**

*And then God will bring all of Israel to salvation! The prophecy will be fulfilled that says: "Coming from Zion will be the Savior, and he will turn Jacob away from evil. For this is my covenant promise with them when I forgive their sins". [Romans 11 verses 7-8, 11-12, 25-27, King James Bible].*

In all of these texts we see that the final objective of God's promise to the pagans, who are to unite with Israel and Jacob, is to offer salvation to everyone through Jesus. Nonetheless, the two texts of the prophet Isaiah describe a situation that was really put in place as a result of the sacrificial death of Christ.

This work was done through Jesus, but was fully accomplished with the apostle Paul. Let's see what this text shows us on the subject:

*"But Paul and Barnabas spoke very boldly. They said, "We had to tell God's message to you Jews first, but you refuse to listen. You have made it clear that you are not worthy of having eternal life.*

**So we will now go to those who are not Jews. This is what the Lord told us to do: 'I have made you a light for the other nations, to show people all over the world the way to be saved.'** [Acts 13 verses 46-47, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].

This work of bringing the Gospel to the heathens that the apostle Paul and his companions conducted had been prophesied by Isaiah centuries before that.

Here is the original appeal that the Lord made through him: *"He says, 'It is too trivial a thing that You should be My Servant To raise up the tribes of Jacob and to restore the survivors of Israel; I will also make You a light to the nations That My salvation may reach to the end of the earth.'" [Isaiah 49 verse 6, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

This appeal is also presented in this text: *"I am the Lord, I have called You (the Messiah) in righteousness [for a righteous purpose], I will also take You by the hand and keep watch over You, And I will appoint You as a covenant to the people [Israel], As a light to the nations (Gentiles), To open the eyes of the blind, To bring out prisoners from the dungeon And those who sit in darkness from the prison". [Isaiah 42 verses 6-7, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

In order to fully understand what this light is that must be brought to the nations, we need to read this: *"And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel:*

*And the Holy Ghost was upon him. [...] And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word:*

**For mine eyes have seen thy salvation, Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people; A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel". [Luke 2 verses 25, 27-32, King James Bible].**

This light to be brought to the nations is none other than Jesus Christ himself, who is the divine light, God's Word made flesh.

This light is therefore the Gospel. Let's return to Isaiah's new texts, which present the same ideas as the first two that we have already seen, namely the salvation offered to the pagans. Jesus himself was the first to carry this mandate, which was to bring the message of salvation to all of creation. Thereafter Paul, opened the door to the heathens who, through Christ, could now become God's children.

Then, this message was entrusted to all of God's servants over countless centuries [*Matthew 28 verses 18-20*].

It is by opening the door of God's grace that Jesus began the work of salvation. It will remain open until all of God's elect, who were previously pagans, have entered. All these texts that we have just seen portray the union of the Jewish people with other nations.

This is the same situation that we find in the first two texts of the prophet Isaiah, which I quoted to you above and where the Sabbath was also mentioned. Here is the first:

*"Some of you will rebuild the ancient ruins; you will restore the foundations laid long ago;*

*You will be called the repairer of broken walls, the restorer of streets where people live. Some of you will rebuild the ancient ruins;*

**You will restore the foundations laid long ago; you will be called the repairer of broken walls, the restorer of streets where people live. "If you keep from desecrating the Sabbath, from doing whatever you want on my holy day;**

**If you call the Sabbath a delight, and the holy day of the Lord honorable; If you honor it, not going your own ways, seeking your own pleasure, or talking business;**

**Then you will delight in the Lord, and I will make you ride over the heights of the land, and let you enjoy the heritage of your father Jacob." For the mouth of the Lord has spoken". [*Isaiah 58 verses 12-14, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].**

Here is the second text: *"This is what the Lord says. Protect justice, and carry out righteousness, because my salvation is coming very soon. My righteousness is ready to be revealed.*

**How blessed is everyone who does this, who grabs hold of it, who keeps the Sabbath and does not profane it, who holds back his hand from doing any evil.**

*Therefore, the foreigner who joins himself to the Lord should not say, "The Lord will certainly exclude me from his people."*

*The eunuch should not say, "I am just a dried-up tree."*

*Because this is what the Lord says:*

**“If the eunuchs keep my Sabbaths, choose things that delight me, and take hold of my covenant, then I will set up in my house and on my walls a monument and a name for them that is better than that of sons and daughters. I will give them an everlasting name which will not be cut off.”**

Then the foreigners who join themselves to the Lord, to minister to him and to love the name of the Lord and to become his servants, every one of them who keeps the Sabbath and does not profane it, those who take hold of my covenant — I will bring them to my holy mountain, and I will make them glad in my house of prayer. *Their whole burnt offerings and their sacrifices will be acceptable on my altar.*

For my house will be called a house of prayer for all the peoples of the world. This is the declaration of God the Lord, who gathers Israel’s dispersed people: **“I will gather still more people to my house besides the ones already gathered.”** [*Isaiah 56 verses 1-8, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

These two texts of the prophet Isaiah are still relevant today, because they represent the time when the pagans would inherit the heritage of the patriarchs from God’s people.

Note that in these texts, those who are called to worship the Lord in his house are Sabbath keepers. These two texts are therefore decisive in demonstrating the sustainability of the Sabbath, because they present those who observe it as having to receive the inheritance that God promised to Jacob and to Israel.

In these texts, we see the intrinsic link that exists between the Sabbath and the entry of the pagans (*the other peoples who lived without Jesus Christ*) in the inheritance, which God had promised to the patriarch (*here represented by Jacob*).

Only those who will be faithful to God and who will especially observe the Sabbath in order not to defile it will be able to inherit the promises that God had made to the patriarchs.

These texts also describe the place that the Sabbath should have within God’s reconstituted people, made up of converted Jews and pagans. So, until all men are saved through Jesus Christ, the Sabbath will remain.



It is important to note that these two texts of the prophet Isaiah portray the Sabbath as the sign which will rally foreigners from all nations to God's people in his new covenant.

This implies that those who defile the Sabbath will not inherit the promises of God presented by Isaiah. It is important to understand that salvation comes from the Jews and is based on the promises that God had made to the patriarchs and that they were fulfilled through Jesus who took flesh in Mary, who was Jewish.

Therefore what we have just seen presents the salvation manifested through Christ! If you do not keep the Sabbath, you will not be able to adhere to the salvation that God has in store for us through him and which was promised to the Patriarch.

Here is how this promise of salvation to the patriarch is described: *"Ye worship ye know not what: We know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews"*. [John 4 verse 22, King James Bible].

Let's add this to our study: **"Abraham serves as an example.**

**He believed God, and that faith was regarded as the basis of Abraham's approval by God. You must understand that people who have faith are Abraham's descendants.**

Scripture saw ahead of time that God would give his approval to non-Jewish people who have faith. So Scripture announced the Good News to Abraham ahead of time when it said, "Through you all the people of the world will be blessed."

So people who believe are blessed together with Abraham, the man of faith. [...] Christ paid the price so that the blessing promised to Abraham would come to all the people of the world through Jesus Christ and we would receive the promised Spirit through faith. [...]

*You are all God's children by believing in Christ Jesus. Clearly, all of you who were baptized in Christ's name have clothed yourselves with Christ. There are neither Jews nor Greeks, slaves nor free people, males nor females. You are all the same in Christ Jesus.*

**If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's descendants and heirs, as God promised"**. [Galatians 3 verses 6-9, 14, 26-29, GOD'S WORD Translation Bible (GW)].

We are not saved because we keep the Sabbath, but by God's grace. But in saving us the Lord prepared good deeds in advance so that we can practise them [*Ephesians 2 verses 1-10*].

We cannot be justified by keeping the Sabbath, because Jesus Christ is the only one who can justify us. But we do good works out of love for the Lord. Among them is the Sabbath, whose purpose is to give the Lord all the glory due to him as the creator.

To continue, I would say that often we ardently hope for something, but do everything in order to be disqualified from getting it. For me this fact is obvious when considering certain Christians who await the glorious return of Jesus Christ.

They aspire to be among those elected officials, who have remained faithful, but reject God's law, namely his commandments, which however are one of the selection criteria that should make them eligible.

In order to understand the close relationship that exists between God's chosen people and their law, one must never lose sight of who will be amongst those whom God will seek out and what will be their distinguishing feature. Here is how they are presented:

*"And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ".* [*Revelation 12 verses 17, King James Bible*].

One of the hallmarks of the members of the remnant Church is that they keep God's commandments and have the testimony of Jesus.

Therefore you who reject the Sabbath, therefore disqualify yourself from being part of the Lord's chosen people, because he who sins against a single commandment is guilty of sinning against them all [*James 2 verse 10*].

It is therefore imperative that you keep all of God's commandments and all of his Word so that you can enter into glory with Jesus Christ when he returns. For those who have the Spirit of God within them God's other commandments do not require effort in order to be kept, whilst the Sabbath is a visible sign.

Therefore we must choose to honour God in the eyes of men during the Sabbath in order to be accepted by him.

Finally, I will tell you that I have the firm conviction that just as the Sabbath existed before sin, it remains and will continue to exist when the new earth is established (*paradise*).

So that sin was only an interlude. This situation is also that which is presented in the return to normal that the animals will undergo [*Genesis 1 verses 25-30*], [*Isaiah 11 verses 6-10*].

We see that the animals will return to their basic diet that existed before sin. *Thus, there will be no more carnivores.*

For me, just as the original state of the animals will be restored, so will the Sabbath. It is important to know that the Sabbath does not belong to the Jews or the Seventh-day Adventists, but it belongs to the Lord. It was the crowning achievement of his creative work.

Here is what God's Word says about it: "*Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; And he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made.*

**And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: Because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made".** [*Genesis 2 verses 1-3, King James Bible*].

The Sabbath was instituted by God before sin entered the world and was like everything else in creation a very good thing upon which the blessing of God was placed.

The Sabbath having been blessed by God Himself from the moment of its creation is of a lasting nature. Once given the blessing that God pronounces is eternal [*1 Chronicles 17 verse 27*].

Thus, the Sabbath having been blessed by God Himself, has eternal foundations. By choosing to keep the Sabbath as the day which the Lord has made holy and set apart as a memorial to creation, He will bless you in return [*Exodus 20 verses 8-11*].

*To you who do not observe the Sabbath, know that the devil is manipulating you, because by encouraging you to despise the worship that is due to the Lord as creator, he knows that the end result of the rejection of the Sabbath will be to receive the mark of the beast like an infidel.*

#### 4 The role of the law that God magnified through his son Jesus Christ

It is important to understand the role of the law that was magnified through Jesus Christ in the lives of those saved by God's grace. As they are no longer under the law, but under God's grace and because of this the law's commandments have passed from the tablets of stone to be written in their hearts, they have therefore undergone a most extraordinary transformation.

To present to you the situation which differentiates those who are under the law and who have not made a covenant with Jesus Christ or those who having bound themselves to him have become unfaithful, from those who are under God's grace and are no longer under the law and in whom it is engraved, I will give you an example which, I believe is most telling.

To do this, we will take into account the transformation of a caterpillar into a butterfly:

*Caterpillars are often repulsive things having odd shapes. Usually much of their food consists of leaves. Their worst enemies are the birds, which due to their ability to fly have a much faster reaction time than the unfortunate caterpillars, that have to crawl around on their little chubby legs.*

*Then the big day of the metamorphosis arrives, where they will form a cocoon in which they will undergo the most extraordinary transformations.*

*The first thing to mention is that those dieting in order to lose a few pounds would love to achieve such results, transforming themselves from the fat caterpillar that has entered the cocoon only to emerge as a slender butterfly. But the most striking transformation, of which Icarus dreamed, is the wings that now embellish our former caterpillar turned butterfly. The magnificence of some butterflies is a real sight for sore eyes!*

*Thus from the repulsive caterpillar that first enters the cocoon an animal of unparalleled beauty emerges. Thanks to these wings, the butterfly is less likely to become a meal for the birds. The butterfly's nutrition has also changed, as it no longer consumes leaves, but generally feeds on flower nectar. When you consider the differences between a caterpillar and a butterfly, especially the wings, it is hard to believe that it is the same insect. Yet we know it is! Even though it was the same entity at the start it evolved into something else.*

For me the metamorphosis from caterpillar to butterfly is the process that can represent the change that takes place in one who accepts Christ as his personal Saviour. Before his conversion he was a vile earthly being tainted with sin [Romans 7 verses 14-25].

Once the Christian is linked to Jesus, he becomes a heavenly being, a child of God [Romans 8 verses 14-17].

Now his condition is no longer the same as he is no longer dragging himself through the mud. He is no longer of the earth, but he is a spiritual being. By doing so what man the animal, who lives far from God, cannot glimpse or understand, our newborn in Christ, on the other hand, having become a spiritual man lives by God's Spirit who enables him to masters all things [1 Corinthians 2 verses 10-16].

The food that a spiritual person eats also changes. Like Jesus the Christian does not live by bread alone, but also by every word that comes out of the mouth of the Lord [John 4 verse 34], [Matthew 4 verse 4].

To continue, I ask you a question:

*Do you think it is appropriate for those who have caterpillar greenhouses to only plant shrubs that do not bloom? Of course not, because caterpillars, being destined to become butterflies, will eventually starve if there are no flowers on which to feed.*

*This implies that the type of food must be adapted depending upon whether one is an earthly being, namely the caterpillar, or a celestial being, which in our example is the butterfly.*

*However, since it is the plants that ultimately bear the flowers, it will therefore be necessary for those who have butterfly greenhouses to be able to grow plants that have the capacity to flower. This means that during the caterpillar phase the leaves will form the meal.*

*Then once the transformation into a butterfly has been achieved the flowers will be foraged. The same plant can therefore feed both insects. This situation is also transferrable to the plan of salvation.*

With the coming of Jesus Christ a radical transformation takes place within God's people. From the terrestrial caterpillars that they were, they become Edenic butterflies.

In view of this transformation, the all-knowing Lord planned to give his people food that could nourish them both before and after their transformation, which takes place through his son Jesus Christ.

We have seen that the Holy Scriptures are the food of God's people. Thus from fallen earthly beings who were to feed on the law through Jesus, God's people become spiritual beings who no longer have this nutritional basis.

Their food now consists of nectar drawn from the law, but which has been modified to match those saved by God's grace and who have God's law living in them. Here is how Jesus presents the transformation of the law: **"Don't think that I have come to destroy the Law of Moses or the teaching of the prophets.**

**I have come not to destroy their teachings but to give full meaning to them. I assure you that nothing will disappear from the law until heaven and earth are gone.**

**The law will not lose even the smallest letter or the smallest part of a letter until it has all been done.**

*"A person should obey every command in the law, even one that does not seem important. Whoever refuses to obey any command and teaches others not to obey it will be the least important in God's kingdom. But whoever obeys the law and teaches others to obey it will be great in God's kingdom.*

**I tell you that you must do better than the teachers of the law and the Pharisees. If you are not more pleasing to God than they are, you will never enter God's kingdom".** [*Matthew 5 verses 17-20, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Jesus states here that he did not come to abolish the law, but to give it its full meaning and other versions say to fulfil it.

We have already studied the fact that, through God's Spirit, he had the commandments of the law passed from the tablets of stone to the hearts of his children.

He also says that until the end of the world (*as long as Heaven and Earth exist*), not even the smallest letter or the smallest detail (*a single part of a letter*) will disappear from the law.

He further specifies that he did not abolish either the law or the teaching of the prophets. The French version of the *Bible by Louis Second* specifies that it is the prophets who have not been abolished.

This implies that as long as our planetary system exists, the law and the prophets will endure. Therefore he who removes any part of the commandments and teaches anyone to do so, will be devalued in the kingdom of God.

It should be noted that this declaration attests that Jesus did not abolish the Sabbath, which is the fourth of the ten commandments as we will see later! It is interesting that it is the law of Moses that this version of the Bible emphasises and states that it will endure until the end of this system of things governing our lives.

It should be noted that the Ten Commandments, as well as the law which bears his name, were both given to Moses by the Lord. For many, the law presented in this text is only the Ten Commandments.

Which for me is a mistake, because in this biblical text, after having established these foundations, Jesus then gives concrete examples of this fulfilment of the law, to which he came to give all of its meaning and which are drawn either from the ten commandments, or from the law that bears the name of Moses, or from the two laws.

As we read on in this chapter of Matthew's Gospel, we find specific examples of the evolution of these laws.

In order to discover this we will now study, the following verses [*Matthew 5 verses 21-22, 27-28, 31-42*].

In this text we see how the love and respect that we should have for others gives new light to the intrinsic unity that links the *Ten Commandments* to the *moral law that the Lord gave to Moses*.

After presenting the sustainability of the law the first example that Jesus takes is a *commandment*, which is based on the two laws.

This is what we find out here: **"You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not murder; and whoever murders will be liable to judgment.' But I say to you *that everyone who is angry with his brother will be liable to judgment;***

*Whoever insults his brother will be liable to the council; and whoever says, 'You fool!' will be liable to the hell of fire". [Matthew 5 verses 21-22, English Standard Version Bible (ESV)].*

Here the sixth of the ten commandments is presented, which forbids killing. This is what this law says: **"Thou shalt not kill"**. [*Exodus 20 verse 13, King James Bible*].

In addition to this law Jesus also introduces the law of Moses, which states that it is the judges who are empowered to judge and punish crimes and misdemeanors.

Let's read this to get acquainted with it:

*"If one person in your town brings a complaint against another to be judged at the city gate, and it's just too difficult for you to decide what a fair resolution would be — if you can't determine whether a killing was premeditated, or if you can't decide who in a dispute makes the best argument, or if you can't tell whether someone was injured accidentally or intentionally — then adjourn your proceedings and go to the place the Eternal your God will choose.*

**Bring your case to the Levitical priests and to the judge who is serving at the time, and they will give you a verdict.**

**You must carry out their verdict exactly as they stated it because it was delivered in the place the Eternal chose, and it has His authority behind it. Follow each word of the law as they interpret it for you;**

**Do everything they've told you to do, as they've explained it, without deviating from it at all.**



**If anyone is so arrogant that he won't listen to the priest who serves right there in the presence of the Eternal your God or to the judge of the tribunal, that person must be executed to expel this kind of wickedness from Israel. Everyone will hear about it, and no one will dare to be so arrogant, for they will be afraid".** [*Deuteronomy 17 verses 8-13, The Voice Bible (VOICE)*].

In this first case Jesus matched two laws, namely the Ten Commandments and that of Moses in order to establish a single commandment of his law of love. But he also used either one or the other of these laws to establish his new law.

Thus, he also takes the case of adultery, which he presents in a new light. This is what we discover in this other part of Matthew's text:

**"You have heard that it was said, You shall not commit adultery. But I say to you that everyone who so much as looks at a woman with evil desire for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart".** [*Matthieu 5 versets 27-28, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

It is the seventh of the Ten Commandments which prohibits adultery. Here is how this fact was originally notified: **"You shall not commit adultery".** [*Exodus 20 verse 14, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

Whereas previously adultery was recorded after the act was consummated, now Jesus establishes that it is as soon as we take pleasure in a sexual thought concerning a woman who is not our wife that the sin is consummated. Jesus will also speak about the basis for dealing with divorce. Let us read this to find out:

**"Remember the Scripture that says, 'Whoever divorces his wife, let him do it legally, giving her divorce papers and her legal rights'? Too many of you are using that as a cover for selfishness and whim, pretending to be righteous just because you are 'legal.' Please, no more pretending.**

**If you divorce your wife, you're responsible for making her an adulteress (unless she has already made herself that by sexual promiscuity).**

*And if you marry such a divorced adulteress, you're automatically an adulterer yourself. You can't use legal cover to mask a moral failure". [Matthew 5 verses 31-32, The Message Bible (MSG)].*

Otherwise, here it is the requirements established in the law of Moses that he will use. Here is what had been established in the matter: **"Suppose a man marries a woman and later decides that he doesn't want her, because he finds something about her that he doesn't like.**

**So he writes out divorce papers, gives them to her, and sends her away from his home". [Deuteronomy 24 verse 1, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)].**

Just because he no longer found his wife to his liking, the law allowed a man to divorce her by giving her a letter of divorce.

Jesus set aside this law which was discriminatory towards women and gave it a new legal framework by presenting divorce as something which could only be done in the case of adultery.

And by doing so if she is not adulterous and he repudiates her, he puts her as well as her future husband at risk of becoming adulterous. In this text that follows Jesus completes what we have just seen here:

**"And there came unto him Pharisees, trying him, and saying, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?**

**And he answered and said, Have ye not read, that he who made them from the beginning made them male and female, and said, For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and the two shall become one flesh?**

**So that they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.**

**They say unto him, Why then did Moses command to give a bill of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses for your hardness of heart suffered you to put away your wives: But from the beginning it hath not been so.**

*And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: And he that marrieth her when she is put away committeth adultery". [Matthew 19 verses 3-9, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Here, Jesus presents the possibility of divorce which had been established by Moses as having been put in place because of a lack of love (*hardness of heart*), and reaffirms that divorce can only be concluded because of adultery.

He further specifies that any remarriage of a person who has divorced in such a context (*therefore out of complacency*) is an act rendering him adulterous. It should be noted that God's Word also sets out reasons allowing for re-marriage.

The text of [*Matthew 19 verse 29*] presents those who have lost their spouse in the name of Lord as being entitled to a new spouse.

If your bride or groom leaves you because you have chosen to serve the Lord you are free to re-marry.

In [*1 Corinthians 7 verses 12-16*] we find out that Christians who are married to non-believers and whose spouse decides to divorce are free and therefore can re-marry without being adulterous.

On the other hand the text of [*1 Corinthians 6 verse 16*] presents sexuality as being the link that makes two bodies become one.

Thus, a marriage where there has not been any consummation of it, namely where sex has not united the two spouses, either by choice or a health condition preventing sexual intercourse, which was knowingly concealed prior to the marriage, can be dissolved and the spouses can re-marry.

The text of [*1 Corinthians 7 verses 10-11*], also presents us with another situation which allows for divorce.

Here we discover that the Lord allows a couple to be able to separate if things are not working out any more.

Nevertheless, both spouses still remain married and thus during this time of separation, if one of the two has sexual relations with a third person, he or she commits adultery. In doing so, the divine bond, which united them by making them one flesh is broken.

Thus, as in any case of adultery, the divorce can be pronounced.

Otherwise did you notice that when dealing with divorce Jesus made a big change in the law of Moses?

In its first version, it was mainly focused on the goodwill of the husband, who could divorce and re-marry at will.

In God's new law, which has been magnified through Christ, the Lord also focusses on the responsibility of the married man who would like to divorce without his wife being adulterous.

If he chooses to divorce in such a context and re-marries he commits adultery, whereas in the first framing of the law he could have re-married in this context. It is important to understand that before Christ began his ministry a woman's lot was not enviable! Machismo was rife and men were allowed to discriminate against women.

We have a concrete example of this scenario in *[John 8 verses 3-11]* which tells the story of the woman who was caught in the act of adultery. In order to confuse Jesus, the Scribes and Pharisees brought this woman before him, so that he could judge her.

In their pleadings, they specified that Moses in his law asked for such a woman to be stoned. In this case they were not lying for this is what the law said: *"If any man take a wife, and go in unto her, and hate her, and lay shameful things to her charge, and bring up an evil name upon her, and say, I took this woman, and when I came nigh to her, I found not in her the tokens of virginity [...]*

**But if this thing be true, that the tokens of virginity were not found in the damsel; Then they shall bring out the damsel to the door of her father's house, and the men of her city shall stone her to death with stones, because she hath wrought folly in Israel, to play the harlot in her father's house:**

**So shalt thou put away the evil from the midst of thee. If a man be found lying with a woman married to a husband, then they shall both of them die, the man that lay with the woman, and the woman: So shalt thou put away the evil from Israel".** *[Deuteronomy 22 verses 13-14, 20-22, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

This law stipulated that a virgin or a married woman who slept with a man out of wedlock should be stoned to death. Therefore what the Scribes and Pharisees were demanding had a legislative basis.

However, when you read the account of this woman who is presented before Jesus to be stoned, as the law stipulates, do you not find anything strange? Note that the accusation here does not allege that this woman would have been masturbating, but that she committed adultery!

If so where is her lover? The law demanded that both partners be stoned. If this woman had been caught in the act, where had her partner gone? He too should have been presented so that the sentence could be applied to him.

To change the situation of women in the face of male-dominated attitudes, the Lord has made those who make an alliance with him the equals of men.

Let's read this text in order to immerse ourselves in this fact: *"There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus". [Galatians 3 verse 28, King James Bible].*

Christ's law brought about a sweeping reform, designed to strike a balance by making all human beings equal, regardless of their gender or race. It is a law of love and justice intended to establish and maintain fairness in everything.

After this discussion of marital matters, let us return to our study. We will now be interested in what Jesus teaches us about the oaths we take in the name of the Lord.

This is what this portion of our core text reveals: **"[Again] You have heard that it was said to our people long ago [our ancestors; the ancients], 'Don't break your promises [vows; oaths], but keep [fulfill] the promises [vows; oaths] you make to the Lord [Lev. 19:12; Num. 30:2; Deut. 23:21].'**

*But I tell you, do not swear an oath at all. Don't swear an oath using the name of heaven [...neither by heaven], because heaven is God's throne. Don't swear an oath using the name of the earth [...nor by earth], because the earth belongs to God [is his footstool; Is. 66:1].*

*Don't swear an oath using the name of Jerusalem [...] Nor by Jerusalem], because it is the city of the great King [Ps. 48:2].*

*Don't even swear by your own head, because you cannot make one hair on your head become white or black.*

*Say only yes if you mean yes, and no if you mean no [Let your word "yes" be "yes"; Your "no" be "no"]. If you say more than yes or no, it [Anything more than this] is from the Evil One". [Matthew 5 verses 33-37, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

What Jesus exposes in this text is based on the law of Moses and the Ten Commandments. Here is what is stipulated about the matter in the law of Moses: **"You shall not swear [an oath] falsely by My name, so as to profane the name of your God; I am the Lord"**. [*Leviticus 19 verse 12, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Also, here is what the Third of the Ten Commandments advocates: **"Do not use the name of the Lord your God in a false way. For the Lord will punish the one who uses His name in a false way"**. [*Exodus 20 verse 7, New Life Version Bible (NLV)*].

These two laws made it possible for people to commit by taking an oath in the name of the Lord, but they had to keep their word. Jesus presented the new basis that this law takes through him and which is:

*May your yes be "YES" and your no be "NO". Here he appeals to each of us to be responsible for our word. Knowing that we will be judged for whatever comes out of our mouth [Matthew 12 verses 36-37].*

In the rest of the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus will present the Law of Talion, emphasising what had been enacted within this framework and what happens to it within his law of love.

Let us discover this fact by reading this other extract: **"You have heard that it was said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. But I say to you, Do not resist the evil man [who injures you];**

*But if anyone strikes you on the right jaw or cheek, turn to him the other one too. And if anyone wants to sue you and take your undershirt (tunic), let him have your coat also.*

*And if anyone forces you to go one mile, go with him two [miles]"*. [*Matthew 5 verses 38-41, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

The first part of this text presents a requirement that was part of the law of Moses.

This is how it was promulgated in the Old Testament: *"If a man injures his neighbor (fellow citizen), whatever he has done shall be done to him: Fracture for fracture, eye for eye, tooth for tooth;*

**Just as he has injured a man, so shall the same be done to him".** [*Leviticus 24 verses 19-20, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

In place of this law based on the right to revenge, the Lord asks us not to demand an eye for an eye and to turn the other cheek.

Nevertheless God's Word does not leave us helpless and offers us another perspective that we find in this text: "*Bless those who persecute you [who cause you harm or hardship]; bless and do not curse [them]*".

**[...] Never repay anyone evil for evil.** *Take thought for what is right and gracious and proper in the sight of everyone.*

*If possible, as far as it depends on you, live at peace with everyone.* **Beloved, never avenge yourselves, but leave the way open for God's wrath [and His judicial righteousness]; for it is written [in Scripture], "Vengeance is Mine, I will repay,"** says the Lord.

*But if your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him a drink; for by doing this you will heap burning coals on his head."*

**Do not be overcome and conquered by evil, but overcome evil with good".** [*Romans 12 verses 14, 17-21, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Let's finish with this text: **"And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea".** [*Mark 9 verse 42, BRG Bible (BRG)*].

The Lord promises us that he will defend us himself. In return we must show love to those who would do us harm. The goal is for our persecutors to repent and be saved. For they are not our enemies, but our real adversary is the devil and his seed [*Ephesians 6 verse 12*].

We will now consider a final point concerning the sermon Jesus gave on the Mount and which talks about the financial help that we should give to others. Here is what he says about it:

**"Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away".** [*Matthew 5 verse 42, King James Bible*].

Here we are talking about charity! Here is what we read about it in the Old Testament:

**"If there is a poor man among you, one of your fellow Israelites, in any of your cities in the land that the Lord your God is giving you, you shall not be heartless, nor close-fisted with your poor brother; But you shall freely open your hand to him, and shall generously lend to him whatever he needs.**

*Beware that there is no wicked thought in your heart, saying, 'The seventh year, the year of release (remission, pardon), is approaching,' and your eye is hostile (unsympathetic) toward your poor brother, and you give him nothing [since he would not have to repay you];*

*For he may cry out to the Lord against you, and it will become a sin for you. You shall freely and generously give to him, and your heart shall not be resentful when you give to him, because for this [generous] thing the Lord your God will bless you in all your work and in all your undertakings.*

**For the poor will never cease to be in the land;**

**Therefore I command you, saying, 'You shall freely open your hand to your brother, to your needy, and to your poor in your land.'** [*Deuteronomy 15 verses 7-11, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Therefore what Jesus declares comes from the law of Moses. Once this law is magnified by him, he gives this: **"Whoever has worldly wealth and sees his brother in need but closes his heart against him —how can God's love remain in him?**

**Dear children, let us love not only with word or with our tongue, but also in action and truth".** [*1 John 3 verses 17-18, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

This text describes the generosity that we show or do not show as coming from the state of our heart. It is a vector that determines whether the love of God abides in us or not.

We must not only speak, but also act as this is how our faith is tangible (*manifested*) [*James 2 verses 14-17*].

In order to present God's Word, we see how Jesus uses the Law of Moses and the Ten Commandments. This is how he magnified the law by making just one law of the two.



Thus God's law magnified by Jesus is now formed of the Ten Commandments, as well as the articles of the law that God gave to Moses where all traces of the ceremonial law were eradicated.

To continue I would like to tell you that the Ten Commandments and the Law of Moses, once magnified by Christ, merged to provide a new foundation for the guidance of God's people.

Throughout the New Testament we find references to these two laws which are intended to teach God's people to walk in love.

So in accordance with what Jesus Christ had established, his apostle James continued doing things in the same way.

This is what we see in this text: **"You do well when you really fulfill the royal law found in scripture, Love your neighbor as yourself. But when you show favoritism, you are committing a sin, and by that same law you are exposed as a lawbreaker.**

*Anyone who tries to keep all of the Law but fails at one point is guilty of failing to keep all of it. The one who said, Don't commit adultery, also said, Don't commit murder.*

*So if you don't commit adultery but do commit murder, you are a lawbreaker". [James 2 verses 8-11, Common English Bible (CEB)].*

Here we are not dealing with a text intended to present the individual paragraphs of God's law, contrary to the text of [Exodus 20 verses 3-17], his ten commandments, or like the text of [Leviticus 18], which all present the requirements of the law of Moses.

The thrust of this text is intended to exhort God's people not to be discriminatory. This text is part of an epistle that the apostle James leaves us to show how God's people should deal with certain issues.

This text is therefore part of the Gospel! Yet its structure is a mixture of the Ten Commandments and the Law of Moses. We are now going to research the criteria that he uses to establish his plea.

To do this we'll start with this section: *"You do well when you really fulfill the royal law found in scripture, Love your neighbor as yourself". This first text is taken from the law of Moses" [Leviticus 19 verse 18, King James Bible].*

Now consider another part of what this servant of God presents:

**"But when you show favoritism, you are committing a sin, and by that same law you are exposed as a lawbreaker".**

Here we find, that James talks about the prohibition of favouritism which is part of the law of Moses [*Leviticus 19 verse 15*].

Let us continue taking into account these other words spoken by the apostle James: *"The one who said, Don't commit adultery, also said, Don't commit murder"*.

We see here that he introduces the prohibition of adultery as well as that of murder, which are part of the Ten Commandments [*Exodus 20 verses 13-14*].

It is vital that you can have a clear view of God's law, magnified by Jesus Christ, because by reading [*James 2 verses 12-13*] we realise that it is through the union of these two of God's laws that we will be judged.

If this is the standard by which we will be judged, then these two laws remain active until the great day that Christ returns to judge everyone's deeds (*angels and humans*).

The reality of God's law magnified by Jesus Christ is found throughout the New Testament.

Certain biblical texts with which we are very familiar are often taken from the Law of Moses or the Ten Commandments. Let's consider a specific example with this:

*"But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God"*. [*Matthew 4 verse 4, BRG Bible (BRG)*].

In my opinion this text contains some of Jesus' best known words.

Yet when he introduces them, it is not the first time that these words have been spoken in the bible. Here is their origin:

*"[...] That he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live"*. [*Deuteronomy 8 verses 3, BRG Bible (BRG)*].

To continue, I would like to point out to you that many of those who say that they no longer have to keep God's law, because they are no longer under its yoke as they are under God's grace, are the same people who say they have the Gospel as their guide.

Here we have a most amazing paradox since the gospel is based on God's two laws, namely the law of Moses and the Ten Commandments. Many of you are certainly surprised, but I am going to show you, Bible in hand, what I am saying.

To do this, consider this first text: *"Listen to Me, O My people. Hear Me, O My nation. The Law will go out from Me and My Law will be a light to the people. [Isaiah 51 verse 4, New Life Version Bible (NLV)].*

Here, the law is presented as having to come from the Lord and he will establish it as being the light of the people(s) (*therefore of the nations*). To better understand the reality of God's law as the light of the peoples (*nations*) we must reread this text in this other version:

*"Eternal One: Listen closely, you who are Mine; lend an ear, My nation; for My instruction will go straight out into all the world And My justice will illuminate all people wherever they are". [Isaiah 51 verse 4, The Voice Bible (VOICE)].*

Here is how it is to fulfil this prophecy: *"The Spirit led Simeon to the Temple. So he was there when Mary and Joseph brought the baby Jesus to do what the Jewish law said they must do.*

*Simeon took the baby in his arms and thanked God: "Now, Lord, you can let me, your servant, die in peace as you said. I have seen with my own eyes how you will save your people.*

*Now all people can see your plan. He is a light to show your way to the other nations. And he will bring honor to your people Israel." [Luke 2 verses 27-32, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].*

Jesus is that divine light which came to enlighten all peoples (*all the nations*). Therefore, he is God's law, which in reality is his teachings (*his Word*) and therefore his Gospel [*John 1 verse 9-14!*]

What I have just demonstrated is really important. Thus, by rejecting God's Holy Law, it is Jesus Christ Himself who is despised.

*Furthermore, before we continue, I would like to tell you that God's Word makes the law! As soon as the Lord decrees something, his Word becomes a rule not to be broken.*

*This foundation has always existed, but it is now engraved in the hearts of God's people. To understand how God's Word can be a law to manage his people's footsteps, we must come back to original sin [Genesis 3 verses 1-7].*

*By eating the forbidden fruit, Adam and Eve sinned and paid for their disobedience with their death. We have already seen that death is the result of sin which itself is the transgression of God's law. This implies that when the Lord has declared:*

*You will not eat and you will not touch the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden! His word at that time became law. This is why when our first parents broke the Lord's command, they broke that law and sinned.*

The laws of God were magnified (*reworked*) by Jesus and became the basis of the Gospel, which is Christ himself and is the divine nectar which God's children must drink [John 4 verse 14], [John 6 verse 35].

All of what we have seen is important, because it specifies the nature of this law, which is written by the Holy Spirit in the hearts and minds of God's faithful people:

*God's law which was magnified by Jesus and which is engraved in the hearts of his people is nothing other than all of God's Word which is the Gospel.*

The Gospel of grace being, among other things, the mixture of the ten commandments and the law of Moses, which were magnified by Jesus Christ, if you do not violate either of these two laws, but act badly towards your brothers as did the miserly rich man who let poor Lazarus perish of hunger [Luke 16 verses 19-31], you are guilty before God of having broken all of the law.

God's law magnified by Jesus Christ is no longer like the old laws that were intended to govern people in whom the Spirit of God did not live or in whom it dwelt on an ad hoc basis.

Now in addition to the Ten Commandments and the law of Moses, which has been stripped of the ceremonial clauses, it is all of God's Word that is written in the hearts of these children.

This is what makes us conscious of knowing what to do or say at all times, for it is the Holy Spirit who inspires us [*Luke 12 verses 11-12*].

Whoever wants to stand firmly in the Lord, must contemplate Jesus day after day by studying his word, in order to be transformed into his image by the Spirit of God from grace to grace.

We need to fill our hearts with God's Word so that at the appropriate time we can use it for the glory of the Lord.

*We can only give what we have.*

God's Word must become one of our greatest treasures and it must be stored in our hearts (*minds*) as one would put jewels in a safe [*Matthew 12 verses 34-35*].

*Being part of God's people and not diligently studying his word has the most tragic repercussions!*

*Like the foolish virgins in [Matthew 25 verses 1-13] or those described in [1 Thessalonians 5 verses 1-11] who are asleep, we risk ignoring the moment when the Lord will return to seek us out and the result will be that we will lose our crown of eternal life.*

Following what we have just read, are you aware of the fact that those who reject God's law are rejecting Jesus Christ himself?

For those who do so, I call upon you to repent, for the fate of those who despise and reject the Son of God is not enviable [*Hebrews 10 verses 26-31*].

This text does not need to be substantiated, as it is clear enough, so those of you who reject God's law must realise what you are doing.

I also invite you to read the second volume of this book which, among other things, presents the final fate that will be reserved for those who reject God's law, namely to burn in hellfire.

#### **4.1 Practical application of the royal law which was fulfilled by Jesus Christ**

To begin this part I would like to express my feeling that those who say they no longer keep either the law of Moses or the Ten Commandments do not have a very distinct vision of what they have become since Jesus magnified and transformed them into his law of love.

I am therefore going to try to bring you, dear readers, the information you need to master this subject!

So that you have a clear vision of how these two laws were transformed by Jesus, we will study their direct impact on our lives and the everyday practical applications that we can implement when abiding by them.

To do this I must once again present you with a text that we have already had to study, because it is the key describing the union of these two laws, that of Moses as well as the ten commandments and the reasons for their existence. Here is the said text:

**"You do well when you really fulfill the royal law found in scripture, Love your neighbor as yourself. But when you show favoritism, you are committing a sin, and by that same law you are exposed as a lawbreaker.**

*Anyone who tries to keep all of the Law but fails at one point is guilty of failing to keep all of it. The one who said, **Don't commit adultery**, also said, **Don't commit murder**.*

*So if you don't commit adultery but do commit murder, you are a lawbreaker". [James 2 verses 8-11, Common English Bible (CEB)].*

Here the mixture of the two laws is presented as one and the same entity, which is now called "*the royal law*". And its basis is that we must love our neighbour as ourselves.

This is also stated by this other biblical text: **"Now when the Pharisees heard that He had silenced (muzzled) the Sadducees, they gathered together. One of them, a lawyer [an expert in Mosaic Law], asked Jesus a question, to test Him:**

**"Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law?"**

And Jesus replied to him, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment.

The second is like it, 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself [that is, unselfishly seek the best or higher good for others].'

The whole Law and the [writings of the] Prophets depend on these two commandments." [Matthew 22 verses 34-40, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Let's finish with this: "So then, whatever you desire that others would do to and for you, even so do also to and for them, for this is (sums up) the Law and the Prophets". [Matthew 7 verse 12, *Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

Henceforth, God's law, magnified by Jesus, can be summed up as follows:

*To love God more than anything and to love our neighbour as ourselves by doing for him what we would like others to do for us.*

It is because we love our neighbour as ourselves that we will not do anything that might hurt him. This text abounds in this sense: "Do not owe anyone anything, except to love one another, for the one who loves another has fulfilled the law.

The commandments, Do not commit adultery; Do not murder; do not steal; do not covet; and any other commandment, are summed up by this commandment:

Love your neighbor as yourself. Love does no wrong to a neighbor. Love, therefore, is the fulfillment of the law". [Romans 13 verses 8-10, *Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

God's law magnified (*fulfilled*) by Jesus Christ is intended to present acts of love for the Lord, for our neighbour and for ourselves.

The love that we should give to others is based on our love for ourselves. What changed in God's two laws, discussed above, once they were fulfilled by Jesus Christ is the place that love took.

*This is why everything that undermines love has been revoked.*

For the fulfilment that Jesus came to realise in the Ten Commandments things are simpler than for the Law of Moses.

As we have seen, the basis of the royal law is to love God more than anything and one's neighbour as oneself.

Since this is already the basis of the Decalogue, therefore it has not undergone any modification. The first four commandments already call upon us to revere and love God:

*It is because I love the Lord that I would not act according to my heart, but would recognise him as my only God.*

*This is also why I would not worship an idol and violate his Word, for to do so is idolatry [1 Samuel 15 verses 22-23].*

*Nor will I use God's name in vain, swear by him or by heaven, or take false oaths, etc. Also as I recognise him as Almighty God who is the creator of all things, I will take a public stand to keep his holy Sabbath.*

*Regarding the glory due to God as the Creator and the observance of the Sabbath, you should read the chapter entitled "The purpose of the message of the first angel of the apocalypse".*

Now concerning the part of the law of love that requires we love our neighbour as ourselves. Here is the purpose:

*Because of the respect and love I have for them, I will honour my parents.*

*Also, not wanting others to kill me, steal from me, bear false testimony against me, covet what I have or my husband or wife in order to steal them away from me, I would not do these things to them either.*

*Lastly, since I don't want to be cuckolded because I know it would break my heart, I wouldn't commit adultery either.*

So that you have a clear understanding of the absorption of God's ten commandments into the status of royal law, we will show their presentation in a table before and after Christ's involvement:



Presentation of God's law (the ten commandments) before and after it has been fulfilled by Jesus Christ

The Ten Commandments before they were magnified by Jesus Christ (from the Old Testament)

The Ten Commandments when magnified by Jesus Christ (from the New Testament)

**1st commandment before:**

*"Thou shalt have no other gods before me". [Exodus 20 verse 3, King James Bible].*

**1st commandment**

**magnified:**

**"[...] Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve". [Luke 4 verse 8, King James Bible].**

Let's finish with this:

**"[...] The Lord our God is the only Lord [one Lord].**

**Love the Lord your God with all your heart, all your soul, all your mind, and all your strength' [...]"**. [Mark 12 verse 29-30, Expanded Bible (EXB)].

**2nd commandment before:**

"Thou shalt not make thyself any graven image, or any form of what is in the heavens above, or what is in the earth beneath, or what is in the waters under the earth: thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them;

For I, Jehovah thy God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the sons to the third and to the fourth [generation] of them that hate me, and shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me and keep my commandments".

*[Exodus 20 verses 4-6, Darby Translation Bible (DARBY)].*

**2nd commandment magnified:**

"Neither be ye idolaters, *as were some of them; as it is written,* The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

*[...] Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry".*

*[...] But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God:*

**And I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils".** *[1 Corinthians 10 verses 7-8, 14, 20, King James Bible].*

This text refers to the episode where Israel made the golden calf to worship him *[Exodus 32].*

The Lord therefore calls upon us here not to make an idol or a statue to worship him.

**3rd commandment before:**

*"Thou dost not take up the name of Jehovah thy God for a vain thing, for Jehovah acquitteth not him who taketh up His name for a vain thing". [Exodus 20 verse 7, Living Bible (TLB)].*

For a good understanding of this text it should also be read in other versions. Consider this one:

*"Do not use the name of the Lord your God in a false way. For the Lord will punish the one who uses His name in a false way". [Exodus 20 verse 7, New Life Version Bible (NLV)].*

Let's finish with this one:  
*"You shall not use or repeat the name of the Lord your God in vain [that is, lightly [...]] for the Lord will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain". [Exodus 20 verse 7, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].*

We understand that we should not use the Lord's name indiscriminately, lightly, and especially not to deceive.

**3rd commandment magnified:**

*"Again, your ancestors were taught, Never swear an oath that you don't intend to keep, but keep your vows to the Lord God.'*

*However, I say to you, don't bind yourself by taking an oath at all.*

*Don't swear by heaven, for heaven is where God's throne is placed.*

*Don't swear an oath by the earth, because it is the rug under God's feet, and not by Jerusalem, because it is the city of the Great King.*

*And why would you swear by your own head, because it's not in your power to turn a single hair white or black? But just let your words ring true.*

*A simple 'Yes' or 'No' will suffice. Anything beyond this springs from a deceiver". [Matthew 5 verses 33-37, The Passion Translation Bible (TPT)].*

**4th commandment**

**before:**

"Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy.

Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work:

But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God:

In it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates:

For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day:

Wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it". [*Exodus 20 verses 8-11, King James Bible*].

**4th commandment**

**magnified:**

"Let us fear therefore, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest [...]

For we who have believed do enter into that rest [...]

Although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

For he hath said somewhere of the seventh day on this wise, And God rested on the seventh day from all his works [...]

Seeing therefore it remaineth that some should enter therein [...]. He again defineth a certain day, To-day [...]. There remaineth therefore a sabbath rest for the people of God.

For he that is entered into his rest hath himself also rested from his works, as God did from his.

Let us therefore give diligence to enter into that rest [...]" [*Hebrews 4 verses 1, 3-4, 6-7, 9-11, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

<p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>5th commandment</u></b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>before:</u></b></p> <p><i>"Honour thy father and thy mother:</i></p> <p><i>That thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee". [Exodus 20 verse 12, King James Bible].</i></p>	<p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>5th commandment</u></b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>magnified:</u></b></p> <p><i>"Children, obey your parents in the Lord:</i></p> <p><i>For this is right. Honour thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise; That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth". [Ephesians 6 verses 1-3, King James Bible].</i></p>
<p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>6th commandment</u></b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>before:</u></b></p> <p><i>"You shall not murder". [Exodus 20 verse 13, English Standard Version Bible (ESV)].</i></p>	<p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>6th commandment</u></b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b><u>magnified:</u></b></p> <p><i>"You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not murder;</i></p> <p><i>And whoever murders will be liable to judgment.' But I say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother will be liable to judgment;</i></p> <p><i>Whoever insults his brother will be liable to the council; and whoever says, 'You fool!'</i></p> <p><i>Will be liable to the hell of fire". [Matthew 5 verses 21-22, English Standard Version Bible (ESV)].</i></p>

**7th commandment**

**before:**

*"Thou shalt not commit adultery". [Exodus 20 verse 14, King James Bible].*

**7th commandment**

**magnified:**

*"You have heard that it was said, You shall not commit adultery. But I say to you that everyone who so much as looks at a woman with evil desire for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart". [Matthieu 5 versets 27-28, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].*

**8th commandment**

**before:**

*"Thou shalt not steal". [Exodus 20 verse 15, King James Bible].*

**8th commandment**

**magnified:**

*"But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evildoer. [...]" [1 Peter 4 verse 15, King James Bible].*

Let's finish with this text:

*"That no one oppress and defraud his brother in any matter because the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified". [1 Thessalonians 4 verse 6, Jubilee Bible 2000 (JUB)].*

<p><b><u>9th commandment</u></b> <b><u>before:</u></b></p> <p><i>"Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour". [Exodus 20 verse 16, King James Bible].</i></p>	<p><b><u>9th commandment</u></b> <b><u>magnified:</u></b></p> <p><i>"[...] But if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith unto him, Which? [...] Thou shalt not bear false witness" [Matthew 19 verses 17-18, King James Bible].</i></p>
<p><b><u>10th commandment</u></b> <b><u>before:</u></b></p> <p><i>"Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's". [Exodus 20 verse 17, King James Bible].</i></p>	<p><b><u>10th commandment</u></b> <b><u>magnified:</u></b></p> <p><i>"For this is the will of God, even your sanctification [...] That each one of you know how to possess himself of his own vessel in sanctification and honor, not in the passion of lust [...]" [1 Thessalonians 4 verses 4-5, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].</i></p> <p>Let's finish with this text:</p> <p><b>"Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul" [1 Peter 2 verse 11, King James Bible].</b></p>

As we have already studied, God's law which was magnified in Jesus Christ has become the Gospel and doing so it is no longer static or frozen in stone, but has become effective rules of life.

From now on, the essence of this law (*its objective*) is that we may live a practical love for the Lord and for our neighbour.

Thus, it no longer seeks only to prohibit, but through the action of God's Spirit it aims to teach, strengthen, etc.

Now these foundations have been established, we will discover what happened to the law of Moses once magnified by Jesus Christ and what it becomes within the royal law, based on Love.

Before starting this part of our study, the source of which is parts of the law of Moses mentioned in the New Testament, we will first go to the Old Testament to discover the composition of this law:

*It consisted of two parts: One which was ceremonial and another which was moral. The epicentre of the ceremonial part was based on the first coming of Jesus, he who was the sacrificial lamb! The moral law, on the other hand, was intended to enable members of God's people to manage their daily lives.*

First, let us discover what happened to the ceremonial law. In order to do so, we will consider this: **"The Law of Moses is like a shadow of the good things to come. This shadow isn't the good things themselves, because it cannot free people from sin by the sacrifices that are offered year after year. If there were worshipers who already have their sins washed away and their consciences made clear, there would not be any need to go on offering sacrifices.**

**But the blood of bulls and goats cannot take away sins. It only reminds people of their sins from one year to the next.**

*When Christ came into the world, he said to God, "Sacrifices and offerings are not what you want, but you have given me my body.*

*No, you are not pleased with animal sacrifices and offerings for sin."* Then Christ said, *"And so, my God, I have come to do what you want, as the Scriptures say."* **The Law teaches that offerings and sacrifices must be made because of sin.**



**But why did Christ mention these things and say that God did not want them? Well, it was to do away with offerings and sacrifices and to replace them. That is what he meant by saying to God, "I have come to do what you want."**

**So we are made holy because Christ obeyed God and offered himself once for all". *The priests do their work each day, and they keep on offering sacrifices that can never take away sins. But Christ offered himself as a sacrifice that is good forever.***

*Now he is sitting at God's right side, and he will stay there until his enemies are put under his power. By his one sacrifice he has forever set free from sin the people he brings to God". [Hebrews 10 verses 1-14, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)].*

From the beginning, this text tells us about the tragedy of the centuries, where the son of God who is also God has to die to redeem humanity, with all of this being presented just as a play would be staged.

As a preamble, we learn that the law of Moses enacted to manage sacrifices was only a shadow and therefore an imperfect representation of things that would play out in the future.

Then the rest of the text tells us about this, because it presents the prophecy informing us that upon the atoning death of Jesus-Christ, the rites of the ceremonial law were to find their ultimate fulfilment, and thus be abrogated.

So, this part of the Law of Moses was a precursor intended to represent and temporarily replace the future sacrifice of Christ, which was the divine burnt offering. Let me give you an example which, I believe, will allow you to better understand this situation:

*Let us take a theatre company which has been commissioned by a large theatre to stage a unique play intended to delight an Emir passing through the country for one day. Before the day of the big curtain raiser when their piece will be presented to the public, they do a multitude of rehearsals.*

*They adjust every detail. The stakes are high, because if the performance pleases the Emir, he will talk about it and they will have a good press.*

*Once the big day arrives and they put on the show, what interest would they have in continuing to rehearse a play they will no longer perform? None!*

*It is the same for the ceremonial law. It was intended to foreshadow the divine sacrifice of Jesus Christ by which he redeemed humanity. To present it using our example, imagine the coming of Jesus as a great planetary spectacle that was going to be sold out in one single performance.*

*In this context the rudiments of the ceremonial law were rehearsals or even better extracts presenting the final piece.*

*The aim is to prepare the audience so that they are able to understand what will have to happen. Then, when the big day comes, the final performance takes place.*

*Once the show is over, further rehearsals are no longer necessary as there cannot be a second performance. By doing so once Christ's sacrifice was fulfilled, everything that was put in place to forecast it became obsolete.*

In my opinion the following text represents the reality of obsolescence very well: "*We were saved, and we have this hope [or by this hope; in hope].*

**If we see what we are waiting for, that is not really hope. People do not hope [For who hopes...?] for something they already have".** [*Romans 8 verse 24, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

Once the hope upon which the ceremonial law was based, namely the atoning death of Christ for mankind, had been fulfilled, there was nothing left to hope for and the law thereby lapsed.

Therefore as soon as Jesus' divine sacrifice was recorded, there was no longer any reason for the rites of the ceremonial law that God had given to Moses.

Before his son came to sacrifice his flesh and blood to die for the redemption of mankind, the Lord had established ceremonial sacrifices and the death of sacrificial beasts was then accepted by God but are now abominations before him [*Isaiah 66 verse 3*].

The ceremonial law also consisted of the observance of the holy days and the manner of dealing with the things which were to be eaten and drunk during the solemn feasts, all of which were also rescinded [*Colossians 2 verses 16-23*].

Before continuing, I want to make it clear that the term in this text “*the sabbaths*”, having to be no longer observed, does not refer to the Lord’s Sabbath, which is the fourth of the Ten Commandments.

Here, there is mention of the sabbaths, which were part of the ceremonial law. I will not develop this subject further in this part, since I have already given you a study on this subject in the chapter entitled “*Difference between the Sabbath (fourth of the ten commandments) and the sabbaths (command-ment of the ceremonial law)*”.

We can now continue. Here the Lord warns us against those who, under the guise of godliness, would urge us to continue to practise the observances of the ceremonial law.

*These things are no longer necessary!*

Depriving ourselves of things that we have been accustomed to do and that we love or forcing ourselves to implement ordinances that we do not like can lead us to feel more holy than we actually are.

However, these rites which are intended to bring us closer to God keep us away from him because by practising them we are breaking the divine ordinances that the Lord has given us. Furthermore, by continuing to practise those things which God has abolished, we end up losing our crown of eternal life [*2 Thessalonians 2 verses 3-12*].

With what we have just seen, everything that was associated with the ceremonial law, namely the feast days, the moons, the sacrifices, the administrative procedures, which were established within the framework of the ceremonies which had to be practised, became obsolete.

God’s Word tells us these things were a foretaste of those to come. Regarding the moral part which was enacted in the law of Moses, two filters are available for us in order to know if one of these commandments is still applicable or not:

*The first filter involves passing this law through the sieve of God’s Word. We will add to this another excellent filter, which is love.*

*We will pass this law through this sieve, which asks us to do for our neighbour what we would want him to do for us.*

In order to develop this theme, we will take the following as a basic text: *"Wherefore my judgment is, that we trouble not them that from among the Gentiles turn to God; but that we write unto them, that they abstain from the pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from what is strangled, and from blood.*

**For Moses from generations of old hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath".** [*Acts 15 verses 19-21, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

An initial appraisal is to be established following what we have just read:

*This text is found in the New Testament and presents the basis of the beliefs that Jesus' disciples had.*

*We find that they continued to preach the foundations that Moses had established with regard to the discipline to be applied by God's people, especially for the new converts from paganism.*

We will now define, Bible in hand, point by point, what is presented in this text. The goal being that we can see how we can apply these basic principles ourselves in this century.

For the sake of clarity, we will first look for texts in the law of Moses that present the administration that the Israelites had to put in place for each of the recommendations that this text from the book of Acts shows us.

Here is what had been recorded for the worship of idols: **"You must be careful not to forget the agreement that the LORD your God made with you. You must obey the LORD's command.**

**Don't make any idols in any form, because the LORD your God hates for his people to worship other gods. And he can be like a fire that destroys!"** [*Deuteronomy 4 verses 23-24, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Let us finish with this: **"Cursed be anyone who makes a carved or molten idol, an abomination to the Lord, the work of a craftsman's hands, and sets it up in secret!"**

*And all the people shall answer, "Amen!"* [Deuteronomy 27 verse 15, *New American Bible "Revised Edition" (NABRE)*].

Now let's see what was decreed for immorality: **"You must not shame [expose/uncover the nakedness of] your father by having sexual relations with [exposing/uncovering the nakedness of] your mother. She is your mother; do not have sexual relations with her [expose/uncover her nakedness].**

**You must not have sexual relations with [expose/uncover the nakedness of] your father's wife; That would shame [it is the nakedness of] your father. "You must not have sexual relations with [expose/uncover the nakedness of] your sister, either the daughter of your father or your mother.**

It doesn't matter if she was born in your house or somewhere else. **"You must not have sexual relations with [expose/uncover the nakedness of] your son's daughter or your daughter's daughter; that would bring shame on you [their nakedness is your nakedness]. [...]**

**"You must not have sexual relations [intercourse] with your neighbor's wife and make yourself unclean with her.**

**"You must not give any of your children to be sacrificed [pass them over; an allusion to passing them through fire] to Molech [probably an Ammonite god; 20:3-5; 2 Kin. 23:10; Jer. 32:35], because this would show that you do not respect [and so profane the name of] your God. I am the Lord.**

**"You must not have sexual relations [lie] with a man as you would a woman. That is a hateful sin [an abomination].**

**"You must not have sexual relations [intercourse] with an animal and make yourself unclean with it. Also a woman must not have sexual relations with an animal [stand in front of an animal for copulation];**

**It is not natural [perverted]"**. [Leviticus 18 verses 7-10, 20-23, *Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

Let's continue with what the law of Moses advocated regarding strangled animals and the use of blood. To do this, let's read this:

**"And if any native Israelite or foreigner living among you eats or drinks blood in any form, I will turn against that person and cut him off from the community of your people, for the life of the body is in its blood. I have given you the blood on the altar to purify you, making you right with the LORD.**

*It is the blood, given in exchange for a life, that makes purification possible. That is why I have said to the people of Israel, 'You must never eat or drink blood — neither you nor the foreigners living among you.'* **"And if any native Israelite or foreigner living among you goes hunting and kills an animal or bird that is approved for eating, he must drain its blood and cover it with earth.**

**The life of every creature is in its blood. That is why I have said to the people of Israel, 'You must never eat or drink blood, for the life of any creature is in its blood.' So whoever consumes blood will be cut off from the community".** [*Leviticus 17 verses 10-14, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

Let's finish with this text: **"If a man sleeps with a menstruating woman and has sexual intercourse with her, he has exposed the source of her flow, and she has uncovered the source of her blood. Both of them are to be cut off from their people".** [*Leviticus 20 verse 18, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

Everything we have just seen has the same reason for its existence, namely the law of God's love which was magnified by Jesus Christ, calling upon us to love the Lord more than anything and to love ourselves and to love our neighbour as ourselves.

Above all the term *"loved"* includes the respect we have for God, for ourselves and for our neighbour. If I love and respect the Lord, I will not be idolatrous by worshiping idols or transgressing His Holy Word [*1 Samuel 15 verses 22-23*].

Love for my wife will lead me to respect my wife when she gets her period and not want to have sex with her during this time. Also, I will not sleep with my mother, daughter, cousin or sister-in-law, etc. Furthermore, I will not sacrifice my children to *"foreign gods"*.

Anyway, to do otherwise would lead me to be punished by my country's law. Now, concerning me.

If I respect myself, I will not defile my body by eating blood or eating animals that have been strangled, which causes their blood to remain in their flesh, because in this century we know that bacteria are found in the blood. Blood is intended to cleanse the body of its toxins.

This is why it is not recommended to eat a suffocated animal, because its blood has not flowed and remains in its flesh.

By doing so, all of the toxins and blood-related diseases remain in the beast. Also if I love and respect myself, I would not have sex outside of marriage, which would lead to me becoming one with this person [*1 Corinthians 6 verse 16*].

The first result being that I would separate myself from God and thereby become the devils's slave [*1 Corinthians 6 verses 9-10*], [*1 John 5 verse 19*].

In addition I would also lose physical strength through this type of unsanctified sex [*Proverbs 31 verse 3*].

The purpose of such a process is to become that person's slave and the outcome is death [*Proverbs 5 verses 3-13*].

I will not sleep with an animal either, not only because I would degrade myself by such gestures, but I would not do these things primarily because I would dishonour and sadden the Lord. It is the same for sexual relations with a person of the same sex as me.

I will not practise such a thing, because I know that the Lord condemns such practices. Here is what God's Word tells us about this in the Old Testament: *"That evening the two angels came to the entrance of the city of Sodom. Lot was sitting there, and when he saw them, he stood up to meet them.*

*Then he welcomed them and bowed with his face to the ground. "My lords," he said, "come to my home to wash your feet, and be my guests for the night. You may then get up early in the morning and be on your way again." "Oh no," they replied.*

*"We'll just spend the night out here in the city square." But Lot insisted, so at last they went home with him. Lot prepared a feast for them, complete with fresh bread made without yeast, and they ate.*

But before they retired for the night, all the men of Sodom, young and old, came from all over the city and surrounded the house. They shouted to Lot, “Where are the men who came to spend the night with you?

**Bring them out to us so we can have sex with them!”** *So Lot stepped outside to talk to them, shutting the door behind him.*

*“Please, my brothers,” he begged, “don’t do such a wicked thing. Look, I have two virgin daughters.*

*Let me bring them out to you, and you can do with them as you wish. But please, leave these men alone, for they are my guests and are under my protection.”* “Stand back!” they shouted. “This fellow came to town as an outsider, and now he’s acting like our judge!

*We’ll treat you far worse than those other men!”* And they lunged toward Lot to break down the door. [...] Meanwhile, the angels questioned Lot. “Do you have any other relatives here in the city?”

*They asked. “Get them out of this place — your sons-in-law, sons, daughters, or anyone else. For we are about to destroy this city completely. The outcry against this place is so great it has reached the LORD, and he has sent us to destroy it.”* [...]

**Lot reached the village just as the sun was rising over the horizon. Then the LORD rained down fire and burning sulfur from the sky on Sodom and Gomorrah.**

**He utterly destroyed them, along with the other cities and villages of the plain, wiping out all the people and every bit of vegetation”.** [*Genesis 19 verses 1-9, 12-13, 23-25, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

This is what the Lord says in the New Testament regarding homosexuality: *“They said they were wise, but they became fools.*

*Instead of honoring the divine greatness of God, who lives forever, they traded it for the worship of idols — things made to look like humans, who get sick and die, or like birds, animals, and snakes.*

*People wanted only to do evil. So God left them and let them go their sinful way.*



*And so they became completely immoral and used their bodies in shameful ways with each other. They traded the truth of God for a lie.*

*They bowed down and worshiped the things God made instead of worshiping the God who made those things. He is the one who should be praised forever. Amen. Because people did those things, God left them and let them do the shameful things they wanted to do.*

**Women stopped having natural sex with men and started having sex with other women. In the same way, men stopped having natural sex with women and began wanting each other all the time. Men did shameful things with other men, and in their bodies they received the punishment for those wrongs. [...]**

**They know God's law says that anyone who lives like that should die. But they not only continue to do these things themselves, but they also encourage others who do them".** [*Romans 1 verses 22-27, 32, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Let's finish with this: *"Don't you realize that those who do wrong will not inherit the Kingdom of God? Don't fool yourselves.*

**Those who indulge in sexual sin, or who worship idols, or commit adultery, or are male prostitutes, or practice homosexuality, or are thieves, or greedy people, or drunkards, or are abusive, or cheat people — none of these will inherit the Kingdom of God".** [*1 Corinthians 6 verses 9-10, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

These texts not only present homosexuality as being prohibited and reprehensible before God, but also sodomy.

Before going any further, please let me tell you that I believe that the choice of one's sexuality is up to everyone's soul and conscience, and that one thus chooses the repercussions that this implies.

*So I have nothing against homosexuals!*

Nevertheless in his Word, the Lord prohibits homosexuality. In the text of [*Leviticus 18 verse 22*] we saw that God's Word presents homosexuality as being forbidden and the Lord treats this as an act of "an abomination".

It was because of this sin that God destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah [*Genesis 19 verses 1-29*].

To continue, I will tell those of you who are homosexuals that God hates homosexuality, but he loves you as human beings.

*Jesus Christ also died on the cross to redeem you. Come to him, give him your hearts, turn away from your old ways, make a covenant with him, that you may be saved and you may inherit eternal life. Now these points have been made, I must take a break in order to tell you about a news item. What am I saying! A historical fact about society.*

In France and in other countries, two people of the same sex can now be united in marriage.

*For me, this type of union dishonours the Lord, who is the author of marriage. Christians who read these lines will certainly agree with my words! But are you really sure you agree with the fact that since God forbids homosexuality, that a man cannot marry a man, or a woman cannot marry a woman?*

*Your answer is certainly: "Yes!"*

Yet if you claim that the law of Moses has been abolished, you are publicly declaring that two men (*or two women*) can biblically unite in this century. I invite those of you who advocate this revocation, but that believe that two people of the same sex cannot marry, to read what this text says: "**[...] For where no law is, there is no transgression**". [*Romans 4 verse 15, King James Bible*].

Since without law, there can be no transgression, this would imply that *homosexuality, incest, zoophilia, etc.* were prohibited by the law of Moses in biblical times and since according to you this law has been "*repealed*", all of these things today would therefore supposedly be approved by God.

The logical result of such a cause and effect reaction, would mean that now you can have sex with an animal, your sister, your mother or with your daughter, etc.

Because it is the law of Moses that prohibits these practices, if this law is no longer valid (*depending on what you advocate*), they would become legal. Therefore if we stick to your philosophy, the French State as well as the other countries which have legalised this act of uniting two people of the same sex in marriage would be right.

But you who are children of light know full well that these things once forbidden by God still remain so. The very idea of having to sleep with your mother, your sister or an animal (*dog, pig, etc.*) is unbearable for you. The moral nature of this part of the law shows us its durability. This is what we have seen regarding the various sexual prohibitions. I do not believe for a moment that any mindful child of God, would want to call into question the durability of the prohibitions that this law imposes on the matter.

The foundations of the moral law found in the law of Moses were therefore not rescinded as was the case with the ceremonial law.

*Nevertheless the sections of the moral law, which were above all intended for the administration of the life of the Israelites who lived in biblical times, have taken on another aspect which has Love as its epicentre. Which is what we are to bring to the Lord, to ourselves and to our neighbour.*

As we have already seen, Jesus Christ was the one who allowed this divine legislative evolution to take place.

We are now going to discover another facet making it possible to know what is still accepted by the Lord in the moral law of Moses when these things are not explicitly presented in the New Testament.

The key that I present to you is the Lord's position in the face of the abominable things which he forbade under this law.

So that you can better understand this situation, I will give you a concrete example and, to do so, we must refer again to the text of [Deuteronomy 18 verses 9-14].

In this text, among other things astrology is mentioned.

*The Lord forbids and forbids any association with those who are involved with such practices. On the other hand, in the New Testament, I found no trace of such practices and no formal prohibitions concerning astrology.*

*Does this mean that now we are called upon by Christ to be free to listen to our horoscopes or to go to those who interpret them or read books on this subject?*

The answer to these questions is perhaps not presented in the New Testament, but for me it is clear and indicated in this text:

*"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning". [James 1 verse 17, BRG Bible (BRG)].*

Let's finish with this: **"For I am the LORD, I change not [...]"** [Malachi 3 verse 6, King James Bible].

What is true for God the Father and by extension his Holy Spirit is also true for his son. Here's what we learn about it:

**"Jesus Christ (the Messiah) is [always] the same, yesterday, today, [yes] and forever (to the ages)".** [Hebrews 13 verse 8, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].

The Lord does not change what he has decreed to be an abomination to him. It always remains so.

So wherever in the law of Moses or in the Old Testament it was decreed that a thing or a practice was an abomination, even though we are now called upon to be free by Christ, we cannot practise it.

Our comprehension therefore leads us to understand that in this century, as in the past century, the Lord cannot accept things which he had assessed as being an abomination. Thus whatever the Lord called an "abomination" in the text of [Deuteronomy 18 verses 9-14] still remains prohibited in the eyes of God. Of their number, we find:

- *Those who sacrifice their child by immolation. (To this end we know that it is not only the Lord, but also the law of men, that forbids us from doing so).*
- *Neither should we involve ourselves with divining, astrology, interpreting omens, witchcraft or being a magician*

- *Furthermore, we should not consult those who conjure up spirits or tell fortunes, or those who question the dead.*

*And we are not to do all of this because of the fact that whoever does these things is an abomination to the Lord.*

We will continue our search for what the Lord always approves of or not in the law of Moses or in the Old Testament using the word “*abomination*” or one of its synonyms.

But before I do so, I'm going to ask you a question, which will surely make many of you jump up out of your seats:

*Do you think that, since nothing is unclean anymore, that by eating animals that God has forbidden, you glorify Him?*

In order to answer you, I invite you to read what the Lord says in this text: *"All day long they insult me to my face by worshiping idols in their sacred gardens.*

*They burn incense on pagan altars. At night they go out among the graves, worshiping the dead. They eat the flesh of pigs and make stews with other forbidden foods.*

*Yet they say to each other, 'Don't come too close or you will defile me! I am holier than you!'*

*These people are a stench in my nostrils, an acrid smell that never goes away. "Look, my decree is written out in front of me: I will not stand silent; I will repay them in full!*

*Yes, I will repay them — both for their own sins and for those of their ancestors," says the LORD.*

*"For they also burned incense on the mountains and insulted me on the hills. I will pay them back in full!" [Isaiah 65 verses 3-7, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)].*

In the version we have just read we do not find the term “*abomination*” or one of its synonyms, whereas in this same text we find it in this other version of the Bible:

*"A people that provoketh Me to anger continually to My face, that sacrificeth in gardens and burneth incense upon altars of brick;*

**Who remain among the graves and lodge in the monuments, which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels;**

*Who say, 'Stand by thyself; come not near to me, for I am holier than thou!' These are a smoke in My nose, a fire that burneth all the day. Behold, it is written before Me:*

*I will not keep silence, but will recompense — even recompense into their bosom" your iniquities and the iniquities of your fathers together," saith the LORD, "who have burned incense upon the mountains and blasphemed Me upon the hills;*

*Therefore will I measure their former work into their bosom". [Isaiah 65 verses 3-7, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

Before getting to the heart of the matter, I would like to tell you that those who want to research any online similarities regarding the word "*abomination*" may not always be able to manage it, because it is not used in all versions of the Bible.

During your research, it will then be enough to use one of its synonyms to arrive at your objective.

The term "*abomination*" or "*abominable*" is therefore one of the benchmarks you need to bear in mind in order to know whether something that is presented in the Old Testament is accepted by God today.

*And this is the case even if no text in the New Testament mentions it.*

Now that this point has been made, let us return to the two texts we have just seen in the two versions.

In these lines we find that those who eat, among other things, the flesh of swine and food that God has forbidden, will be struck down by the Lord because of their abominable acts.

Having made this point, in order to supplement our study concerning the eating of pork, let's finish with this other text even stronger in meaning:

*"[The acts of the hypocrite's worship are as abominable to God as if they were offered to idols].*

*He who kills an ox [then] will be as guilty as if he slew and sacrificed a man; he who sacrifices a lamb or a kid, as if he broke a dog's neck and sacrificed him;*

**He who offers a cereal offering, as if he offered swine's blood;**

*He who burns incense [to God], as if he blessed an idol.*

**[Such people] have chosen their own ways, and they delight in their abominations [...]**

**For by fire and by His sword will the Lord execute judgment upon all flesh, and the slain of the Lord will be many.**

*Those who [attempt to] sanctify themselves and cleanse themselves to enter [and sacrifice to idols] in the gardens, following after one in the midst, eating hog's flesh and the abomination [creeping things] and the [mouse — their works and their thoughts] shall come to an end together, says the Lord". [Isaiah 66 verses 3, 16-17, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].*

It is important to note that this text is talking about the end of the world, when God will destroy the unrepentant.

To those who thought that since Jesus Christ's death that the pig and other animals which God has declared inedible and unclean [Leviticus 11 verses 46-47] have become edible because they are no longer unclean, these texts are a beautiful slap in the face for them.

*It is important to note that God will destroy everyone who eats pork and mice as well as abominable things.*

*In addition we have also discovered that pig's blood or pig's flesh is an abomination before God.*

*Which implies that when you eat pork sausages, containing this blood, you become abominable before God.*

Doesn't common sense itself lead us to appreciate that all of the animals that God had decreed inedible remain so, even if today they are no longer unclean?

**Example:** *Take the case of a rat or a dog that God declared inedible and which was still inedible before Jesus' death.*

*Could it have become edible after his resurrection?*

*Did this animal that was inedible at 10 a.m. on the Friday of the Passion of our Lord Jesus Christ suddenly mutate upon His atoning death?*

*This would mean that this genetic evolution would have ended with the resurrection of the Lord on Easter Sunday therefore causing this rat or this dog to become edible?*

*Um... for those of you who think so, I suggest you sell the story to the film studio dealing with mutant movies!*

*They will certainly be interested in an **X-Animal version.***

Unless the species mutated when Jesus died, I do not see how an inedible animal could have become edible overnight.

I do not see how a rat or a pig that God had declared to be inedible could have become edible on this day.

*Will the Lord's death have turned the rat's foul flesh into the delicacy of your Christian tables?*

The rat and the pig etc. are certainly no longer unclean since Jesus redeemed us, for nothing is unclean to those who are sanctified [Titus 1 verse 15], but they still remain inedible.

*This is the same situation for all of the inedible animals that the Lord presents in [Leviticus 11] and which among others include the dog, the pig, the hare and by extension the rabbit, which is of the same breed, as well as the lobster, etc.*

When reading this list of unclean animals in the book of [Leviticus 11] we often see that those that were inedible were also unclean.

*Pork is also included in this description. Conversely, we find that animals designated as pure were edible.*



Aside from that, we find that there was a third criterion which related to inedible animals, which were also unclean and which became evident as those who ate them became abominable.

See [*Leviticus 11 verses 9-20, 43-47*].

Here is how I would present the evolution of animals that were once unclean and their impact on us:

**Example:** *Unlike Jesus' contemporaries (before his death), you can play with a mouse, because it is no longer impure.*

*However, would you not be an abomination before God if you ate it? Eh yes! Remember, God does not change!*

*The animal he created inedible remains so. So don't lie to yourself anymore. Nowhere does the Bible say otherwise.*

To close our study, I will tell you that the text of [*Isaiah 1 verses 1-16*] tells us that the Lord hates things being presented to him as holy when he has declared them to be abominable.

Let's take a specific example:

*Imagine Christian newlyweds who before making love on their wedding night pray to God to bless their first intimate contact.*

*In such a setting I have faith that the Lord will be touched by their approach of preferring to first go to God to thank him, instead of merely jumping on each other.*

*Now consider a married man who takes the same step, but the person he is about to sleep with is not his wife. Do you think the Lord will accept this prayer? Of course not, because such a prayer will ascend to Him like an abomination!*

*Likewise, do you think, that if you pray to sanctify a dish of dog or mouse meat, that the Lord will accept it and bless your meal? Of course not! It is the same when you pray that the Lord may bless pork or seafood like lobster or crayfish.*

*When you eat such things you are an abomination before God and become, like those who ate victims sacrificed to idols, in fellowship with demons and possessed by them [*1 Corinthians 10 verses 14-22*].*

## 5 Biblical guidelines for keeping the Sabbath

**T**hroughout the various previous chapters, I believe I have, Bible in hand, restored many truths, dismantled many misconceptions, and brought to light certain transgressions of God's Word.

By God's grace I have also brought to light, the nonsense practised by those who claim the name of the King of kings and the Lord of lords and who advocate that living under God's grace exempts them from observing God's law and by extension his holy Sabbath.

We have seen that although the members of the Lord's consecrated people are no longer under the law, but as the commandments of God's loving law are in their hearts they must choose to keep the Sabbath as an outward sign of their faithfulness to the Lord.

At this point, looking at everything we have already studied, I am confident that God's faithful children have already taken a stand to keep the pure Word of God.

And that they chose to reject the skilfully conceived fables, encouraged by obscure men, in particular regarding the day to be reserved for the worship for God.

However, I realise that those who have never kept the Sabbath may be lost. Therefore, this chapter is very important because what is the use of demonstrating to you the importance of exalting the holy day of the Lord's rest, if you do not have the foundations to observe it.

*In these lines, through God's Word, we will discover the biblical guidelines governing the Sabbath in order to enable you to be clear about it.*

*My feeling is that it is often because of ambiguity based on a misunderstanding of certain biblical texts that some end up not keeping or no longer wanting to keep the Sabbath.*

*In this chapter, Bible in hand, we will study the basics of the Sabbath.*

## 5.1 ABC of Bible basics for keeping the Sabbath

To start this part, I would like to tell you that for many knowing how to position yourself in time and space is a guarantee of salvation, because to do otherwise would be wandering off course, which can be fatal.

*Let's take a specific example. Imagine some shipwrecked people who land on an island and have a map showing them the water sources, the places where food is concentrated, but also the places where dangerous animals are found.*

*As long as the landmarks on this map are followed their lives will be saved, but as soon as they wander they will get lost.*

*It is the same for the day which must be the Sabbath!*

We have seen his place in the great cosmic conflict between Satan (*and his henchmen*) against God (*and his people*). The Sabbath having been established to be the memorial of divine creation, we must keep it on the correct day, otherwise we have unwillingly rejected the worship which is due to the Lord as the Creator of all things.

The result will be that we become devil worshippers by worshipping God on the wrong day. God having instituted the Sabbath as a sign to let everyone know that He has a faithful people serving Him, we therefore need to make sure that we are keeping it in the right way. This is what we will now establish, Bible in hand.

To begin with, we will begin research to determine which day should be the Sabbath. To do this, let's read this:

**"Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God:**

*In it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it".* [Exodus 20 verses 8-11, King James Bible].

To finish, here is the basis by which the Lord first instituted the Sabbath: *"Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; And he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made.*

*And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: Because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made". [Genesis 2 verses 1-3, King James Bible].*

As a reminder that which God blesses remains for ever so and as a result the seventh day having been blessed and set apart as a Sabbath day by the Lord remains so in perpetuity.

Furthermore, as we have seen, as the Sabbath was instituted before sin entered the world, it will continue to be observed into the endless ages of eternity. The Sabbath being the memorial of creation, we cannot therefore substitute another day for it.

Thus the seventh day having been promulgated by God as the Sabbath day cannot be observed on the first day of the week or the third, etc., for these days are not the one which He has blessed and sanctified as a memorial of his creation and his divine rest.

The seventh day was the crowning moment of his creative work. Having blessed this day, the Lord thereby endorsed it as the day when his sabbatical rest should be observed. In his fourth commandment he established this day to be his holy Sabbath.

We have seen that the Lord declares that the Sabbath is the seventh day of the week. We must now establish which is this seventh day:

*Our calendars have declared the seventh day to be Sunday.*

*It should be noted that it was the ancient Roman Catholic religion that established Sunday as the day of rest reserved for the Lord and this to the detriment of the Sabbath day, which the Lord established.*

*To discover this reality, I invite you to read volume II of this book in the chapter entitled "Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of "the Eternal God" or of the "sun god"".*

*Is Sunday really the day the Lord has specified to be His holy day of sabbatical rest?*

Before continuing, I would like to tell you that Sunday as the day of rest established by the Lord for his people is truly anchored in the faith of the majority of Christians.

This fact was not unfamiliar to me, yet it struck me when I discovered that one of the "*Topchrétien*" social-Christian networks, which has many international readers, immediately considers this day to be the "*Sunday*". Here is what we can read about it:

*"The day of rest: Remember the day of rest, to keep it holy. You will labour six days and you will do all your work. But the seventh day is the day of rest of the Eternal God, your God: you shall do no work [...] For in six days the Eternal God made the heavens, earth and the sea and everything that is contained in it and he rested the seventh day:*

*Therefore the Eternal God blessed the day of rest, and sanctified it. Exodus 20:8-11. In our modern culture, many consider the idea of the Sabbath rest to be an archaic concept.*

**For them, Sunday looks like any other day.**

**For some, working seven days a week is no problem. However, others consider that God's principles are as valid today as they were when he gave the Ten Commandments and that he was serious when he said that we needed a day of rest".** [Taken from the site: « <https://lapenseedujour.topchretien.com/john-roos-le-jour-du-repos> » (translated into English from the original text)].

This text begins by presenting the fourth commandment of the Decalogue, enjoining the observance of the Sabbath, and which we have already read in its entirety at the beginning of this chapter.

The author then goes on to point out that the Sabbath is an archaic convention for many people today.

He continues his pro Sabbath plea by emphasising the vital importance of the Sabbath, which he presents as a principle of God.

For the author of this text the Sabbath remains just as important as when the Lord instituted it within the Ten Commandments.

*I fully agree with him on all of these points!*

*Unfortunately, there is a "catch" and not the least, when he specifies that the Sabbath is Sunday. As we have seen, Sunday as a day of rest reserved for the Lord is a creation of the people of the pagan Roman Empire, which was adopted within the Christian faith by the papacy for the Catholic Church.*

Reading this text that *Topchrétien* has published some might think that the Sabbath day we choose to keep is the responsibility of each of us and that it does not matter. And yet! It is not so. I have set out to demonstrate this, Bible in hand, throughout this book. Let us continue!

Above all, to know exactly which day God has instituted to be the Sabbath, it is important to have a version of the Bible that uses current words to avoid confusion. Consider this biblical text in two different versions. Here is what the first one tells us:

**"In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre. [...]**

*And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified". [Matthew 28 verses 1 and 5, King James Bible].*

Now let us discover the second version: **"Early on Sunday morning, as the new day was dawning, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary went out to visit the tomb.**

*[...] Then the angel spoke to the women. "Don't be afraid!" he said. "I know you are looking for Jesus, who was crucified". [Matthew 28 verses 1 and 5, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)].*

Before continuing, it is important to note that in the days when Jesus lived and also those of his apostles, many of whom were the authors of the New Testament, *days like Monday, Tuesday, etc.*, did not exist. In doing so, as is the case with this text, in some older versions of the Bible the term used is *"the first day of the week"*.

Which leaves room for speculation as to what the first day of the week is, because our calendars tell us it is *Monday*.

Thus, in this biblical text, the day before *the first day of the week* is called the Sabbath and on the strength of this basis that the calendar presents us, many have come to believe that the Sabbath day that the Lord has blessed and consecrated is Sunday.

However, this theory is unfounded and is anti-biblical, as we shall see! Whilst with newer versions of the Bible, there is no possibility of confusion as it is noted in black and white that Jesus was resurrected on the *Sunday* and the day before was called the *Sabbath*.

This makes us understand without doubt that the Sabbath is Saturday. Although the Sabbath day is Saturday, it does not begin on Saturday morning, but on Friday evening.

To understand this, we must not lose sight of the fact that the Lord was involved in defining the length of a day. Here is what he instituted:

*"God created the sky and the earth. At first, the earth was completely empty. There was nothing on the earth.*

*Darkness covered the ocean, and God's Spirit moved over the water. Then God said, "Let there be light!"*

**And light began to shine. He saw the light, and he knew that it was good. Then he separated the light from the darkness. God named the light "day," and he named the darkness "night."**

**There was evening, and then there was morning. This was the first day. [...] Then God said, "Let there be lights in the sky. These lights will separate the days from the nights.**

**They will be used for signs to show [...] the days and years. They will be in the sky to shine light on the earth." And it happened.**

**So God made the two large lights. He made the larger light to rule during the day and the smaller light to rule during the night.**

*He also made the stars. God put these lights in the sky to shine on the earth. He put them in the sky to rule over the day and over the night. They separated the light from the darkness.*

**And God saw that this was good. There was evening, and then there was morning. This was the fourth day".** [*Genesis 1 verses 1-5, 14-19, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

From the above, therefore it appears that the system for calculating the length of a day that God has established begins with sunset and ends with the following sunset.

So that when the sunlight is totally gone, it's the start of a new day.

I can imagine that these words can be difficult to comprehend, because they are so far removed from what we have learned from our everyday experience where a day begins at sunrise.

Although influential, but nonetheless mortal, at key moments in our history human beings have established their rules to the detriment of the cosmic reality which the eternal Lord has established and what they have fomented will never replace the work of the Almighty.

So that the system for keeping track of time that the Lord established can no longer exist, the movement of the stars must be able to stop. This is impossible, because here is what the Almighty has decreed on the matter: **"Shout praises to the LORD! *Shout the LORD's praises in the highest heavens. [...] Sun and moon, and all of you bright stars, come and offer praise.***

**Highest heavens, and the water above the highest heavens, come and offer praise. Let all things praise the name of the Lord, because they were created at his command. He made them to last forever, and nothing can change what he has done".** [*Psalm 148 verses 1, 3-6, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

The Lord declares here that He has established laws governing the universe and that they will not be altered.

In doing so, I have the assurance that, like me, God's faithful children who keep his commandments have the firm conviction that what I have just presented, namely the theory that I put forward, does indeed come from what the Holy Scriptures report.

*So the Friday evening is in fact Saturday evening, because there was an evening then a morning and so on. The Sabbath therefore begins on Friday evening at sunset and ends on Saturday evening at sunset.*

Whatever the belief, the following facts relating to the death of Jesus on the cross and taken from the Holy Book are inviolable.



Therefore, there should no longer be any doubt that the Sabbath begins on Friday evening. Let us take a look at:

**"And Jesus, having cried with a loud voice, said, Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit. And having said this, he expired.**

**[...] And all those who knew him stood afar off, the women also who had followed him from Galilee, beholding these things.**

*And behold, a man named Joseph, who was a councillor, a good man and a just (this [man] had not assented to their counsel and deed), of Arimathaea, a city of the Jews, who also waited, [himself also,] for the kingdom of God — he having gone to Pilate begged the body of Jesus;*

*And having taken it down, wrapped it in fine linen and placed him in a tomb hewn in the rock, where no one had ever been laid.*

**And it was preparation day, and [the] sabbath twilight was coming on. And women, who had come along with him out of Galilee, having followed, saw the sepulchre and how his body was placed. And having returned they prepared aromatic spices and ointments, and remained quiet on the sabbath, according to the commandment. [...] But on the morrow of the sabbath, very early indeed in the morning, they came to the tomb, bringing the aromatic spices which they had prepared.**

*And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. And when they had entered they found not the body of the Lord Jesus. And it came to pass as they were in perplexity about it, that behold, two men suddenly stood by them in shining raiment. And as they were filled with fear and bowed their faces to the ground, they said to them, **Why seek ye the living one among the dead? He is not here, but is risen: Remember how he spoke to you, being yet in Galilee**" [Luke 23 verses 46, 49 to Luke 24 verse 6, Darby Translation Bible].*

So that we can completely understand our study, it is advisable to dwell on the important points of this account and to place these most sad events in chronological order:

*First we see Jesus in agony, who finally passes away. Then we are introduced to a very special group, including women who had accompanied him from Galilee.*

*In fact, they were not mere bystanders but women who had a ministry with Jesus. It is written that they served him [Mark 15 verses 37-42].*

*They are therefore sanctified women (holy women). Next, Joseph of Arimathea appears who, after having sought permission from Pilate to recover the body of Jesus, takes it down from the cross, wraps it in a shroud and places it in a tomb carved in the rock, which had never been used before.*

*Furthermore it is upon the death of Jesus Christ that we see the importance of observing the Sabbath beginning on Friday evening at sunset. This is what the first disciples of Jesus did!*

*We see in this text that during the Sabbath, the women who followed him to serve him did not go to embalm the body of Jesus their master, although they already had everything they needed to be able to do so.*

*They waited until Sunday morning to do so.*

*What is described here is really important!*

For they waited, despite their sorrow, until the Sabbath had passed before going to perfume their master.

These women were faithful servants of the Lord who accompanied him, so that by not embalming him they observed what he had instilled in them. If that had not been the case, his faithful servants of the Lord would have gone ahead and they would have embalmed him on the Friday evening.

Before returning to the development of this text, I would like to digress to introduce you to one of faith's great heroines.

The testimony that she left us during that fatal and bloody twilight which witnessed the death of Christ, shows us the importance of observing the Sabbath on Friday evenings.

To get to know her better, let us read this:

*"And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.*

And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, And stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: For she is a sinner. And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee.

And he saith, Master, say on. There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: The one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both.

Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? Simon answered and said, I suppose that he, to whom he forgave most.

And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss:

But this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: *But to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.*

*And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace". [Luke 7 verses 36-50, King James Bible].*

It is noted that, the name of the person that interests us is not specified in this text as she is simply described as a sinner. To discover her identity, we must do a study on this subject. Thus, we discover in [John 12 verses 1-11] that this woman was called Mary and in [Luke 8 verse 2] we find out that she was actually called *Mary of Magdala*.

The adoration and admiration that Mary had for Jesus transcended worldly habits and customs as she was thirsty for his words and fascinated by his charisma. This situation even put him at odds with her sister Martha [*Luke 10 verses 38-42*].

I imagine Mary of Magdala as having been concentrated pure Love, who listened only to her heart. When she was convinced that she had to do a labour of love, especially one intended for her master and saviour, the fact that she might, afterwards, be ashamed because of these acts could not prevent her from acting.

This is what we find in this text: **"The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre.**

*Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the LORD out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him. Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. [...]*

*Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie, And the napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself.*

*Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.*

*Then the disciples went away again unto their own home. But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre, and seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.*

**And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou?**

**Whom seekest thou ? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.**

**Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master".** [*John 20 verses 1-3, 6-16, King James Bible*].

Mary of Magdala's distress was acute when she did not see her master's body. She was inconsolable and nothing prevented her from finding him. She was not frightened to claim his body from the one she believed to be the gardener.

It is timely to note that at this point in Christian history, Jesus' disciples were on the run and in hiding in order to save their lives [*Mark 14 verses 43-52*], [*John 20 verse 19*].

To be recognised as having been with Christ crucified would have exposed them to the same fate. It is for these reasons that, being in this tense situation, Peter regretfully ended up publicly disowning his master in order to save his life [*Luke 22 verses 54-62*].

So, it was because she knew that she would not respect her master's wishes by coming to perfume him on Friday evening (*at the start of the Sabbath*) that Mary of Magdala (*also called Mary Magdalene*) abstained.

Yet she is one of those who could have only listened to her heart, in order to be near Jesus in the tomb, embalming him from Friday evening, without paying attention to the conventions and the reproaching words of the great majority of people.

The Bible describes her as a passionate and foolhardy woman who listened only to her heart, especially when it came to being with Jesus or when it was necessary to honour him.

The testimony of these holy women shows us that the Sabbath must be observed from Friday evening onwards by abstaining from any work that could be postponed until later.

This rest that they observed on this fateful Sabbath day takes on all the more importance when we understand that it was not a trivial gesture that they had to perform, because here we are talking about the divine body of Jesus that was to be embalmed.

These women could have considered that this work had to be accomplished without delay and yet! Now this point has been made, let us return to the text of [*Luke 23 verses 46, 49 to Luke 24 verse 6*].

In these lines we also discover that the end of Friday, the day of Christ's Passion, is presented as the twilight of the Sabbath. In nature this period is the moment that represents the transition between sunset and the onset of night.

So it is no coincidence that this tragic evening was called the twilight of the Sabbath, because biblically speaking it is the end of one day on Friday and the start of another on Saturday.

We also discover in this biblical text that Friday is presented as the day of preparation for the Sabbath.

All of this shows us that we should not enter the Sabbath in a haphazard way, because we have things to put in place before the sun goes down on Friday and this holy day reserved by God arrives.

The following text describes the principles that should govern Friday, the preparation for the Sabbath: *"That evening, flocks of quail came and filled the camp, and in the morning dew lay on the ground all around it. After the dew was gone, something like thin flakes of frost was on the ground.*

**When the Israelites saw it, they asked each other, "What is that?" because they did not know what it was. So Moses told them, "This is the food the Lord is giving you to eat.**

*[...] Every morning the people gathered as much food as they could eat, but by noon the food melted and was gone. On Friday the people gathered twice as much food — two baskets for every person. So all the leaders of the people came and told this to Moses.*

**Moses told them, "This is what the Lord said would happen. It happened because tomorrow is the Sabbath, the special day of rest to honor the Lord.**

**You can cook all the food you need to cook for today, but save the rest of this food for tomorrow morning."**

*So the people saved the rest of the food for the next day, as Moses had commanded, and none of the food spoiled or had worms in it.*

*On Saturday, Moses told the people, "Today is the Sabbath, the special day of rest to honor the Lord.*

*So none of you should be out in the fields. Eat the food you gathered yesterday". [Exodus 16 verses 13-15, 21-25, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].*

This text enables us to understand the importance that God's people should place on this preparation happening on Friday in order to be able to enter the Sabbath in peace.

Food should be prepared in advance as should any housework as well. Friday is called "*the day of preparation*", because on this day before sunset everything should be done so that we do not have to do any servile work on the Sabbath.

These foundations for the preparation and observance of the Sabbath day, which we have just seen, did not end with the first disciples of Jesus, but continued to be observed by Christians in the first centuries.

In the historical text that I am presenting below you can see with what enthusiasm those who observed it worked to this end:

**"[...] Who had cultivated and kept the law of Moses [...] by staying at home with family on Friday and Saturday evenings and by wearing clean linens on Saturdays, and wearing better clothes that day than on other days. By preparing food for Saturdays on Fridays in cooking pans over a small fire.**

**By not working on Friday evenings and Saturdays, like other days. By preparing clean lamps with new wicks on Friday evenings and placing clean sheets on the beds and clean tablecloths on the table [...]"**. [Extract from: « *Déclarations, Actes et Édits de la Juridiction royale et le Saint-Office de l'Inquisition Valencia, 1568* » (translated into English from the original text)].

Before continuing, I want to inform you that this historic text does not only present the guidelines for observing the Sabbath, but was originally established to denounce those who kept it. The fate of the Sabbath-keepers was the confiscation of their possessions and they ended up being burned at the infamous stake by the inquisitors who were the raging and vengeful hand of the Catholic Church.

By doing so, century after century, the Sabbath under the influence of this yoke, which those who kept it bore, ended up sinking into oblivion together with the guidelines for its observance.

If you want to learn more about what I have just presented to you, I invite you to read *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled “*The bloodthirsty legislative legacy*”. Now this interlude has come to an end, let us return to our study. As you can see, the early Christians took care to prepare for the Sabbath from Fridays onwards.

In addition, they made the Sabbath a special day as a feast day in honour of the Lord. They bore witness to what the Lord expects of us! It is because the Lord is a God of order [*1 Corinthians 14 verse 33*], that he established Friday as being the day of preparation for the Sabbath. Therefore Friday must be the day to get jobs done, like :

- *cleaning the house,*
- *cooking the Sabbath meal,*
- *washing the car,*
- *polishing one’s shoes, etc.*

In order for this preparation to be carried out efficiently, it would be wise for you to stop your professional activities earlier on Fridays than on other days of the week. The goal is to ensure that you don't run out of time and find yourself still continuing to make your preparations in the middle of the Sabbath on Friday evenings.

For those who do not have the opportunity to work part-time on Fridays, because of their professional activity during the other days of the week, you must start your preparations for the Sabbath earlier:

*Your Sabbath clothes and meals that need cooking must be prepared in advance. As far as meals are concerned, you just need to freeze them.*

*So on Friday all you have to do is prepare your salads.*

The Sabbath needs to find you free from any servile activity or work, so you need to organise yourself to ensure that all tasks are done before the sun goes down on Friday nights. Like the bride waiting for her groom you must be prepared and ready to enter into the rest period that our God has set aside for us his people.

Entering the Sabbath is a good time to sing songs of thanksgiving and psalms etc. Here is the perfect psalm for the Sabbath day:



**"It is good to give thanks to the Lord, to sing praise to your name, Most High, To proclaim your love at daybreak, your faithfulness in the night, With the ten-stringed harp, with melody upon the lyre. For you make me jubilant, Lord, by your deeds;**

**At the works of your hands I shout for joy. How great are your works, Lord! How profound your designs! *A senseless person cannot know this; a fool cannot comprehend. Though the wicked flourish like grass and all sinners thrive, They are destined for eternal destruction; But you, Lord, are forever on high.***

*Indeed your enemies, Lord, indeed your enemies shall perish; all sinners shall be scattered. You have given me the strength of a wild ox; You have poured rich oil upon me. My eyes look with glee on my wicked enemies; My ears shall hear what happens to my wicked foes.*

**The just shall flourish like the palm tree, shall grow like a cedar of Lebanon. Planted in the house of the Lord, they shall flourish in the courts of our God. They shall bear fruit even in old age, they will stay fresh and green, To proclaim: "The Lord is just; my rock, in whom there is no wrong." [Psalm 92, *New American Bible "Revised Edition" (NABRE)*].**

You can choose other psalms of worship in order to glorify the Lord. The same arrangements that you put in place for entering the Sabbath can also be used for leaving the Sabbath on Saturday night.

To continue, I would say that the Sabbath is first and foremost a day of unity, so make sure you do not enter the Sabbath with a burden (*weight*), which may be something other than that of work. This type of burden is described perfectly in these lines:

*"Therefore, seeing we also are compassed about by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us [...] Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God;*

**Lest any root of bitterness spring up to trouble you, and thereby many be defiled" [Hebrews 12 verses 1 and 15, *21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].**

What we have just read is true for every day and every moment of our lives, but for me it is even more so during the Sabbath, which is the Lord's day of days.

You must make sure that no root of bitterness exists between you and your loved ones during the week, because if this is the case, there will be discord and the very worship that you offer to God will be shaky.

Every kingdom divided against itself will be ruined, and every city or household divided against itself will not stand [*Matthew 12 verse 25*].

So that your group, formed to socialise on the Sabbath, does not find itself weakened in this way, before you enter the Sabbath you need to beg each other's forgiveness.

You may have hurt a loved one without knowing it and in doing so bitterness can germinate unwillingly in their heart. So be humble and ask each other for forgiveness and when it is done forgive each other [*Matthew 5 verses 23-24*], [*Mark 11 verse 25*].

To do otherwise would be to incur a curse. This fact is presented to us in the basic prayer that the Lord left us in [*Matthew 6 verses 9-15 (especially verses 14-15)*].

As we are all sinners and all need the Lord's forgiveness, let us forgive one another. To continue, I would say to you that it is important to never forget that the Sabbath is not an ordinary day like any other, because it is sacred. This is the day that God set aside.

On this holy day we are not to do what we want, but what the Lord wants. Here is what the Lord asks of us in this matter:

**"This is what the Lord says. Protect justice, and carry out righteousness, because my salvation is coming very soon.**

**My righteousness is ready to be revealed. How blessed is everyone who does this, who grabs hold of it, who keeps the Sabbath and does not profane it, who holds back his hand from doing any evil.**

**Therefore, the foreigner who joins himself to the Lord should not say, "The Lord will certainly exclude me from his people."**

**The eunuch should not say, "I am just a dried-up tree." Because this is what the Lord says:**

**“If the eunuchs keep my Sabbaths, choose things that delight me, and take hold of my covenant, then I will set up in my house and on my walls a monument and a name for them that is better than that of sons and daughters. I will give them an everlasting name which will not be cut off.”**

Then the foreigners who join themselves to the Lord, to minister to him and to love the name of the Lord and to become his servants, every one of them who keeps the Sabbath and does not profane it, those who take hold of my covenant — I will bring them to my holy mountain, and I will make them glad in my house of prayer.

Their whole burnt offerings and their sacrifices will be acceptable on my altar. For my house will be called a house of prayer for all the peoples of the world.

This is the declaration of God the Lord, who gathers Israel's dispersed people: **“I will gather still more people to my house besides the ones already gathered.”** [*Isaiah 56 verses 1-8, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

One must sanctify the Lord by going to his house, which is called a *“house of prayer”* for everyone. The Sabbath is therefore not a day to stay at home alone, but it is a day for socialising.

The early followers of Jesus give us an example of this in [*Acts 16 verses 11-15*], where we see them eagerly seeking a place of worship to observe the Sabbath and ending up sharing this sacred time with new friends by a river.

However, at this point, it is important to clarify that the house of prayer is not necessarily a building. It is the place where *“two or three are gathered together in communion and praise the Lord”*.

I will come back to this point later. We cannot act on the Sabbath as we would like at the expense of what God's Word advocates.

It is above all a day of worship dedicated to the Lord and where his Word must be preached. Here Jesus leaves us the example to follow:

*“And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read”. [Luke 4 verse 16, King James Bible].*

We see that although it was the custom of Jesus Christ to keep the Sabbath, he was teaching from God's Word on that day.

Which implies that in return, there were people who listened.

This instruction was only to be given, or received, whilst in the place of worship, but should continue throughout the Sabbath.

This should be a good time for studying God's Word, hymns and prayers, and sometimes even fasting. This is true for the Sabbath, but it is also true for all of the other days of the week, for we must always seek the face of God at all times.

Let us take the example of Daniel who presented himself before the Lord three times a day, every day [*Daniel 6 verse 10*].

In this biblical chapter, you will see that Daniel risked his life, but continued to praise the Lord and to pray *3 times a day*.

For his part, David worshipped the Lord three times a day, morning, noon and night [*Psalms 55 verse 18*].

During the Sabbath, it would be good to have a worship on Friday evenings and once again on Saturday mornings, either with family or loved ones or alone if one does not have the opportunity to meet.

The midday worship service is that which you conduct in your respective churches and you end the Sabbath with a final worship on the Saturday evenings. During these times, you will alternate between spiritual songs, hymns, psalms and meditative texts, etc.

More than any other day the Sabbath should first and foremost be a day of worship, teaching and study.

In the following text, we see that Jesus gave priority to teaching on the Sabbath, because that is the first thing he did when he arrived in *Capernaum*: "*And they went into Capernaum; And straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught.*

**And they were astonished at his doctrine:**

**For he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes".** [*Mark 1 verses 21-22, King James Bible*].

Although Christ was the Lord of the Sabbath, while He was among men, He observed it, and He did this on the day that God appointed.

God's Word calls upon us in [*Ephesians 5 verses 1-2*] to walk as Jesus walked. Just as this was the case for Jesus Christ our Lord, the Sabbath must be the primary day of worship for all of us Christians.

*As we are reunited with our loved ones in fellowship, God's blessing comes upon us, just like a precious oil being poured on our heads, as was the case with Aaron.*

Here is what we can read about the subject: **"Oh, how wonderful, how pleasing it is when God's people all come together as one!**

**It is like the sweet-smelling oil that is poured over the high priest's head, that runs down his beard flowing over his robes.**

**It is like a gentle rain from Mount Hermon falling on Mount Zion. It is there that the Lord has promised his blessing of eternal life".** [*Psalms 133, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

What is presented here is true for any fraternal meeting, whatever the day. Fellowship, whether it is in church, outdoors, or in your home, should be a day of joy especially when there is a Sabbath.

It is important for me to note that the house of the Lord is not a building made with human hands, but a place where living stones gather together.

This symbol represents God's children who individually embody his temple where his spirit lives [*1 Peter 2 verses 4-10*], [*1 Corinthians 3 verse 16*], [*1 Corinthians 6 verses 19-20*].

So when two or three of God's children are gathered in his name, he is in their midst [*Matthew 18 verses 19-20*] and they become his temple.

So the first goal of a Sabbath keeper is to reunite with other brothers and sisters who have the same faith regardless of location.

It could be in a temple, a house or, as was the case with the disciples, by a river.

Bible in hand, we have seen the broad outlines governing the Sabbath, but behind it all, love is the main reason for its existence.

Therefore in the next section we will discover how to magnify Christian love during the Sabbath.

## 5.2 The Sabbath is a bond of Love between men

To introduce this part, I would say that in this century many Sabbath-keepers have lost sight of its true purpose. By doing so they observe it, but it is lifeless worship that they offer to the Lord.

In the following text we – This text presents us with two very distinct facts, but which merge: *Fasting and the Sabbath* – will find essential indications about the observance of the Sabbath: '

*'Is not this the fast that I choose: to loose the bonds of injustice, to undo the thongs of the yoke, to let the oppressed go free, and to break every yoke? Is it not to share your bread with the hungry, and bring the homeless poor into your house;*

*When you see the naked, to cover them, and not to hide yourself from your own kin? Then your light shall break forth like the dawn, and your healing shall spring up quickly;*

*Your vindicator shall go before you, the glory of the Lord shall be your rear guard. Then you shall call, and the Lord will answer;*

*You shall cry for help, and he will say, Here I am. If you remove the yoke from among you, the pointing of the finger, the speaking of evil, if you offer your food to the hungry and satisfy the needs of the afflicted, then your light shall rise in the darkness and your gloom be like the noonday. The Lord will guide you continually, and satisfy your needs in parched places, and make your bones strong;*

*And you shall be like a watered garden, like a spring of water, whose waters never fail. Your ancient ruins shall be rebuilt; you shall raise up the foundations of many generations; you shall be called the repairer of the breach, the restorer of streets to live in.*

**If you refrain from trampling the sabbath, from pursuing your own interests on my holy day; If you call the sabbath a delight and the holy day of the Lord honorable; If you honor it, not going your own ways, serving your own interests, or pursuing your own affairs; then you shall take delight in the Lord, and I will make you ride upon the heights of the earth;**

**I will feed you with the heritage of your ancestor Jacob, for the mouth of the Lord has spoken".** [*Isaiah 58 verses 6-14, New Revised Standard Version Bible (NRSV)*].

When you start to read this text, you find yourself dealing with the basic principles that must form the framework of the fasting approved by God, but when you reach the end of the text you are surprised, because it is the observance of the Sabbath that is emphasised.

This indicates to me that the recommendations of love for one's neighbour and for the Lord found in this text apply equally to fasting and the observance of the Sabbath. And in either case, those who submit to these things are blessed by the Lord. This blessing attached to the Sabbath and/or the fast is a comfort for humanity.

The Sabbath-keepers are here, the repairers of breaches, they are those who make the country a good place to live (*they are those who make life worth living*). By keeping the Sabbath, God's people exude "*a sweet-smelling fragrance*" that serves to restore those around them. This image should also be taken literally.

Indeed, by their presence, God's people can save all those around them even if the latter do not revere the true God. This is what happens in Paul's case, where the entire crew of the ship, in which he was travelling, were saved because of God's blessing and protection upon him [*Acts 27*].

Conversely, if God's children are unfaithful, they bring bad luck to all those around them. This is what happened with Achan [*Joshua 7*] or Jonah [*Jonah 1*].

To continue, I would like to tell you that the text of the prophet Isaiah that we have just seen tells us a lot about the approach to be taken on the Sabbath. However, it is important to note that we can eat on the Sabbath, so this text does not call upon us to fast every Sabbath. Above all the Sabbath is a day to do good to others.

This is the example that Jesus Christ left us in the following text: **"It happened then that Jesus passed through the cornfields on the Sabbath day. His disciples were hungry and began picking the ears of wheat and eating them.**

*But the Pharisees saw them do it. "There, you see," they remarked to Jesus, "your disciples are doing what the Law forbids them to do on the Sabbath." "Haven't any of you read what David did when he and his companions were hungry?" replied Jesus, "— how he went into the house of God and ate the presentation loaves, which he and his followers were not allowed to eat since only priests can do so?*

*"Haven't any of you read in the Law that every Sabbath day priests in the Temple can break the Sabbath and yet remain blameless? I tell you that there is something more important than the Temple here.*

**If you had grasped the meaning of the scripture 'I desire mercy and not sacrifice', you would not have been so quick to condemn the innocent! For the Son of Man is master even of the Sabbath." Leaving there he went into their synagogue, where there happened to be a man with a shrivelled hand.**

**"Is it right to heal anyone on the Sabbath day?" they asked him — hoping to bring a charge against him. "If any of you had a sheep which fell into a ditch on the Sabbath day, would he not take hold of it and pull it out?" replied Jesus.**

**"How much more valuable is a man than a sheep? You see, it is right to do good on the Sabbath day." Then Jesus said to the man, "Stretch out your hand!" He did stretch it out, and it was restored as sound as the other'. [Matthew 12 verses 1-13, J.B. Phillips New Testament Bible (PHILLIPS)].**

Let's finish with this text: *"And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself.*

**And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands on her: And immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work:**

*In them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day.*



**The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him".** [*Luke 13 verses 10-17, King James Bible*].

Jesus, he who became the son of man by taking flesh in Mary [*Luke 1 verses 26-38*], [*John 6 verses 53-54*] is the master of the Sabbath. As such, the attitude he had to the Sabbath during his earthly pilgrimage was to do good and therefore to walk in works of love to the detriment of mens' traditions.

He gives us a beautiful picture of the love and togetherness that should be the basic tenets of Sabbath keepers. He has shown us that the Sabbath and charitable intentions are intrinsically linked. It is important to note that the Sabbath is the quintessential day on which one is called upon to do good, but many Sabbath-keepers favour worship over acts of beneficence and love.

It should never be forgotten that the Sabbath was made to bless mankind, because it was made for man and not the other way around. This is what Jesus himself said: **"And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath"** [*Mark 2 verse 27, King James Bible*].

Like those who lived in Christ's time, spiritual leaders who keep the Sabbath are often too legalistic. For them, the Sabbath goes hand in hand with rigour and formalism, while Jesus teaches us in the Bible that it is a day of love. The purpose of the Sabbath is not for its keepers to become soulless puppets, applying principles out of habit, but it is intended so that acts of love can unite men!

In the rest of this part, I bring you a reflection on how, Bible in hand, you can collectively or individually make your Sabbath days always full of joy and love.

To do this love should lead us to open our homes to each other on Friday nights and on Saturdays in order to rejoice and assemble.

Among other things, the aim was to enter and leave the Sabbath together, but also to fraternise on Saturdays at midday.

What could be better than a meal to strengthen family ties. Fellowship leading to having a meal and studying God's Word strengthens those doing so and wins souls to the Lord and this is what happened with the Lord's early disciples [*Acts 2 verses 44-47*].

We cannot receive guests every day, but we can arrange to do so on the Sabbath. Our homes should become welcoming and bring comfort to others, especially to young people who are new to the faith and to single brothers and sisters.

From personal experience, I know that one of the keenly felt major shortcomings of the Sabbath, for those I have just mentioned, is having a place to go or company to go with to greet the Sabbath on Friday nights, or say goodbye to the Sabbath on Saturday nights.

Those we receive on the Sabbath do not have to be brothers and sisters in Christ, but we should also receive people who do not yet know the gospel. Thus, they will be able to taste how good life in the Lord is! And certainly, that little seed of the Gospel that was sown in their hearts will bear fruit in due time. Love should lead us to make plans to receive our brothers and sisters especially on the Sabbath.

For those who have the means, when you receive guests, don't forget the disadvantaged brothers and sisters! When opening your door on the Sabbath, be careful not to be discriminatory in your choice. Do not only invite those brothers and sisters who have a good social standing or the distinguished, while shunning those whom you might label as less important, for such conduct will subject you to the Lord's displeasure. Here is what we need to understand in this matter:

**"My fellow believers, do not practice your faith in our glorious Lord Jesus Christ with an attitude of partiality [toward people — show no favoritism, no prejudice, no snobbery].**

**For if a man comes into your meeting place wearing a gold ring and fine clothes, and a poor man in dirty clothes also comes in, and you pay special attention to the one who wears the fine clothes, and say to him, "You sit here in this good seat," and you tell the poor man, "You stand over there, or sit down [on the floor] by my footstool," have you not discriminated among yourselves, and become judges with wrong motives?**

*Listen, my beloved brothers and sisters:*

*Has not God chosen the poor of this world to be rich in faith and [as believers to be] heirs of the kingdom which He promised to those who love Him? But you [in contrast] have dishonored the poor man.*

*Is it not the rich who oppress and exploit you, and personally drag you into the courts of law? Do they not blaspheme the precious name [of Christ] by which you are called? **If, however, you are [really] fulfilling the royal law according to the Scripture, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself [that is, if you have an unselfish concern for others and do things for their benefit]" you are doing well. But if you show partiality [prejudice, favoritism], you are committing sin and are convicted by the Law as offenders".*** [James 2 verses 1-9, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

In order not to be discriminatory towards our neighbour, here is what God's Word recommends: *"Is there any encouragement from belonging to Christ? Any comfort from his love? Any fellowship together in the Spirit? Are your hearts tender and compassionate?*

*Then make me truly happy by agreeing wholeheartedly with each other, loving one another, and working together with one mind and purpose. **Don't be selfish; don't try to impress others. Be humble, thinking of others as better than yourselves.***

**Don't look out only for your own interests, but take an interest in others, too. You must have the same attitude that Christ Jesus had".** [Philippians 2 verses 1-5, *New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

To do so is a sign of blessing that will come to us from the Lord [Mark 9 verses 41-42].

To continue, I would like to say to you that the brothers and sisters who do not have sufficient accommodation to receive guests for the Sabbath should not feel sad or embarrassed, as we have seen that it was near a river that the fellowship of the Sabbath was also held.

Of course, because of their finances, not everyone will be able to receive guests within their walls, but everyone can find themselves under a tree, in a park or near a stream. Organise a sabbath outdoors. Whoever makes the invitation should not bear the sole financial cost of this process, but each guest should contribute something.

So organise yourself so everyone knows who is bringing what. People of another category are also often discriminated against in Christian churches. Here, I am talking about single mothers who raise several children on their own. The concern often stems from the children themselves who can be rowdy or in the case of babies constantly crying. There are often times when these children can exasperate many a "good Christian".

*'No, no, no, what is the world coming to! This has led many a 'good Christian' to say in their heart of hearts: When you don't know how to manage your children, you don't bring them to the temple so that they can prevent other people from listening to the sermon!'*

This is a very sad "Christian" mentality, especially when we compare it to what Jesus teaches us in this matter in [Mark 10 verses 13-16, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].

The Lord wants children to be allowed to come to him, whether they be obedient or otherwise, for it is in his house of prayer that they can acquire an unshakeable Christian character.

It's up to more experienced siblings to help these new mothers so that they and their children can feel included and loved. Likewise when you invite guests on the Sabbath, do not be discriminatory by not inviting these courageous mothers with their children.

Moreover do not exclude the brothers and sisters whose faith may be a little shaky even though they may be baptised. They should also be among your guests. We are called to welcome those who are weak in the faith [Romans 14 verse 1], [Romans 15 verses 1-3], which for me is mostly the young baptized.

No matter how much we profess the name of the Lord, if we do not practise works of love we act in vain, for faith by itself, if it is not accompanied by action, is dead [James 2 verses 12-26].

The Lord expects from us, his people, to love each other ardently at all times, as he himself loved us [John 15 verses 12-17].

We must have a brotherly, sincere and strong love. Since we are God's people, working for each other without showing true love leads us to act in vain, for if love is not in us, we are only inanimate objects that work without souls [1 Corinthians 13 verses 1-8].

We must love each other sincerely and support each other.

God is Love, those who serve him must walk in Love [1 *John* 4 verses 16-21], we need to watch over one another and love each other, with a love like a teenager's first love. We are called upon to love one another, so the Sabbath is the perfect day to walk in love. But how can you call a person you meet brother or sister without knowing them?

Unfortunately, too often, Sabbath after Sabbath, we come across brothers and sisters without ever really trying to get to know them and we end up forming small cliques in the church.

By doing so suspicion ends up sowing its seeds and the feeling of rejection then bears its fruit with the weakest of the Divine Master's flock ending up deserting the ranks of these children. So break the ice and go to your brother and sister. Welcome all your loved ones, in the Lord, whether you know them or not. Give newcomers a special welcome, because hospitality should be a second skin for Christians.

This text explains it: **"Let love of your fellow believers continue.**

**Do not neglect to extend hospitality to strangers [especially among the family of believers — being friendly, cordial, and gracious, sharing the comforts of your home and doing your part generously], for by this some have entertained angels without knowing it".** [*Hebrews* 13 verses 1-2, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Leave aside the pride that makes you think that by reaching out to others you will be rejected. And even if that were the case, you would have given others love, which is sure to make its mark.

Perhaps this person, scowling or distant, is in pain and needs your Love, so take a step towards him! In Christ we are called upon to give the best of ourselves for our brothers and sisters and for our neighbours. This is how those who do not know the Lord will know that we are his disciples [*John* 13 verses 34-35].

The selfishness and indifference we show towards our neighbours and especially our brothers and sisters in Christ are not without consequence. On the day of judgment the Lord will ask us to account for the good or the evil that we have done to our neighbour [*Matthew* 25 verses 31-46], [*Galatians* 6 verses 2, 7-10].

The Lord gives us a major clue so that we can know without doubt whether we are walking as he walked and here he is talking about love.

This most poetic word encompasses many realities, but the type of love that we must show for one another is not terrestrial but celestial.

It is a love as same as the Lord's love, because GOD IS LOVE [1 *John 4 verses 7-11, 16, 20-21*].

So as human beings we cannot achieve this fullness on our own and that is why the Lord gives the Holy Spirit to his people, in order to allow us to walk according to the fruits of the Spirit, whose epicentre is love [*Galatians 5 verses 16-18, 22-25*].

The epicentre of all of the fruits of the Spirit is love, for it is the very nature of God that provides it.

It is by spending time in diligent study of his Word, which is Jesus Christ himself [*John 1 verse 1-18*], that we are transformed into his image [*2 Corinthians 3 verses 17-18*] so that we become love ourselves.

Finally, it is important to note that the Sabbath should not be a chore for people, where we should be praying round the clock.

When you have to receive guests that day, you can set up enjoyable and spiritual relaxation activities in the afternoon, which can be the Bible games and quizzes, Bible films and cartoons, etc.

The Christian life is not just about studying God's Word, but there should be relaxation and joy in what we do. The Lord wants to know that we are happy and fulfilled.

Here is what he has on his agenda for us: **"Rejoice in the Lord always : and again I say, Rejoice. [...]**

*Be careful for nothing; But in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.*

*And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus". [*Philippians 4 verses 4, 6-7, King James Bible*].*

Rejoice in the Lord, but nonetheless, with discernment. Pay attention to the type of movie or music you listen to on the Sabbath.

All that is profane must be set aside on the Sabbath and on other days as well. We need to preserve our spirits by being careful what we watch or listen to [*Psalm 101 verses 2-4*].

Salvation is a long process and we must build with the right materials in order to have a strong spirit capable of leading us into the endless times of eternity with Jesus Christ at our side.

### 5.3 Basis for the prohibition of working on the Sabbath and the exceptions

To begin with, I would like to tell you that the Sabbath day should be a day of joy and well-being divorced from the cares of life.

In this stressed world in which we operate material problems come to assail us all of time and end up robbing us of our peace.

If we are not careful, we end up running morning, noon and night all of our lives and descend exhausted into the grave. In order to guard against this, in his great love the Lord set aside a day so that we can rest and regenerate ourselves and so that we can socialise.

The word "*Sabbath*" alone lays the foundations for all of this, for it means rest and sets the tone for what our work life (*or our classes for those in school or studying*) should be like. These basics are summarised in the fourth of the Ten Commandments, which we have already read, but which I am presenting to you again now:

**"Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work:**

**But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God:**

**In it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates:**

**For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it".** [*Exodus 20 verses 8-11, King James Bible*].

*This text calls upon us to stop all labour.*

It is very important to the Lord that all activity be stopped on the Sabbath. It is a day that He set apart so that His people could be in fellowship with Him.

As He has stopped his creative activities, we must also stop ours.

In his Word, the Lord has repeatedly called for the Sabbath not to be desecrated by those of his people who work on that day.

Here is what was happening: **"In those days saw I in Judah some treading wine presses on the sabbath, and bringing in sheaves, and lading asses;**

**As also wine, grapes, and figs, and all manner of burdens, which they brought into Jerusalem on the sabbath day: and I testified against them in the day wherein they sold victuals.**

*There dwelt men of Tyre also therein, which brought fish, and all manner of ware, and sold on the sabbath unto the children of Judah, and in Jerusalem. Then I contended with the nobles of Judah, and said unto them, What evil thing is this that ye do, and profane the sabbath day?*

**Did not your fathers thus, and did not our God bring all this evil upon us, and upon this city? yet ye bring more wrath upon Israel by profaning the sabbath.**

**And it came to pass, that when the gates of Jerusalem began to be dark before the sabbath, I commanded that the gates should be shut, and charged that they should not be opened till after the sabbath: and some of my servants set I at the gates, that there should no burden be brought in on the sabbath day.**

*So the merchants and sellers of all kind of ware lodged without Jerusalem once or twice.*

*Then I testified against them, and said unto them, Why lodge ye about the wall? if ye do so again, I will lay hands on you. From that time forth came they no more on the sabbath.*

*And I commanded the Levites that they should cleanse themselves, and that they should come and keep the gates, to sanctify the sabbath day. Remember me, O my God, concerning this also, and spare me according to the greatness of thy mercy".*  
[Nehemiah 13 verses 15-22, King James Bible].

Sabbath-keepers are to act like God's people in biblical times and all activity is to stop on the Sabbath. We see that plans were in place so that the Sabbath would not be violated.

This was done by taking such extreme action as closing the city gates so that merchants could not go there to sell their goods on the Sabbath.



In this century, we will not be able to do the same, especially as our faith calls upon us to be tolerant.

*Nevertheless we can individually put the conditions in place in our businesses and our homes, allowing all those under our responsibility not to violate the Sabbath when they are within our walls.*

The fourth commandment of the Decalogue, which relates to the Sabbath, emphasises the responsibility and role of parents and therefore especially the head of the family and of employers, who must ensure that those who are under their roofs or in their businesses do not violate the Sabbath.

*The Sabbath commandment states that not only are we and our children to keep it, but any visitors staying under our roof must do so as well. Before we receive a person, we must make sure that while he is under our roof that he is willing not to violate the Sabbath, whether or not he usually observes it.*

*For those who have cattle intended for hard labour, such as for turning millstones, or dogs intended for the herding of your flocks, etc. they too should be at rest on the Sabbath.*

*We must also make plans so that those who work for us cannot be part of the labour force in our homes or in our businesses during the Sabbath.*

**Example:** *I am a self-employed hairdresser and in the past I have had to hire employees who do not observe the Sabbath. While they used to work on that day at other hair salons, the rule with me is that my salon is closed.*

*When I have employees, none of them should work for me on the Sabbath. They are free to “moonlight” elsewhere on that day, as long as they don’t work in my business.*

I would now like to share a thought with you.

*As a Sabbath-keeper you should be clever when looking for work or when training for a career. Some trades, such as mine, are not yet compatible with observing the Sabbath.*

**Example:** *in France, the busy day for hairdressing salons is Saturday (therefore the Sabbath day).*

*Some salons generate the same amount of revenue on Saturdays as they do on all of the other days of the week combined. Therefore the whole team must be there in full strength.*

*Hairdressers who are not self-employed can struggle to find work. Self-employed people like me, while keeping the Sabbath, end up “sticking their tongues out” at the oppression of the laws prohibiting working on Sundays.*

*To learn about my adventures dealing with the Sunday trading laws and the fact that I keep the Sabbath, read the volume II of this book in chapter entitled “Brief career synopsis, philosophy of life and discriminatory oppression”.*

To continue, I will tell you that the Lord calls upon us to be clever. So make sure that your future occupation will allow you not to work on the Sabbath.

As long as the spectre of the Sunday trading laws remains, the career you intend to pursue should not be a cause for future suffering because of the Sabbath.

In certain professions, such as those in the medical field, it is possible to work on the Sabbath day, without violating it, because biblically speaking, you are allowed to do good on this holy day!

Although it is prohibited to work on the Sabbath, nevertheless in accordance with [1 Corinthians 13 verses 1-8] you will observe it in vain if, on this day, love (*charity*) does not guide your every gesture and if you do not treat your neighbour as you would like him to treat you.

Faith without works of love is vain and dead [James 2 verses 14-26].

As was the case with the Pharisees (*who lived in the days of Jesus Christ*), do not be legalists who will not agree to help their neighbour because it is the Sabbath!

**Example:** *Imagine that you are a mechanic and that on the Sabbath you pass through a deserted and disreputable spot.*

*There you see a little grandma whose car has broken down and instead of helping her, you say to yourself, "It's the Sabbath, I not going to be a mechanic today" and you walk by without stopping. By doing this, it is Jesus Christ himself that you will have left by the side of the road, for whatever you will do or will not do for your neighbour, you are doing or not doing it to Jesus [Matthew 25 verse 40 and 45].*

*You will be judged for what you have done or not done to your neighbour [Matthew 25 verses 31-46].*

*But when you act out of love, you have to be careful not to be distracted. If, as a mechanic, you have to repair a car at the start of the week and if you know that this will require you to work on the Sabbath to finish this job, if you accept, it is no longer an act of love, but a violation of the Sabbath!*

Jesus Christ teaches us that it is permitted to do good by helping others during the Sabbath [Matthew 12 verses 9-13], [Luke 13 verses 10-17] but this good deed, when it involves work, should not be something we can do on another day, unless it is an act of love.

For love should be the basis of everything we do on the Sabbath (*as well as every day*) and not legalism.

**Example:** *In the seventeen years I have been a self-employed hairdresser and respecting the Sabbath, I have had to work on some of these days on an ad hoc basis to comb the hair of the bride and groom and their companions and this without my heart condemning me.*

*Usually if I am not working on the Sabbath I make exceptions in these cases.*

*So that this work does not have a monetary value, I always offer any hairstyles made during the Sabbath for free.*

*However, on that day, I do not perform any other service like shampooing or hair care.*

*The clients come on Fridays for this, so on the Sabbath (their wedding day) they arrive so I can just do their hair.*

*Where would the love be if I let a loyal client of mine who is getting married go to the altar without her hair done or wearing her hair tied up with just a hair scrunchie, under the pretext that it is the Sabbath.*

*Marriage and the Sabbath are the two institutions that God blessed before sin entered the world and for me it is permissible for people such as hairdressers, makeup artists, seamstresses (applying the finishing touches), to work in the same way as the pastors who officiate.*

*The Sabbath is a day of worship when God's people are called upon to come together to glorify their Creator and Master.*

*And to do this we need consecrated men and women who officiate. These are pastors and deacons, etc., who are called upon to manage the Lord's affairs.*

*Since, among other things, the pastor's work for which he is paid is to manage God's people on the Sabbath, if God forbade consecrated men and women to work on the Sabbath how could he do it on that day?*

*And how could God be glorified on the Sabbath without deacons ensuring that things run smoothly?*

It is the Lord's will that the officiants serving in the temple on the Sabbath be remunerated, for in the following text God's Word requires that those who bring the gospel should live by it and therefore be remunerated for it:

**"No soldier [Who...?] ever serves in the army and pays his own salary.·No one [Who...?] ever plants a vineyard without eating some of the grapes.·**

**No person [Who...?] takes care of a flock without drinking some of the milk.** *I do not say this·by human authority [from human experience; according to man]; God's law also says the same thing.*

*[For] It is written in the law of Moses: "Do not muzzle an ox when it is working in [treading; threshing] the grain [Deut. 25:4]."* *When God said this, was he thinking only [concerned] about oxen?*

No. He was really [surely] talking about us [for our benefit].

Yes, that Scripture was written for us, because it goes on to say:

*“The one who plows and the one who works in the grain [threshes] should hope to get some of the grain for their work.”*

*Since [If] we planted [sowed] spiritual seed among you, is it too much if we should harvest material things from you [C receive support for ministry]? If others have the right to get something from you, surely we have this right, too [or even more so].*

*But we do not use it [have not exercised this right]. No, we put up with everything ourselves so that we will not keep anyone from believing [put up a hindrance to] the Good News [Gospel] of Christ.*

**Surely [Don't...?] you know that those who work at the Temple [perform priestly temple service] get their food from the Temple, and those who serve at the altar get part of what is offered at the altar.**

**In the same way, the Lord has commanded that those who tell the Good News [proclaim/preach the Gospel] should get their living from this work [the Gospel]". [1 Corinthians 9 verses 7-14, Expanded Bible (EXB)].**

Since the Lord God is not a God of confusion, we need ministers who work in his house on the Sabbath.

If you do not agree with this, know that the Lord does, because as we have seen previously, Jesus and Paul were teaching on the Sabbath and they ask us to walk as they walked.

Just as Jesus officiated in the synagogues on the Sabbath, God's servants are likewise called to officiate in places of worship, and their duties are holy.

*Finally I would like to say to you that the Fourth of the Ten Commandments makes it clear that the works that must not be done on the Sabbath are our servile works.*

*However there are exceptions for cases where love of God and our neighbour are involved, such as in the cases we have seen.*

## 5.4 New works of love that can be done on the Sabbath

To introduce this part, I will tell you that we live in a time when new professions are emerging among God's people. But when I say new, they are not in themselves anything new because they have always existed among God's people, but they have been put aside for centuries.

This is the ministry of the prophets that we are dealing with here. In [Acts 2 verses 16-21], we discover the place which the prophet must occupy within God's people in recent times.

The gift of prophecy is manifested by the fact that God gives dreams and visions to his servants the prophets.

It should be noted that in the Bible, the prophets were consulted in order to interpret the dreams and visions that others had had [Genesis 41 verses 1-36, Bible Second 21], [Daniel 4 verses 1-27, Bible Second 21].

As it was in ancient times, rules will have to be put in place for the handling of the prophets. Among them, their remuneration.

This fact is well represented in [1 Samuel 9 verses 6-10] where we see that those who came to see the prophet Samuel had to either pay him or bring him a present. The prophet is a paid servant of God and as such, like a pastor, he is made to work on Saturdays.

Apart from these kinds of tasks, there are also other missions that prophets will be called upon to conduct for the Lord on the Sabbath, such as when a prophet receives revelations from God on the Sabbath.

In this case, the most important thing is the revelation that God gives him and not the fact that he should not be working on the Sabbath. There is no day or time that is more favourable than another for a prophet to prophesy. He does not choose to have a revelation, but it is God who makes this possible at all times.

This is what happened when the Apostle John was seized (*ravished in spirit*) by the Holy Spirit on the *island of Patmos* and received the visions of the book of Revelations:

*"I John even your brother and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the Isle called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the witnessing of Jesus Christ.*

**And I was ravished in spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as it had been of a trumpet, Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, that first and that last:**

**And that which thou seest write in a book [...]"** [*Revelation 1 verses 9-11, 1599 Geneva Bible (GNV)*].

Before continuing, it is important to never forget that the book of Revelation is a prophetic book and, as such, its symbols are enigmatic. They must be interpreted with the Bible in hand.

The term "*the Lord's day*", which John uses in [*Revelation 1 verse 10*] is a symbol which, when deciphered, teaches us that it was on a Sabbath day that he received the visions of the book of Revelation.

In fact, in the Bible, the only day which is called "*the Lord's day*" and which has been set apart by God is the Sabbath. This tells us:

**"If you refrain from trampling the sabbath, from pursuing your own interests on my holy day; if you call the sabbath a delight and the holy day of the Lord honorable;**

*If you honor it, not going your own ways, serving your own interests, or pursuing your own affairs"* [*Isaiah 58 verse 13, New Revised Standard Version Bible (NRSV)*].

John was commanded that day to write down what he saw. He who is inspired by God and receives revelations from him in the middle of the Sabbath and who writes them down does not therefore violate the Sabbath.

As he writes down what God reveals to him it is a sacred service he is performing just like the pastor who officiates on the Sabbath.

I would even say that this work is more vital than what a pastor would be expected to do in a place of worship on the Sabbath.

*God's revelations to prophets can be a matter of life and death.*

So the prophet must always be available to the Lord. When danger threatens God's people, it is through his prophets that God warns them. This can be seen in the following text:

**"But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all:**

**And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; And so falling down on his face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth".** [1 Corinthians 14 verse 24-25, King James Bible].

In these verses we see how, by their vigilance, the prophets were able to confuse their opponents who had come to harm them.

It is important to understand the vital responsibility that rests on the shoulders of the prophet. In principle, his job is to receive revelations from God, write them down and then deliver them to those to whom they are intended.

Here, amongst other things, is what we can read about it: **"And the Lord answered to me, and said, Write thou the sight, either revelation, and make it plain on tables, that he (may) run, that shall read it. [...]**

**For yet the vision is far, and it shall appear into the end, and shall not lie; if it shall make dwelling, abide thou it, for it coming shall come, and shall not tarry. [...]"** [Habakkuk 2 verses 2-3, Wycliffe Bible (WYC)].

Imagine that we are assembled in church and that in the middle of worship a prophet has a vision in which God informs him that the Church will be in imminent danger, but since the vision is encrypted this prophet must be able to write so that you can understand the symbols.

Since this is a long vision that would require six or seven pages of writing, this prophet said to himself:

*It's the Sabbath, so either way I'm not going to write my vision down. It would be doing my work as a prophet for which I am paid and I would violate the Sabbath. If he did this, God's people would certainly be in peril.*

*Make no mistake, it is not by writing his vision in the middle of the Sabbath that the prophet will not have done God's will, but by not doing his work as a sentinel. Like Ezekiel, the prophet is a sentinel that God uses to warn others.*



*If he does not warn the one to whom God sends him, he will be held accountable because of the blood of those whom he did not warn and God will strike this prophet down for it [Ezekiel 3 verses 17-19].*

The prophet or the prophetess is called upon to constantly remain vigilant, because God does nothing without having previously revealed his secret to them. Here's what's happening:

**"Surely the Lord God will do nothing, unless He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets".** [*Amos 3 verse 7, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

Before continuing it is important to note that it is in dreams and/or visions that the Lord speaks most commonly to these prophets [*Numbers 12 verses 6-8*].

God makes his revelations to his prophets and by extension to human beings suddenly. Here's how it occurs: **"I will suddenly speak against a nation, and against a kingdom, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy it. If that nation against which I have spoken, shall repent of their evil, I also will repent of the evil that I have thought to do to them. And I will suddenly speak of a nation and of a kingdom, to build up and plant it.**

*If it shall do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice: I will repent of the good that I have spoken to do unto it".* [*Jeremiah 18 verses 7-10, Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition Bible (DRA)*].

God not having changed, since there is neither change nor shadow of variation in Him, the prophets are called upon to write down the revelations received from the Lord as was the case with the Apostle John or Habakkuk. Since this task of writing everything down is vital, it should be done regardless of the day the prophet receives the revelations from the Lord.

In the Bible we have special cases where the prophets did not have to stop their works on the Sabbath, because they were directly connected with God and received new revelations from him to write down. As we have seen, this was the case for the apostle John, but also for Moses as we shall see in the following text:

**"And the LORD said unto Moses, Hew thee two tables of stone like unto the first: and I will write upon these tables the words that were in the first tables, which thou brakest. And be ready in the morning, and come up in the morning unto mount Sinai, and present thyself there to me in the top of the mount.**

**And no man shall come up with thee, neither let any man be seen throughout all the mount; neither let the flocks nor herds feed before that mount. And he hewed two tables of stone like unto the first;**

**And Moses rose up early in the morning, and went up unto mount Sinai, as the LORD had commanded him, and took in his hand the two tables of stone. *And the LORD descended in the cloud, and stood with him there, and proclaimed the name of the LORD. [...]* And the LORD said unto Moses, **Write thou these words: For after the tenor of these words I have made a covenant with thee and with Israel. And he was there with the LORD forty days and forty nights; he did neither eat bread, nor drink water.****

*And he wrote upon the tables the words of the covenant, the ten commandments". [Exodus 34 verses 1-5, 27-28, King James Bible].*

Here we find Moses who, for the second time, had to stay forty days and forty nights with the Lord, to receive instructions from Him. Apart from the Ten Commandments, which the Lord wrote with his finger, the entire law that bears his name was written by Moses.

It is important to note that as God revealed his will to him, during those forty days and forty nights, Moses could not disconnect from the Lord even for one day.

He did not stop to eat, drink, or sleep, for he was to receive continual revelations from the Lord which he was to write down.

In order to demonstrate that Moses' fellowship with the Lord was uninterrupted, God's Word specifies that he remained before the Lord forty days and forty nights. To learn more about the ministry of the prophet, I invite you to read my book, to be published, entitled "*Prophetic Guide, A.B.C of the New Prophet*".

We have just considered the work of the new prophets vis-à-vis working on the Sabbath, but it is not just their profession that will need to be classified as a new activity among God's people.

We are now going to discover a ministry for which those dedicated to it can in some cases work on the Sabbath, namely those who write books for the Lord. This ministry has always existed, the proof of which being the Bible, which is made up of writings compiled by God's servants who have worked for centuries. This informs us:

**"Then the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, after that the king had burned the roll, and the words which Baruch wrote at the mouth of Jeremiah, saying, Take thee again another roll, and write in it all the former words that were in the first roll, which Jehoiakim the king of Judah hath burned. [...]**

**Then took Jeremiah another roll, and gave it to Baruch the scribe, the son of Neriah; Who wrote therein from the mouth of Jeremiah all the words of the book which Jehoiakim king of Judah had burned in the fire: And there were added besides unto them many like words".** [*Jeremiah 36 verses 27-28, 32, King James Bible*].

The place of sacred writings has always been of great importance among God's people. Here is what it was like in Jesus' time: *"And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: And, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor;*

**He hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down.**

*And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son?"* [*Luke 4 verses 16-22, King James Bible*].

We see how hearts can be touched through a text written by one of the Lord's servants.

It is important to understand that the ins and outs of selling books written by God's children are not in the Bible, because when the Bible was written such a profession did not exist. The sacred writings were on parchments. Only the well-to-do like the Ethiopian eunuch had them [*Acts 8 verses 26-39*].

Otherwise, you had to go to synagogues to hear them being read. In this century, things have changed, as we can now self-publish our own books. The ability to write for the Lord resided with His people, but until then those like me who have received the vocation or the gift of writing are required by some Sabbath-keeping religions not to sell or dedicate their books on the Sabbath.

Yet the ministry of such writings has a special place among God's people on the Sabbath. For me, there are three types of books that need to be distinguished in order to know whether they can be sold on the Sabbath or not:

*The first group represents those who present the gospel. In the second, I would include books on health, wellness, and a healthy lifestyle. And the third group will include all other types of literature such as crafts, novels, textbooks, etc.*

*I would say to you that the books of the third group, not being spiritual, and not touching on health or healthy lifestyle cannot be sold in the middle of the Sabbath because they represent servile works. However, under certain conditions, the other two groups can be sold during the Sabbath. Let me explain.*

*The owners of a Christian store who keep the Sabbath cannot keep their business open on the Sabbath because they must also rest. By doing so they will not be able to sell books on that day.*

*Take another case, that of an author or a writer, who holds seminars based on the themes of one of his books.*

*The content can refer to herbal medicine, or the gospel, or the effects of nutrition on the body, or the damage certain substances can cause to the body. He will have the right to sell his books on the Sabbath during his seminar.*

*On the other hand, when he will not have a seminar, being called upon to respect the Sabbath rest, he will not be able to sell books.*

In order for you to better understand what I am saying, we must first of all recall the purpose of God's servants and to the type of plan that he is asking us to put in place in order to win him hearts.

In order to do this let's read the following:

*"In the presence of God and of Christ Jesus, who will judge the living and the dead, and because he is coming to rule as King, I solemnly urge you to preach the message, to insist upon proclaiming it (whether the time is right or not), to convince, reproach, and encourage, as you teach with all patience". [2 Timothy 4 verses 1-2, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)].*

God's Word must be preached on every occasion, good or bad. I will give you a specific example where this practice can be applied:

*Imagine being called to hold a seminar in a Christian church that does not worship the Sabbath and you have to introduce the theme of this book to them on a Sabbath day. What would be best in order to reach more people?*

*Should you just come and preach? Or should you preach and sell this book at the same time so that families and friends, of those who are present and those who are not present, can also know the truth so that it can set them free?*

*There is no particular day for God's Word to be heard, whether it be verbally or with a book, pamphlet, or whatever. Some people are the Lord's pearls who seek him and thirst for his Word, even though they do not yet know him.*

*This was the case with the Ethiopian eunuch [Acts 8 verses 26-39] who, once he received the gospel, was baptised and happily continued his Christian journey.*

*I will present you with a modern day version of his story so that you can realise the importance of spreading the gospel, verbally or with a book, at anytime whether it is the Sabbath or not:*

*Imagine in this century that such an eminent man, who was one of Candace the Queen of Ethiopia's ministers was passing through Europe for a day. And that he comes across one of my seminars based on the theme of this book, which is held in the middle of the Sabbath and that he hears words that touch his heart, but due to his busy schedule, he did not have time to stay and listen to my whole seminar.*

*What would be best for the advancement of the Lord's work? Should he walk away frustrated and "hungry"? Or should he buy this book that he will devour during the long hours he will spend on the plane flying home?*

We must never forget that the primary purpose for which the Lord has consecrated us as a people is to win him souls. We must accomplish this mission on every occasion, good or bad. Here is how the apostle Paul acted: **"For though I was free from all men, I brought myself under bondage to all, that I might gain the more.**

*And to the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, not being myself under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law;*

**To them that are without law, as without law, not being without law to God, but under law to Christ, that I might gain them that are without law. To the weak I became weak, that I might gain the weak: I am become all things to all men, that I may by all means save some. And I do all things for the gospel's sake, that I may be a joint partaker thereof".** [1 Corinthians 9 verses 19-23, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Here the apostle Paul declares that it was as if he did not keep the law himself, in order to save those who did not keep the law, while in reality he did keep it (*Jesus' law*).

We often forget that, regardless of the day, the mandate the Lord has given us is to save souls in and through Jesus Christ. Speaking of saving souls on the Sabbath, let's consider what's going on here: "*And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there who had his hand withered. And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him.*

*And he saith unto the man that had his hand withered, Stand forth. And he saith unto them, Is it lawful on the sabbath day to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to kill?*

*But they held their peace. And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved at the hardening of their heart, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and his hand was restored". [Mark 3 verses 1-5, King James Bible].*

Here Jesus gives us an example to follow by healing this sick man. The primary purpose of the Sabbath is to do good especially in the area of health. Many of those who say that one should not sell books dealing with God's Word or healing plants or presenting the basics of good health on the Sabbath are the same ones who use this text to justify that all those who are medical workers may work on the Sabbath. And I agree! Their profession is intended to relieve pain so it is legitimate that they can work on this day.

However, would our physical body be more important before God than our spiritual body? I do not believe that! This is not what the Lord teaches us. Jesus declares here that it is permitted to do good on the Sabbath and that it is also permitted to save a soul on that day.

But is it more important to save that person's physical body or his or her soul? Here is what we can read about this corporeal body of ours: "*It is the spirit that quickeneth; The flesh profiteth nothing:*

*The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life". [John 6 verse 63, King James Bible].*

Let's continue with this: "**For we know that when this earthly tent we live in is taken down (that is, when we die and leave this earthly body), we will have a house in heaven, an eternal body made for us by God himself and not by human hands.**

**We grow weary in our present bodies, and we long to put on our heavenly bodies like new clothing. [...] So we are always confident, even though we know that as long as we live in these bodies we are not at home with the Lord".** [*2 Corinthians 5 verses 1-2, 6, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

Let's end with this text: **"I tell you, as friends of mine, that you need not be afraid of those who can kill the body, but afterwards cannot do anything more.**

**I will show you the only one you need to fear — the one who, after he has killed, has the power to throw you into destruction! Yes, I tell you, it is right to stand in awe of him".** [*Luke 12 verses 4-5, J.B. Phillips New Testament Bible (PHILLIPS)*].

This corporeal body of ours is only a tent intended for our earthly life. But once Christ returns we will be changed in an instant and have an incorruptible body [*1 Corinthians 15 verses 49-58*].

So do you think that when Jesus speaks of saving a person he only speaks of his corporeal body? Christ's very mission allows us to answer this question. This is what the Lord says about Himself:

**"This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief".** [*1 Timothy 1 verse 15, King James Bible*].

Let's finish with this text: **"And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: For I came not to judge the world, but to save the world".** [*John 12 verse 47, King James Bible*].

The Lord declares that he has come to save the world! Jesus Christ didn't only come to heal the physical illnesses, but especially the spiritual ones. By doing so the Sabbath is a day of love meant to do good and save souls. I remind you that in order to be saved we must first hear the gospel [*Romans 10 verses 8-11*] and then we must believe and finally we must be baptised [*Mark 16 verses 15-16*].

Therefore, by all means, we must bring God's Word to all of the earth either by preaching alone or also by selling books, while we preach for the Lord and we must do this whether or not it is the Sabbath day.



If a doctor or nurse has the right to be paid for working on the Sabbath, so can a Christian author who holds a seminar and sells books on that day. It is important to understand for whom God's Word is primarily intended in order to be able to understand the importance of spiritual books in the Lord's work.

To do this, let's read this: *"And it came to pass, as he sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with Jesus and his disciples.*

*And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Teacher with the publicans and sinners?*

**But when he heard it, he said, They that are whole have no need of a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what this meaneth, I desire mercy, and not sacrifice: For I came not to call the righteous, but sinners".** [Matthew 9 verses 10-13, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

He who lives without God is sick with the deadly virus of sin and he must be given the remedy of remedies. Here is the medicine that God gives us to heal this type of disease:

*"Who has believed [confidently trusted in, relied on, and adhered to] our message [of salvation]? And to whom [if not us] has the arm and infinite power of the Lord been revealed?*

*For He [the Servant of God] grew up before Him like a tender shoot (plant), And like a root out of dry ground;*

*He has no stately form or majestic splendor That we would look at Him, Nor [handsome] appearance that we would be attracted to Him. He was despised and rejected by men, A Man of sorrows and pain and acquainted with grief;*

*And like One from whom men hide their faces He was despised, and we did not appreciate His worth or esteem Him. But [in fact] He has borne our griefs, And He has carried our sorrows and pains;*

**Yet we [ignorantly] assumed that He was stricken, Struck down by God and degraded and humiliated [by Him]. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was crushed for our wickedness [our sin, our injustice, our wrongdoing];**

**The punishment [required] for our well-being fell on Him, And by His stripes (wounds) we are healed". [Isaiah 53 verses 1-5, Amplified Bible (AMP)].**

Jesus Christ, who is God's Word, is the remedy of remedies! He who carries the gospel is required to bring healing to those who are spiritually sick. So when it comes to winning souls to Christ or acting in accordance with an act of love the legislative limit set by law can be extended to areas hitherto taboo, such as the promotion of a book in the middle of the Sabbath.

Those who sell spiritual or health books do a very important job, because a book can have a rather long lifespan and can continue to distil the knowledge of the Lord from generation to generation over centuries. By doing so their authors must be able to work on the Sabbath, while still being paid for what they do.

This is already happening with pastors who are paid for their work which partly happens on the Sabbath. Therefore, when we consider the observance of the Sabbath, we must take into account the new territories and possibilities presented by self-publishing.

On the other hand it is imperative to pay attention to abuses that could arise and lead some to misinterpret my statements:

*I remind you that the books I designate as being suitable for display and sale on the Sabbath are those about health or the gospel. If you have written other books that do not cover these topics, you cannot present them or sell them on the Sabbath.*

*If I had written a book about the basics of masonry (example: how to build a wall in ten lessons) or how to make macrame, etc., I would not present them on the Sabbath with my other books.*

To continue, I would like to tell you that we often act like hypocrites and by doing so some will want to judge me for what I just said. However, let me present you with a strong image:

*Imagine that your child is seriously ill and although you have seen several doctors already you realise that her condition is getting worse.*

*Then a friend tells you that another little girl had the same symptoms and that her parents found the solution in a book.*

*But he no longer has their contact details although he has remembered the name of the book. The problem is it is 8 a.m. on a Sabbath day and you are a Sabbath-keeper, What are you going to do? Are you waiting for life to slip away from your little angel's body hour by hour, while you wait for the sun to set before you go and buy the life-saving book?*

*Or will you buy it right away? The answer to this question validates the legitimacy of those selling their health or spiritual books on the Sabbath! Love should be the foundation of everything we do and health is priceless.*

*Just as this little girl's life cannot be made dependent upon keeping the Sabbath, so there are souls who are on the decline and need to know that God loves them. Imagine a person who buys a book in the middle of the Sabbath and is touched by reading it and who, like the thief on the cross, accepts Christ as his Saviour and ends up dying that very evening.*

*Will the one who sold this spiritual book be condemned by the Lord and lose access to eternal life because of it?*

*To fully understand the actions of Jesus which led him to scandalise the Pharisees because of the fact that he did good deeds during the Sabbath, we must never forget that the law has a neutraliser which is "Mercy, therefore love".*

Here is what the Bible tells us about it: **"Indeed, if you fulfill the royal law prescribed in the Scripture, Love your neighbor as yourself, you are doing well. [...]**

*"Speak and act as those who are to be judged by the law of freedom. For judgment is without mercy to the one who has not shown mercy. **Mercy triumphs over judgment!**". [James 2 verses 8, 12-13, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].*

Love and mercy are the keys that neutralise the law. As soon as I perform works of mercy that lead me to love my neighbour as myself this act triumphs over judgment. By doing so when I hold a seminar on a Sabbath day and sell a book intended to save a soul through Christ or which teaches him to better manage his body, it is a work of love and mercy that I do. This act therefore triumphs over judgment!

So much so that as it is God who justifies me who can condemn me? This is how the Lord presents this approach in his Word:

*"What then shall we say to all these things? If God is for us, who can be [successful] against us? He who did not spare [even] His own Son, but gave Him up for us all, how will He not also, along with Him, graciously give us all things? Who will bring any charge against God's elect (His chosen ones)?*

**It is God who justifies us [declaring us blameless and putting us in a right relationship with Himself]. Who is the one who condemns us? Christ Jesus is the One who died [to pay our penalty], and more than that, who was raised [from the dead], and who is at the right hand of God interceding [with the Father] for us".** [*Romans 8 verses 31-34, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

This is why when I hold a seminar or preach on the Sabbath, I sell my books without my conscience accusing me of anything! As we have seen, Jesus gives us the example of what we must do to bring God's Word to those who do not yet know it. We have to go to them.

We must show mercy to them and not act like Pharisees or legalists who forget the price that Christ paid for a soul (*his death on the cross*).

The important thing is to save these souls regardless of the *day or the place!* Through our sermons or our books, the Lord gives us opportunities to reach people who would never have listened to us in another setting other than the one in which we met them.

To do this, like Paul we must go to places that until now were forbidden to us or in situations, which until now were unknown to us

This is what we discover in [*Acts 17 verses 16-34*], where Paul finds himself in a high place of idolatry and while his first feeling was one of irritation and therefore disgust with what was being practised there, he put aside his feelings in order to bring the gospel and save souls.

Those who came to these places would never have ventured into the walls of a synagogue, for we see how most of them ended up drifting away because of what Paul had taught them.

Nevertheless sincere souls have heard his preaching and have chosen to serve the Lord. As children and servants of God, we must go and find the Lord's lost sheep. We must go to this multitude of people who do not yet know God. This can be done by going out to meet them in new areas, even on the Sabbath, if the occasion arises.

Furthermore, we have seen that Paul declared that in order to win souls for the Lord, he lived as if he did not keep the law even though he was an observer of it. This implies that he also acted as if he did not keep the Sabbath, even though he was keeping it.

The goal being to go everywhere to win souls for the Lord. Yet it is this same Paul who states this: **"Do not be unequally yoked with unbelievers [do not make mismated alliances with them or come under a different yoke with them, inconsistent with your faith].**

*For what partnership have right living and right standing with God with iniquity and lawlessness? Or how can light have fellowship with darkness? What harmony can there be between Christ and Belial [the devil]? Or what has a believer in common with an unbeliever? What agreement [can there be between] a temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God;*

*Even as God said, I will dwell in and with and among them and will walk in and with and among them, and I will be their God, and they shall be My people". [2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-16, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].*

In any event, the opportunity to make disciples for the Lord must prevail. If it is on the Sabbath that you will be able to reach them by promoting your spiritual books or those on health, go ahead with full conviction. In this century the same scenarios exist as in Paul's day.

There are always people who will never go to a temple, yet we must take the gospel to them. At all times and on all occasions, whether good or not, Paul was a clearer of new ground who sowed the good seed of the gospel.

In God's Word he asks us to be his imitators and to walk as he walked. By doing so we must find new ground in order to reach new souls for the Lord. To do this, in recent years, it has now been possible to reach as many people as possible through books that God's children have written! When I consider the work the Lord gets me to do in this century as a Christian author I realise how fortunate I am.

My tool is a computer, thanks to which I do everything related to my books including the cover and layout and their sale through websites. It means that thanks to new techniques all of those who have something to say can write a book. For a long time writing and editing a book was the preserve of publishing houses. Since then, things have changed a lot, because with the popularisation of the internet, *Mr. and Mrs. Anybody* can now write and market a book.

It is thanks to these new possibilities that I was able to self-publish my books without being in a publishing house. At the same time this enables you to have the opportunity of reading my books and I thank you! With a good book one can win many souls to the Lord.

It can be the good seed that, when sown in the heart, bears fruit for the Lord exponentially. But in order to reach certain people you have to go into their territory during the times when you know you can meet them, as Paul did.

Many who do not yet know the plan of salvation manifested through Jesus Christ and who are not yet connected with the Lord will never come to a temple or a Christian church. Nevertheless they can buy a book in a heartbeat that conveys God's Word to them.

This book is not necessarily spiritual, but being written by a child of God draws the eyes of its reader to the Lord. As the Lord's servants our writings should be aimed at winning souls for the Lord, even when the subject of our book is not the gospel.

Usually when a reader likes an author's style he will be interested in reading all or part of his literary work. As a child of God our goal is to win hearts to the Lord and this goal is even greater when we have received the gift of writing from him.

For those, like me, to whom the Lord grants the honour of having the gift of mastering the written word, conveying the gospel under any circumstances or in any type of book must become a second skin and a conditioned reflex. For my part and in my opinion, one of my books which is not a spiritual book meets these criteria well.

This book is “*How to properly maintain and care for the hair of black and mixed-race women (Volume 1, with colour images)*”.

Above all it presents all of the diseases of the hair and scalp suffered by black women. Nevertheless, in several of these parts I draw the reader's thought to God.

Thus, without it being a spiritual book, in this way I sow a small seed of the Gospel and I have the assurance that it will bear fruit in Jesus Christ [*Mark 4 verses 3-9*], [*1 Corinthians 3 verses 6-10*].

We do not know when a fruitful territory will be within our reach, so let's sow the Gospel in the hearts of all those whom God will put before us or to whom he will give the opportunity to read one of the books that He enables us to write. We cannot enjoy the blessings of the Lord without sharing them with others.

Hezekiah had to learn this lesson the hard way. We find in [*Isaiah 38*] that as God announced his imminent death to him, he wept profusely and the Lord had mercy on him and healed him.

So that he would have a strong sign of the divine promise, the Lord made the sun turn back ten degrees for him. This sign certainly did not go unnoticed by other nations who did not know God [*Isaiah 39*].

It was an unexpected opportunity for Hezekiah to glorify the Lord by recounting all that he had done for him. But that is not what happened, as he showed all these treasures and did not glorify the Lord and he was struck down for it.

The situations that God creates so that we can speak of him are golden and often unique opportunities, which is why we must always be ready to bring the flame of the gospel back to our neighbour.

Finally, I would like to tell you that God's Word teaches us that in the final days before Jesus' return knowledge will increase and many will know the truth and will be purified and absolved [*Daniel 12 verses 8-10*].

We are in these final days and the world is continually changing.

By doing so as the Lord's servants new mission fields open up before us. We therefore cannot work without finesse. It can be difficult with just words to show a Christian who does not keep the Sabbath, that he is wrong, because he believes that being under God's grace he does not need to. Before he's convinced you might spend hours there and start bickering before he really starts to listen to you.

While reading a book like this that deals with the subject he can take his time to analyse each idea, Bible in hand, to see if it is Biblical or not. If the truth contained in the book reaches his heart, the result is that he can be won to Christ.

We must never forget that, even if we are presenting the truth, we are faced with people who believe they are right when they practise the error. To reach them, we have to adapt to them, so that they become receptive to what we have to say to them. The work of the Lord is still fallow and must be developed so that they return to seek his people [*Matthew 28 verses 18-20*], [*Luke 10 verse 2*].

The Lord has made me one of his reapers and the tool he gives me is my skill as an author and the fruit he gives me to bear is evident in the books he inspires me to write.

In addition I do seminars, among others, on the Sabbath and I also do writing sessions in bookstores on that day. In this same context I also sell my books on hair diseases to those who are interested.

To do otherwise would be to miss people who will not come to a church, but who in a heartbeat or through shared empathy between us will acquire one of my books. The repercussions of reading this book can be a whole host of newborn people who will be won to the Lord.

The gospel must be conveyed every day and under all circumstances. Regardless of the motivation of the one who speaks the gospel, it must be conveyed. Finally, it is important to note that in this chapter I have not done an exhaustive study of the Sabbath. I have presented the broad biblical outlines so that new observers are not lost.

Now that you have the foundations to enable you to observe him, it is time that he can find the place in your hearts that God always intended for him.

From now on, do not worry about criticism that you may encounter just because you keep the Sabbath. You must unashamedly take a stand for the Lord choosing to keep the Sabbath.

To those of you who have strayed know that God's Word assures us that times of ignorance are not taken into account for one who repents [*Acts 17 verses 30-31*].

Whoever turns away from his sin and walks in the renewal of life obtains mercy through Jesus Christ [*Ezekiel 33 verses 11-20*], [*1 John 1 verse 7 to 1 John 2 verse 2*].



## 6 Satanic Counterfeit Sabbaths

To begin this chapter, I would like to tell you about the plans that the devil has put in place for our eternal destruction.

The first part of the devil's aspirations over the centuries was to encourage God's people to reject his holy law (*especially the Sabbath commandment*). It was through his servant the little horn that he laid the foundations of this work involving the desacralisation of God's law at the cost of the blood of countless innocents.

But cautiously, he reserved a *second* plan for himself in case many of us end up accepting that a Sabbath day exists.

So working through his servants he set up a *safeguard* in this century by establishing doctrines that the Sabbath must be observed, but according to human standards to the detriment of God's precepts.

*The Lord is a God of order.*

He cannot accept any worship that we bring to Him according to our criteria to the detriment of the guidelines He has established.

By doing so cause-and-effect reactions inevitably make those acting in this way reprehensible before God's law and lead them to be rejected by Him [*Matthew 7 verses 21-23*].

The following sections are not intended to show you that the Sabbath still has a reason to exist among God's people, because we have already established that.

What follows is intended to arm you against doctrines that seem plausible, because they call upon you to live your faith with a certain veneer of holiness, but which have no biblical foundations.

So that you may not fall into this type of trap set by the devil, we will study several facts associated with the Sabbath and which can be misunderstood by God's people, causing them not to observe the Sabbath at all or to observe it incorrectly.

## 6.1 Can the Sabbath day be swapped with another day?

To begin this part, I would like to explain that for many the Sabbath has been abolished.

The latter declare that they observe the Sabbath, but as they live under God's grace, for them they are free to choose any day of the week to observe it, according to their desires and moods.

I had a conversation with an evangelical pastor regarding the day of rest that the Lord instituted and he told me that he has no problem with the Sabbath and that he has no problem observing it.

Nevertheless for him, since Jesus redeemed us, there is no particular Sabbath day. By doing so he considers that living under Christ's grace, the Sabbath day is every day. All he has to do is choose the one that suits him and he has faith that God will accept it. He added that the Lord does not expect the Sabbath day to be on Saturday.

First of all, I have already demonstrated to you in the chapter entitled "*Biblical guidelines for keeping the Sabbath*" that the Lord has established one day, the seventh, to be His Sabbath day.

Thus, it is important to understand that one cannot choose any day of worship at will and declare that it is consecrated to God as being the Sabbath day and believe that by this gesture this day will be approved by the Lord as his holy Sabbath day.

*The Lord would deny himself if he did so!*

By doing so one cannot choose any day of worship at will and declare it to be the Sabbath since it is reserved for God. Are you aware that the day that has been established as a memorial or anniversary of a thing or a person cannot be changed at will, under pain of suffering.

**Example:** *Imagine that your birthday is on the 25th of January and that you expect to have a celebration as has been the case every year since you were first conceived at the cellular level to taking your first breath. On your 50th birthday, you find yourself alone, without a phone call or a card.*

*All day long, you tell yourself that there is a surprise in store, because your loved ones act as if they have forgotten! So you're getting ready to experience a **surprise birthday party** in the evening. You're not fooled, but you're ready to play **“surprise”!** But the hours fly by and nothing happens!*

*And here you are at dawn on the **26th of January** with a host of dark circles under your eyes. You haven't slept a wink all night for fear of missing your party.*

*Then on the **evening of the 26th**, you go home, still downcast that your surprise party did not happen on the night before and **there, surprise!!! The party's here!***

*Your relatives found that the **25th** was no longer suitable for your birthday and preferred to decide that from now on it would be on the **26th**.*

This story seems improbable because, out of love and respect, you can't imagine yourself for a single moment acting like this with one of your loved ones *and vice versa*.

Yet this is what many of you do with the Lord when you revere Sunday instead of the Sabbath or when you choose to observe it on any day, under the guise that every day is a Sabbath day.

Just as we cannot change at will the day established to honour a loved one, neither can we establish another day as the basis for the Lord's Sabbath rest. Unfortunately many are disrespectful of these facts. In doing so they have chosen to transgress

God's Word, rejecting Saturday as the Sabbath day, in order to observe it on a day of their own choosing. With this in mind, just as the devil did when he sought to tempt Jesus, they seek in vain to establish their doctrine at the expense of God's Word by seeking legitimacy by presenting biblical texts that they will have perverted.

Those who say that they are no longer under the law and in fact choose any day to observe the Sabbath often feed their theory with two biblical texts. The first is this one:

**"Now on the first day of the week (Sunday), when we were gathered together to break bread (share communion), Paul began talking with them, intending to leave the next day;**

*And he kept on with his message until midnight. Now there were many lamps in the upper room where we were assembled"* [Acts 20 verses 7-8, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

The second text that is also used indicates that: **"And continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, they ate their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, praising God and having favor with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved"**. [Acts 2 verses 46-47, *21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

These two texts allow us to discover, among other things, that Paul and the disciples held a holy convocation on Sunday. We also note that the disciples used to meet every day to socialise. This determines that they did not have a particular day to praise God. But does this imply that they did not observe the Sabbath by giving it greater importance than the other days? To find out, I invite you to read this text:

*"Setting sail therefore from Troas, we made a straight course to Samothrace, and the day following to Neapolis; and from thence to Philippi, which is a city of Macedonia, the first of the district, a Roman colony: and we were in this city tarrying certain days.*

**And on the sabbath day we went forth without the gate by a river side, where we supposed there was a place of prayer;**

**And we sat down, and spake unto the women that were come together.** *And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, one that worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened to give heed unto the things which were spoken by Paul.*

*And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us"*. [Acts 16 verses 11-15, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

The disciples featured in this story are Paul and Silas. To understand this, we must read again from [*Acts 15 verse 36*].

While they had been in the city of Philippi for several days, the plans they made to gather together were for the Sabbath. Notice that this text does not indicate that they sought to meet on another day.

On the contrary, we see how imperative it was for Paul and his companion to find a place to observe the Sabbath.

So much so that the service took place on the banks of a river. This is what every Christian should do on this holy day!

One would think that gathering together to observe the Sabbath in this way was an isolated episode for Paul. *It is not!*

The following texts show us the contrary: **"Every Sabbath day Paul went to the synagogue and talked with both Jews and Greeks, trying to persuade them to believe in Jesus"**. [*Acts 18 verse 4, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Let's finish with this text: *"Now when they had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews:*

**And Paul, as his custom was, went in unto them, and for three sabbath days reasoned with them from the scriptures, opening and alleging that it behoved the Christ to suffer, and to rise again from the dead;**

**And that this Jesus, whom, said he, I proclaim unto you, is the Christ.** *And some of them were persuaded, and consorted with Paul and Silas; and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few"*. [*Acts 17 verses 1-4, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Paul did not observe the Sabbath sporadically, but it was his custom. On that day he did not stay at home, but socialised by going to places of worship, where he taught.

Among the disciples of Jesus Christ, Paul was not a special case as far as the observance of the Sabbath was concerned.

Here is what the disciples did:

**"And the apostles and elders** *came together for to consider of this matter. [...] And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken unto me [...]*

**For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day".** [*Acts 15 verses 6, 13, 21, King James Bible*].

For Christianity observance of the Sabbath has been uninterrupted. The Sabbath has continued to be observed since the time Moses was instructed to do so by God. The only change Jesus made in the Sabbath commandment was to readjust it by making it, like all the other commandments, a directive of love.

I would like to point out that we saw that Paul and the disciples were observing the Sabbath and teaching on that day. These facts that we have just seen show us that long after the death, resurrection and ascension of our Lord Jesus Christ, there is still a Sabbath day.

The desacralisation of the Sabbath was not done by Jesus Christ or His disciples, but by the little horn, whose symbol represents the works of the Papacy throughout the centuries. To discover this reality, read *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of "the Eternal God" or of the "sun god"*".

*In addition, we have seen that in the New Testament Paul left us very specific teachings concerning the Sabbath.*

*However, it is important for me to note that the following text was established after the first coming of Christ, therefore after everything had been fulfilled.*

Let's review what he says about this: **"Let us fear therefore, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest, any one of you should seem to have come short of it. For indeed we have had good tidings preached unto us, even as also they:**

**But the word of hearing did not profit them, because it was not united by faith with them that heard.**

**For we who have believed do enter into that rest;**

*Even as he hath said, As I sware in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest:* **Although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. For he hath said somewhere of the seventh day on this wise, And God rested on the seventh day from all his works;**

*And in this place again, They shall not enter into my rest.*

**Seeing therefore it remaineth that some should enter thereinto, and they to whom the good tidings were before preached failed to enter in because of disobedience, he again defineth a certain day, To-day, saying in David so long a time afterward (even as hath been said before), To-day if ye shall hear his voice, Harden not your hearts.**

*For if Joshua had given them rest, he would not have spoken afterward of another day.* **There remaineth therefore a sabbath rest for the people of God.**

**For he that is entered into his rest hath himself also rested from his works, as God did from his.**

**Let us therefore give diligence to enter into that rest, that no man fall after the same example of disobedience".** [*Hebrews 4 verses 1-11, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

In order that there may be no ambiguity concerning the validity of the Sabbath, not only did Paul observe it, but in this text that we have just seen he also reaffirmed that there is a Sabbatical day of rest established on the seventh day and he calls upon God's people not to be rebellious, but to observe this day of rest.

If the Sabbath were no longer to be observed, he would have told us, because he declares that he has announced all of God's teachings to us without hiding anything. This is what he said:

**"[you know] how I did not shrink back in fear from telling you anything that was for your benefit, or from teaching you in public meetings, and from house to house, solemnly [and wholeheartedly] testifying to both Jews and Greeks, urging them to turn in repentance to God and [to have] faith in our Lord Jesus Christ [for salvation]. [...]**

*"And now, listen carefully: I know that none of you, among whom I went about preaching the kingdom, will see me again.*

**For that reason I testify to you on this [our parting] day that I am innocent of the blood of all people. For I did not shrink from declaring to you the whole purpose and plan of God".** [*Acts 20 verses 20-21, 25-27, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

In order to know whether you should keep the Sabbath as Paul did, giving it a special importance that is not given to other days, it is useful to consider what he says in the following text:

**"You must follow my example, as I follow the example of Christ. I am proud of you, because you always remember me and obey the teachings I gave you".** [*1 Corinthians 11 verses 1-2, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

Paul asks us to walk as he walked and to remember his instructions as he gave them. Imitate Paul as he did Christ. Here is Jesus' custom as far as the Sabbath is concerned:

*"Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: Repent ye, and believe the gospel. [...] And they went into Capernaum ;*

**And straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught. And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes".** [*Mark 1 verses 14-15, 21-22, King James Bible*].

Here again we see His behaviour on the Sabbath: *"And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.*

*And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all. And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: And, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read".* [*Luke 4 verses 14-16, King James Bible*].



Jesus had the custom of observing the Sabbath, so we must walk as he walked and in turn observe the Lord's Holy Sabbath, which is the memorial of his work of creation.

We must have an anchor for our faith. The surest is none other than Christ. Concerning our faith and our conduct here is what God's Word says: **"I loved you as the Father loved me. Now remain [abide] in my love.**

**I have obeyed [kept] my Father's commands, and I remain [abide] in his love. In the same way, if you obey [keep] my commands, you will remain [abide] in my love.**

**I have told you these things so that you can have the same joy I have [my joy may be in you] and so that your joy will be the fullest possible joy [might be complete]".** [*John 15 verses 9-11, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

Let's also read this supplementary text: **" Be ye therefore imitators of God, as beloved children;**

**And walk in love, even as Christ also loved you, and gave himself up for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for an odor of a sweet smell".** [*Ephesians 5 verses 1-2, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Jesus Christ asks us to be his imitators and says he kept his Father's commandments and calls upon us to do the same with his commandments. Even though we can meet every day to socialise and glorify the Lord, the Sabbath is a day apart where we must bear witness to the Lord.

Just like Paul and the disciples, as soon as you can come together to fraternise on a weekday to revere the Lord, do so, but above all, seek to glorify God with your loved ones on the Sabbath day.

Finally, I would like to say to you that it is also time that the veil of confusion be lifted regarding the legitimacy of meeting on Sunday:

*Some Sabbath observers I have met claim that Protestants who worship on Sunday are observing a Catholic doctrine. By doing so this ideology declares that those who do so attract condemnation from the Lord.*

*I take exception to such statements, because to gather to praise the Lord on Sunday is not an offence to God, since Paul and the disciples also gathered on that day.*

*Proof of this is the Seventh-day Adventist Church, the most renowned of the Christian churches that keep the Sabbath and reject the Catholic Sunday rest, but nevertheless it meets on Sunday evenings. Personally, I have had to meet many times with my beloved evangelical brothers and sisters, in order to fraternise, during their Sunday service of worship.*

*I do not feel guilty about this, because like Paul and the disciples, apart from the fellowship meetings I can attend that are held on other days of the week, I observe the Sabbath.*

*One of the distinctive signs of its observance that I personally follow is that I do not work on that day.*

*This is how I can socialise on Sunday without being an "outlaw (a transgressor of God's Law)!"*

To you who are Protestants and who worship God every day, know that God is pleased with these days that you offer Him.

Nevertheless in spite of your devotion, you will be rejected on the great day of our Saviour's return, if you do not also observe the Sabbath which He instituted as a sign that ensures that you are recognised as one of His people.

It is time that those who do this, by observing Sunday or any other day, to the detriment of the Lord's holy Sabbath day, know that, like those presented in [Matthew 7 verses 21-23] they are inviting condemnation on themselves and that Jesus, when He returns, will reject them.

If you do not worship God on the Sabbath day, but choose to continue to observe Sunday, in the eyes of all, you will take away from Him, the glory He deserves as the creator and by doing so you will glorify Satan.

## 6.2 The Sabbath and jet lag

We will now consider another point concerning the Sabbath, the ways in which it is applied due to the time difference. The purpose of this section is to enlighten those who have read the study by Jehovah's Witnesses entitled "*Should the Sabbath Be Observed?*".

In case it hasn't been translated into English, this brochure was published in France under the title of "*Faut-il observer le sabbat?*".

I have carefully read this study which, among other things, portrays the Sabbath as obsolete. In short, according to them, all days would be equal because of Jesus Christ's sacrificial death.

The *brochure* also stressed that God gives us the freedom to observe or not to observe the Sabbath, for the worship that is reserved for him, on any particular day we wish and this without violating his word. We have just demonstrated that this part of the thesis is nonsense. This automatically discredits it.

*But just for fun, let's continue!*

In this study of Jehovah's Witnesses, we also find an amalgamation between the Sabbath and the sabbaths. The author uses biblical texts which speak of the sabbaths, which was part of the ceremonial law and presents them as being the Sabbath.

*Oops... it made me think and smile. Hmm... I said to myself: he is dangerous, because he does not master his sword very well... SOS, remove it from his hands, because he risks injuring himself... Worse, he risks injuring someone else.*

*Well... I, good soul that I am, cannot resist helping him. Therefore, Bible in hand and in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, I am going to break his failing sword.*

Let's continue. There is also a mixture between the Sabbath and the sabbaths. This study highlights the fact that the Sabbath was given to the Jews, not the Christians.

The latter would be exempt from the Sabbath because of the redemption of humanity through Jesus Christ's death.

In this booklet the fulfilment of the law appears in pictorial form, such as a contract for the construction of a house that would bind a contractor and his client. Once the building has been completed, this contract becomes obsolete, as it has no purpose.

I will not return to this point with you either, because in the chapter entitled "*Biblical guidelines for keeping the Sabbath*", I have already introduced you to some elements, Bible in hand, that will help you to refute all of these theses. Throughout this work, I have also provided you with the proofs that the Lord's Sabbath remains.

However, only one point in this study by *Jehovah's Witnesses* really caught my attention and challenged me. This is because of the type of approach it uses to reject the Sabbath. It concerns the inability of Sabbath observers to be able to keep the Sabbath at the same time.

In support of this thesis, a scholarly graph is presented showing various countries such as *Fiji, Samoa, Tonga and Niue*. The aim is to present the (*imaginary*) international date line that runs from north to south along the *180° meridian* and passes largely through the *Pacific Ocean*, as proof that the Sabbath no longer exists in this century.

To support this thesis, an example is taken between two points on the globe, *Fiji and Samoa*. When it is Sunday in *Fiji*, it is still Saturday in *Samoa*. So the Sabbath observers in these two points of the globe cannot keep their day of rest reserved for God at the same time.

This study left me delighted, enriched and amazed. Delighted, because I know that what the Eternal God (*Jehovah*) has inspired me to learn concerning the Sabbath is the truth. No tangible argument in this thesis of the Jehovah's "*Witnesses*" has provided me with any biblical evidence that could contradict my writings.

Enriched, because through their writings I have had the opportunity to learn the basis of this religion's faith in this matter.

It was also a delight for me because, thanks to their own words, I was now going to be able to take apart their anti-Sabbath doctrine piece by piece. And finally I was amazed by this demonstration based on the time zones! One must concede to the author that he has uncovered an indisputable fact, that the Sabbath cannot be observed simultaneously in Fiji and Samoa! Does this fact make the Sabbath obsolete? To answer this question, let us consider the following text:

**"And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.**

*And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galilaeans? And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?*

**Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judaea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.**

*And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this? Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine. But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judaea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words:*

*For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel" [Acts 2 verses 5-16, King James Bible].*

Here we find a gathering of Jews from *various parts of the world.*

These facts were true in the time of Jesus Christ's apostles and disciples. First of all, what we have just read establishes the fact that at that time *the Jewish nation was already scattered to the four corners of the globe.* Secondly, we know that from the time the law was promulgated and up to the present day, the Jews have observed and are observing the Sabbath despite the fact that the problem of time zone differences has always existed.

This same problem also occurred from the time when the people of Israel were scattered far and wide to other nations that dominated them. In these cases, some of the people remained and others were expatriated. This is what we see in [*Jeremiah 52 verses 12-34*], where some people remained in Jerusalem, but others were deported to Babylon.

As we can see, the Jews in biblical times were not in the same time zone, yet they observed the Sabbath!

While the observance of the Sabbath is refuted today by *Jehovah's Witnesses*, they nevertheless acknowledge, in the small brochure quoted above, that its observance was something that God approved of until the coming of Jesus.

This statement alone negates and contradicts the time zone argument. Yes, because if Jehovah's Witnesses consider that in the Old Testament the Sabbath was agreed by Jehovah, he, the Eternal God, this implies that it was so despite the time difference.

This means that already at that time, not all Sabbath observers could observe the Sabbath at the same time.

In conclusion, I would say that nowhere in the Bible is there any mention of any obligation to observe the Sabbath simultaneously over the entire surface of the Earth. The God we serve is not crazy, because he knows how time is measured on earth.

He knows that when one part of the Earth is illuminated by the Sun, the other part is illuminated by the Moon.

His order to observe the Sabbath does not imply a fixed time, such as "6 p.m. on Friday", but the rule he established is that the Sabbath begins on Friday at sunset and ends on Saturday at sunset.

This reference is the one that gives the starting point of the Sabbath everywhere. Therefore do not let the great ancient dragon who is the devil deceive you with these parodies of doctrine intended to defile the Sabbath. Looking back on this study of *Jehovah's Witnesses*, one thought comes to mind:

*When you can't establish a solid thesis, you seek to touch the intellect with skillfully constructed "fables". This type of doctrine is easily disassembled with a wave of the hand.*

*This is what I have just demonstrated to you, since it is not based on any tangible truth or any biblical precept.*

*Once confronted with the reality of God's Word, such theses cannot stand up to scrutiny and as is the case here, they end up vanishing into thin air.*

### 6.3 Difference between the Sabbath (fourth of the ten commandments) and the sabbaths (commandment of the ceremonial law)

In my opinion, one of the great misconceptions that have formed around *the Sabbath* is the misunderstanding of what *the Sabbaths* are.

First of all, it is important for me to clarify that the term “*Sabbath*” is translated as “*rest*”.

It is therefore a period of cessation of activities. In the Bible, the same word is used to describe two different and distinct things:

*First of all we have the Sabbath which is the fourth of the ten commandments and which, as we have seen, will remain at least as long as the earth exists, for this is what Jesus said concerning God's Law [Matthew 5 verses 17-20].*

*In God's Word there are also “sabbaths” and these days are part of the ceremonial celebrations that were fulfilled and revoked by Jesus Christ.*

In this section we will study the difference between these two types of Sabbaths. In order to understand the purpose of the celebrations, feast days (*sabbaths*), etc., we need to read the following text:

*“Begin the music [Lift up a psalm]: Play [Sound; Give] the tambourines [68:25; 149:3; 150:4; Ex. 15:20]. Play pleasant music on the harps [...the pleasant/sweet harps] and lyres.*

**Blow the trumpet [ram's horn] at the time of the New Moon [the month; a monthly religious festival], when the moon is full, when our feast begins. This is the law [statute; ordinance;**

**Requirement] for Israel; it is the command [judgment] of the God of Jacob [v. 1].**

**He gave [set] this rule [decree; testimony] to the people of Joseph [reference to the northern tribes] when they went out of the land of Egypt [the exodus; Ex. 12–15].**

*I heard a language [tongue] I did not know, saying [God now speaks]:*

*"I took the load off [removed the burden from] their shoulders; I let them put down their baskets [Their hands were removed from the baskets]". [Psalm 81 verses -5, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

As we can see, *the celebrations, feast days, etc.* were ordinances established in God's law. What is described here cannot be part of the Ten Commandments because it mentions the Moon and the trumpets being sounded. So this is the law that the Lord gave to Moses.

In addition, these specific details, which are presented, teach us that we are dealing with the ceremonial law. As far as the Sabbaths are concerned, here is what we can read about them:

**"And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, In the seventh month, in the first day of the month, shall ye have a sabbath, a memorial of blowing of trumpets, an holy convocation.**

**Ye shall do no servile work therein: but ye shall offer an offering made by fire unto the LORD.** *And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Also on the tenth day of this seventh month there shall be a day of atonement: it shall be an holy convocation unto you;*

*And ye shall afflict your souls, and offer an offering made by fire unto the LORD. And ye shall do no work in that same day:*

*For it is a day of atonement, to make an atonement for you before the LORD your God. For whatsoever soul it be that shall not be afflicted in that same day, he shall be cut off from among his people.*

**And whatsoever soul it be that doeth any work in that same day, the same soul will I destroy from among his people. Ye shall do no manner of work:**

**It shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations in all your dwellings. It shall be unto you a sabbath of rest, and ye shall afflict your souls: in the ninth day of the month at even, from even unto even, shall ye celebrate your sabbath. [...]**

**Beside the sabbaths of the LORD, and beside your gifts, and beside all your vows, and beside all your freewill offerings, which ye give unto the LORD". [Leviticus 23 verses 23-32, 38, King James Bible].**



This other text presents us with other aspects of *the sabbaths*:

*"And the LORD spake unto Moses in mount Sinai, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye come into the land which I give you, then shall the land keep a sabbath unto the LORD.*

**Six years thou shalt sow thy field, and six years thou shalt prune thy vineyard, and gather in the fruit thereof;**

**But in the seventh year shall be a sabbath of rest unto the land, a sabbath for the LORD: Thou shalt neither sow thy field, nor prune thy vineyard. That which groweth of its own accord of thy harvest thou shalt not reap, neither gather the grapes of thy vine undressed:**

*For it is a year of rest unto the land. And the sabbath of the land shall be meat for you; for thee, and for thy servant, and for thy maid, and for thy hired servant, and for thy stranger that sojourneth with thee.*

**And for thy cattle, and for the beast that are in thy land, shall all the increase thereof be meat. And thou shalt number seven sabbaths of years unto thee, seven times seven years; and the space of the seven sabbaths of years shall be unto thee forty and nine years".** [*Leviticus 25 verses 1-8, King James Bible*].

As you can see, here when the sabbaths are mentioned, it was either a day or a month or a year when a rest was to be observed by the people of Israel.

Those sabbaths had nothing to do with the week when the Lord created the universe, which ended with a divine Sabbath day.

As I have already presented, the sabbaths were days that God granted to his people under the Old Covenant and were provisions of the ceremonial law and part of the Law of Moses.

In doing so, as we have seen, with the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ the entire ceremonial part of the Law of Moses was repealed and with it the ceremonial sabbaths.

*In contrast*, the Sabbath was established by God to crown the work of His creation, which He did in six days, and rested on the seventh day instituting it as His day of rest. For this reason, the Lord blessed and sanctified the Sabbath and therefore made it holy thereby making it eternal in nature.

He did no such thing for the sabbaths, which were periods that were destined to disappear. The sabbaths were feast days for sacrifices to God, which could fall on any day, because they were calculated on the basis of a given number of days.

**Example:** *In one of the texts above we saw that the first day of the seventh month was a day of rest to be observed on the sabbaths. Since the dates on the calendar change every year, the 14th of February, 2013 was a Thursday, but the 14th of February, 2014 fell on a Friday and therefore these festive “sabbaths” could not fall on a fixed day.*

This is one of the first points that differentiates “sabbaths” from the “Sabbath”. While the sabbaths cannot take place on a fixed date in time, the Lord has decreed in [Exodus 20 verses 8-11] that the Sabbath is the seventh day. In addition sabbaths were mostly rest periods established during celebrations such as the “Feast of the Tabernacles”.

These feasts were also part of the ordinances of the law of Moses which was to herald the coming of Jesus and which became null and void when he fulfilled them through his divine sacrifice.

That is why, as we have already seen in the following text, from now on the sabbaths, the days, the ceremonial feasts etc., are presented as “a shadow of what was to come”:

*“So don’t let anyone judge you about eating or drinking or about a festival, a new moon observance, or sabbaths. These religious practices are only a shadow of what was coming — the body that cast the shadow is Christ”. [Colossians 2 verses 16-17, Common English Bible (CEB)].*

Now that these points have been recorded, we can continue our study. As we have seen, when you do your research in your Bible for the term “sabbaths” be careful because the word “Sabbath” means “rest”. So that sometimes when the Lord speaks of several seventh-day Sabbaths, He uses this word in the plural.

So in these texts, although you will read the term “sabbaths”, it is the fourth commandment of the Decalogue that he is referring to.

Let us take an example from this text: *"And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Speak thou also unto the children of Israel, saying, Verily my sabbaths ye shall keep:*

*For it is a sign between me and you throughout your generations; That ye may know that I am the LORD that doth sanctify you. Ye shall keep the sabbath therefore; for it is holy unto you: Every one that defileth it shall surely be put to death:*

*For whosoever doeth any work therein, that soul shall be cut off from among his people. Six days may work be done; but in the seventh is the sabbath of rest, holy to the LORD: Whosoever doeth any work in the sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death.*

**Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the sabbath, to observe the sabbath throughout their generations, for a perpetual covenant.**

**It is a sign between me and the children of Israel for ever: for in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and was refreshed".** [Exodus 31 verses 12-17, King James Bible].

Although at the beginning of this text, the Lord begins by introducing the term *"my Sabbaths"*, by reading the rest of the verses, we understand that it is not *"ceremonial sabbaths"* that are presented here because, further on in the text, He specifies that it is the **seventh-day Sabbath**, the fourth of the ten commandments, that is being referred to.

And at the end of this text, the Lord reminds us that it is because the Sabbath is the memorial of his creation that he wants his people to observe it. To be able to differentiate between the Sabbath and the sabbaths, one only needs to discover in what context the word is used.

Finally, as you have seen, I would like to tell you that at no time can the sabbaths be put on the same pedestal as the Sabbath.

The sabbaths have been repealed and anyone who observes them dishonours the Lord. In contrast to this fact, whoever does not observe the seventh-day Sabbath takes away from the Lord the glory due to Him as the Creator of all things, and those who do so dishonour Him.

## 6.4 The nonsense of the observance by modern-day Christians of the ancient Jewish holidays

As we have just seen, the sabbaths, like the other ceremonial feast days, were fulfilled and repealed by Jesus.

Despite this, a Christian religion that keeps the Sabbath of the seventh-day, "*the Church of the Living God*", which disseminates these ideas by means of a powerful propaganda organisation (*called "the world to come"*), leads souls astray by continuing to advocate that these ancient festivals are still active.

This religion places particular emphasis on the obligation to observe these feast days, but especially the Feast of the Tabernacles. In order to discover the ceremonial feasts mentioned here, let us read this:

*"Then Solomon offered burnt offerings unto the LORD on the altar of the LORD, which he had built before the porch, Even after a certain rate every day, offering according to the commandment of Moses, on the sabbaths, and on the new moons, and on the solemn feasts, three times in the year, even in the feast of unleavened bread, and in the feast of weeks, and in the feast of tabernacles". [2 Chronicles 8 verses 12-13, King James Bible].*

Let's finish with this: **"They kept also the feast of tabernacles, as it is written, and offered the daily burnt offerings by number, according to the custom, as the duty of every day required;**

*And afterward offered the continual burnt offering, both of the new moons, and of all the set feasts of the LORD that were consecrated, and of every one that willingly offered a freewill offering unto the LORD". [Ezra 3 verses 4-5, King James Bible].*

Before continuing, in order to have a better understanding of what burnt offerings were, which had to be made during the Feast of the Tabernacles, as well as during the other ceremonial celebrations of the law of Moses, read this: **"There were four tables made of cut stone for the burnt offering [Lev. 1:1–17]. [...] On these tables the priests put their tools which they used to kill animals for burnt offerings and the other sacrifices". [Ezekiel 40 verse 42, Expanded Bible (EXB)].**

In these texts, we discover that the Feast of the Tabernacles, as well as the sabbaths, the New Moons, and the Feast of Unleavened Bread were festivals prescribed by the Law of Moses.

The first rule of the Feast of the Tabernacles was to make animal sacrifices, and the same was true for the other ceremonial feasts.

We understand that this type of ceremony cannot continue in this century, because all animal sacrifices have been outlawed since Jesus Christ died for us on the cross. As we have seen, the atoning death of Jesus abolished the acts of the law that was instituted in the first covenant [*Hebrews 10 verses 1-17*].

By doing so we have also already seen that those who now offer an animal sacrifice before the Lord are an abomination before Him [*Isaiah 66 verse 3*].

Furthermore, if, in spite of what we have just seen, you still have doubts about the durability of the ancient Jewish feasts, if you really want to know whether or not they are still active (*especially the Feast of Tabernacles*) you should not lose sight of what we have already studied in [*Colossians 2 verses 16-23*].

The Lord teaches us that *the old ceremonial feasts are repealed. Do not allow any more people who, feigning piety, convince you to take a step back in time to practise the old customs that are already obsolete.*

By following such doctrines you will lose your crown of righteousness. Never forget that God does not lie and cannot deny Himself or renounce what He has immutably established [*Numbers 23 verse 19*], [*1 Samuel 15 verse 29*].

Thus, when He declares that the ceremonial celebrations, feast days and sacrifices have been fulfilled by Jesus Christ and are repealed, they are indeed repealed.

In my opinion, what we have just seen is already more than sufficient to demonstrate the nonsense of the doctrine of *The Church of the Living God* and “*the world to come*” who preach that we must continue to observe the Feast of the Tabernacles as well as the ancient Jewish feasts.

But since the Lord is not a God of half measures, we are going to continue, Bible in hand, to dismantle this doctrine stone by stone, until it's nothing but dust.

To continue our study on the nonsense of the Feast of the Tabernacle, in this century, it is important to know the other ritual that accompanied it. To do so, let us read this text:

**"And they found written in the law which the LORD had commanded through Moses, that the sons of Israel should dwell in tabernacles in the feast of the seventh month, and that they had to be heard and to issue a proclamation in all of their cities and in Jerusalem, saying:**

*Go up into the mountain and bring olive branches, and wild olive branches and myrtle branches and palm tree branches and branches of bushy trees, to make tabernacles, as it is written". [Nehemiah 8 verses 14-16, Bible Daby (translated into English from the original text)].*

Apart from the sacrifices that were to be made during the Feast of the Tabernacles, the people were to provide themselves with branches of bushy trees to make tabernacles.

This symbol was given so that the descendants of the Israelites would know that the Lord had made their ancestors live in tents when they came out of slavery in Egypt.

Here is what we can read about it: *"The Lord spoke to Moses, "Tell the Israelis that starting the fifteenth day of this seventh month is the week-long Festival of Tents to the Lord. [...]*

*"On the first day, take branches from impressive fruit trees, branches from palm trees, boughs from thick trees, and poplars from the brooks. Then you are to rejoice in the presence of the Lord your God for seven days.*

**[...] In order for your future generations to know that the Israelis lived in tents when I brought them out of the land of Egypt. I am the Lord your God."** [Leviticus 23 verses 33-34, 40, 43, International Standard Version Bible (ISV)].

Before continuing, it is important to note that each rite of the ceremonial law always had a prophetic meaning that was to herald the sacrificial coming of Jesus. This is what we see with the Jewish Passover, which was instituted at the end of the period of slavery that God's people suffered under the Egyptians.

Here is its purpose in the ceremonial law: "*Observe the month of Abib, and keep the passover unto Jehovah thy God; [...] And thou shalt sacrifice the passover unto Jehovah thy God, of the flock and the herd, in the place which Jehovah shall choose, to cause his name to dwell there. Thou shalt eat no leavened bread with it;*

*Seven days shalt thou eat unleavened bread therewith, even the bread of affliction; For thou camest forth out of the land of Egypt in haste:*

*That thou mayest remember the day when thou camest forth out of the land of Egypt all the days of thy life. And there shall be no leaven seen with thee in all thy borders seven days; neither shall any of the flesh, which thou sacrificest the first day at even, remain all night until the morning". [Deuteronomy 16 verses 1-4, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

What we have just seen was a prelude to the real Jewish Easter. Here is how it is presented: "*[...] Don't you know that a little yeast leavens the whole lump? Purge out the old yeast, that you may be a new lump, even as you are unleavened. For indeed Christ, our Passover, has been sacrificed in our place.*

*Therefore let's keep the feast, not with old yeast, neither with the yeast of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth". [1 Corinthians 5 verses 6-8, World English Bible (WEB)].*

Leavened bread was forbidden during the Passover as it symbolised sin. Now this ordinance is no longer valid, because Jesus Christ came to bring the truth to men, that delivers from sin. Moreover, the Jewish Passover was given by the Lord to herald the divine sacrifice of Jesus.

Jesus having taken His place as the sacrificial lamb for the Passover, this ceremony became null and void. The same applies to all of the rites of the ceremonial law. Now that this brief interlude has come to an end, let us return to our study. To continue I would like to say that in order to understand what this edifice that the people had to erect with branches represented, during the feast of tabernacles, we will find out in this text what the tabernacle was used for:

*"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God". [Revelation 21 verse 3, King James Bible].*

The tabernacle is the place where God's people can dwell with him.

These tabernacles that the Israelites formed during the Feast of the Tabernacles foreshadowed the coming of God's true house on earth, His holy heavenly temple. Here's how this building is presented:

**"Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his body.**

*When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said". [John 2 verses 19-22, King James Bible].*

The true tabernacle of the Lord, his holy temple, is none other than Jesus Christ himself. By doing so, all those who unite with him (*and become his children*) form a spiritual house.

Here's what happens to them: **"Come to Him [the risen Lord] as to a living Stone which men rejected and threw away, but which is choice and precious in the sight of God.**

**You [believers], like living stones, are being built up into a spiritual house for a holy and dedicated priesthood, to offer spiritual sacrifices [that are] acceptable and pleasing to God through Jesus Christ". [1 Peter 2 verses 4-5, Amplified Bible (AMP)].**



This building, which was to be built at the Feast of the Tabernacles, and where the people were to take shelter, represented the work that Jesus would come to do for us. That is why he says that God has formed a human body for him, through which we now have access to God through his flesh. Here is what God's Word says about this:

**"Therefore, when Christ enters into the world, He says, "Sacrifice and offering You have not desired, But [instead] You have prepared a body for Me [to offer]; In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin You have taken no delight.**

*[...] Therefore, believers, since we have confidence and full freedom to enter the Holy Place [the place where God dwells] by [means of] the blood of Jesus, by this new and living way which He initiated and opened for us through the veil [as in the Holy of Holies], that is, through His flesh" [Hebrews 10 verses 5-6, 19-20, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

In addition, the final realisation of the branches that were to be joyfully carried during the Feast of the Tabernacles was thus implemented: *"Now this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken through the prophet, saying, Tell ye the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, Meek, and riding upon an ass, And upon a colt the foal of an ass.*

*And the disciples went, and did even as Jesus appointed them, and brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their garments;*

***And he sat thereon. And the most part of the multitude spread their garments in the way; and others cut branches from the trees, and spread them in the way.***

**And the multitudes that went before him, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.**

*And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was stirred, saying, Who is this? And the multitudes said, This is the prophet, Jesus, from Nazareth of Galilee". [Matthew 21 verses 4-11, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

The branches were harvested to herald Jesus' first coming and were offered as a sacrifice to His glory. From then on these two symbols of festive branches and a house made of plants found their purpose on the cross. Having served their purpose they were no longer needed.

Only one symbol must now be given so that we can remember Christ's divine sacrifice and that is the Lord's Supper.

This is what Jesus himself says: *"For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: This do in remembrance of me.*

**After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: This do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come".** [*1 Corinthians 11 verses 23-26, King James Bible*].

Whenever you continue to practise the ceremonies of the Law of Moses, such as the Feast of the Tabernacles, you despise the holy and divine sacrifice that Jesus Christ has already made once and for all for us. It is time that those who have chosen to serve the Lord and Him alone and especially those who have already taken a stand for the Sabbath, understand that by continuing to practise these archaic rites they are once again making themselves slaves.

Here is what God's Word says on this matter: *"But in the past, since you didn't know God, you were enslaved to things that by nature are not gods. But now, since you know God, or rather have become known by God, how can you turn back again to the weak and worthless elements?*

**Do you want to be enslaved to them all over again? You are observing special days, months, seasons, and years. I am fearful for you, that perhaps my labor for you has been wasted".** [*Galatians 4 verses 8-11, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

Let us continue by mentioning that we have certainly debunked the doctrines of men that this religion, *The Church of the Living God* and “*the world to come*”, proclaims in contradiction of God’s Word and which we know to be the devil’s doctrines.

We could have stopped there, but we will leave them no possible recourse, because to establish their thesis they use a text which is open to misinterpretation and confusion. We will therefore study it, Bible in hand. Here is the text on which they rely:

*"And this shall be the plague wherewith Jehovah will smite all the peoples that have warred against Jerusalem:*

*Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their sockets, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth. [...] And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations that came against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, Jehovah of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles.*

**And it shall be, that whoso of all the families of the earth goeth not up unto Jerusalem to worship the King, Jehovah of hosts, upon them there shall be no rain.**

*And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, neither shall it be upon them; there shall be the plague wherewith Jehovah will smite the nations that go not up to keep the feast of tabernacles.*

**This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all the nations that go not up to keep the feast of tabernacles".** [*Zechariah 14 verses 12, 16-19, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

As you read this text, the first impression is that the Feast of the Tabernacles still remains, because the Lord has not yet fulfilled the first part of the prophecy by striking down the nations that attacked Jerusalem. We have not yet seen these nations come to worship before God to celebrate the Feast of the Tabernacles.

Would those who teach that the Hebrew feasts and sabbaths still have a biblical justification be right?

To determine this, we need to know which Jerusalem is mentioned here as the place where the nations must come to worship God. To do this, we will read the following text: *"Which things are an allegory:*

*For these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.*

*For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. **But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all**". [Galatians 4 verses 24-26, King James Bible].*

To better grasp this prophetic image of the Jerusalem "from above", let us read the following text: *"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; And there was no more sea.*

**And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.**

**And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God". [Revelation 21 verses 1-3, King James Bible].**

As you can see, the prophetic Jerusalem is not a literal place, but is a spiritual place. Prophetically speaking, Jerusalem is where men come to commune with God and is therefore a spiritual place of prayer.

It is God's tabernacle with men. To understand where this Jerusalem is located, let us read the following text: **"Our fathers worshiped on this mountain, but you Jews say that the place where one ought to worship is in Jerusalem [at the temple]."**

**Jesus replied, "Woman, believe Me, a time is coming [when God's kingdom comes] when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem.**

*You [Samaritans] do not know what you worship; we [Jews] do know what we worship, for salvation is from the Jews. **But a time is coming and is already here when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit [from the heart, the inner self] and in truth; for the Father seeks such people to be His worshipers.***

**God is spirit [the Source of life, yet invisible to mankind], and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.”** [*John 4 verses 20-24, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

The heavenly Jerusalem is now made manifest through the divine sacrifice of Jesus, who through his flesh gives access to the Father to everyone who makes a covenant with him [*Hebrews 10 verses 19-23*].

Thus God's worshippers no longer need a given place to worship Him, because these true worshippers must now worship Him in spirit and truth. Those who have made a covenant with Jesus now have access through Him to the house of the Eternal Father thrice holy.

In Christ, there is no longer any need for a place of worship in order to enter into fellowship with the Lord God, for this is what the Bible says: **"Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are".** [*1 Corinthians 3 verses 16-17, King James Bible*].

Each member of God's people individually becomes the temple of the Lord where the Holy Spirit reigns (*in Jesus Christ*). And they are also individually a stone of the body of Christ who is Himself, as we have already seen, the ultimate temple of God.

Here's how the solidarity of those who come together to be united in the name of the Lord is presented: *"Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*

**Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father who is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them".** [*Matthew 18 verses 18-20, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

As we have seen, the unity of many Christians intent on praising or praying to God makes them a house of prayer without any need for walls, because every one of God's children is a stone in the building.

We further discover in [Isaiah 56 verse 7] that God's house, his tabernacle with men, is called a “*house of prayer*” for all peoples.

The unity of all those who bind themselves to the Lord in Christ makes the Lord's house his tabernacle. They become new stones of his house. These stones originate from all of the peoples from all of the nations where praise and prayers are offered to the Almighty.

Therefore, the Jerusalem mentioned in [Zechariah 14 verses 12-19] is *spiritual*. From now on, we must understand the prophetic reason for the *Feast of the Tabernacles* mentioned here.

To understand this image that God uses to present future events, when this ceremonial requirement has already been abolished, we must never lose sight of the fact that God often uses things of the past to present those to come. In the following text we discover this fact:

**"That which is has already been, and that which will be has already been, for God seeks what has passed by [so that history repeats itself]".** [Ecclesiastes 3 verse 15, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Prophetic language often uses images of people or objects from the past to portray characteristics of more present-day things.

In the following text we discover this fact: **"The vision concerning Judah and Jerusalem that Isaiah son of Amoz saw [...]** Hear me, you heavens! Listen, earth! For the Lord has spoken:

**"I reared children and brought them up, but they have rebelled against me. [...]** *Woe to the sinful nation, a people whose guilt is great, a brood of evildoers, children given to corruption!*

*They have forsaken the Lord; [...]* Hear the word of the Lord, you rulers of Sodom; Listen to the instruction of our God, you people of Gomorrah! *"The multitude of your sacrifices — what are they to me?"*

*Says the Lord. "I have more than enough of burnt offerings, of rams and the fat of fattened animals; I have no pleasure in the blood of bulls and lambs and goats.*

*When you come to appear before me, who has asked this of you, this trampling of my courts?"* [Isaiah 1 verses 1-2, 4, 10-12, *New International Version Bible (NIV)*].

In [verse 1] we see that this prophecy is addressed to Judah and Jerusalem. Yet in [verse 10] we see that God speaks to the ruler of Sodom and the people of Gomorrah. Does this mean that this message is addressed both to the rulers of Judah and Jerusalem and also to those of Sodom and Gomorrah? That would be difficult!

We see in [Genesis 19] that those cities had already been destroyed many centuries before that.

By re-reading [Isaiah 1 verse 10-15], we discover that the leaders of Sodom and the people of Gomorrah have access to God's courts and could offer him sacrifices and burnt offerings, which was impossible at the time for a pagan people.

Only the Lord's consecrated priests could fulfil this function [Hebrews 8 verses 3-5], [Hebrews 9 verses 1-10].

Therefore the prophetic symbol of *Sodom* and *Gomorrah* used here is only an allegory that God uses to demonstrate the degree of perversity and sin that His people had reached.

Returning to the text of [Zechariah 14 verses 12-19] the same scenario in which he presents the nations coming together to unite with God's people in order to worship the Lord alongside his chosen people is also given to us in [Isaiah 56 verses 1-8].

In this text of the prophet Isaiah, the symbol of the Feast of the Tabernacles does not appear, but nevertheless it deals with the same period. It is talking about the time when there will be unity between the Jews and the Christians.

To fully understand the prophetic portrayal that is manifested in the text of [Zechariah 14 verses 12-21] presenting the Feast of the Tabernacles, it is important to understand that certain prophetic texts are given by God to be interpreted literally while others are not.

**Example:** *the prophecy of Jesus' birth was fulfilled literally.*

[Isaiah 7 verses 14-15], [Matthew 1 verses 18-25].

*Whereas in [Isaiah 6 verses 8-10] the blindness and deafness that is prophesied is not physical, but spiritual [Matthew 13 verses 9-17].*

Apart from its symbolic nature, what determines the purpose of a prophetic text is the sustainability that God's Word gives it.

If the predominant symbol that the Lord wanted to convey was the continuation of the *Feast of the Tabernacles*, He would have given instructions in the New Testament to be able to keep it.

Or He would have reaffirmed its validity, as He does for the Sabbath in [*Hebrews 4 verses 1-11*].

This symbol of the *Feast of the Tabernacles* is indeed an allegory used to present God's house as a place of prayer. In doing so in the text of [*Zacharie 14 verses 12 to 21*] therefore on no account is it about a call from God to worship Him (*in a literal way*) during the *Feast of the Tabernacles or during the sabbaths*.

Since the ceremonial feasts, which included the sabbaths, etc., have been repealed any spiritual leaders who continue to observe them do not act in conformity with the teachings of God's Word, but practise the teachings of men. Once again I wish to remind you that although this type of doctrine seems to concern spiritual teachings coming from God, since they call for self-forgetfulness, their purpose is the glory of man. The Bible calls such teachings "*the devil's doctrines*".

And we have seen their purpose is to glorify the devil. In addition, never lose sight of the fact that God's Word says that if you observe these things (*festivals, sabbaths, new moons*), you will lose your crown and you will not be saved.

It should be noted that since *the Church of the Living God* and "*the world to come*" advocate that the ceremonial feasts of the Law of Moses should still be practised, they despise the divine sacrifice of Jesus Christ, for they do not recognise its validity.

Those who act in this way will be accountable to the Lord for this, as we have already seen in [*Hebrews 10 verses 26-31*].

Finally, I would say to you that it is no longer the coming of the divine sacrifice that we must celebrate but the grace that God has given us by giving us his son as the ultimate holocaust. The memorial of this extraordinary act is the Last Supper.



## 7 The mystery of the missing day from the three days when Jesus Christ remained in the tomb

**9**n everything we do, the Lord our God asks us to have the courage of our convictions. It is written in [*Romans 14 verse 23*] that to do otherwise is sinful. As children and servants of God, we must walk in faith and always be armed with the Gospel in everything we do, especially when it comes to justifying our faith.

As Christians we are God's knights in armour [*Ephesians 6 verses 10-18*] and our sword is the gospel [*Hebrews 4 verses 12-13*].

As such, we serve the King of kings and the Lord of lords! Therefore, we must always be ready to call to account anyone who dishonours our master. In this chapter, I am going to destroy two pernicious doctrines that undermine the integrity of our master and his Word, He, The All Mighty.

The first attack declares that since Jesus did not remain in the tomb literally for three days and three nights, for these people all of God's Word is unfounded. The second discriminatory assertion argues that since the time that Jesus Christ spent in the tomb does not add up to three days and three nights totalling seventy-two hours, then for them the Sabbath cannot begin on Friday night and end on Saturday night.

For this reason they are trying to prove that the Sabbath does not actually begin on Friday night, but rather on Thursday night.

These people take Easter Sunday as their base and work backwards to find the third night.

We will therefore establish the truthfulness of the Lord's word, Bible in hand, and will demonstrate that the prophecy seen above has indeed been fulfilled as our Lord Jesus Christ foretold it.

In order to do so, we will now study the text that has become controversial and that some people use to demonstrate that Jesus did not remain **three days and three nights in the tomb**: "*But Jesus replied: You want a sign because you are evil and won't believe! But the only sign you will get is the sign of the prophet Jonah.*

**He was in the stomach of a big fish for three days and nights, just as the Son of Man will be deep in the earth for three days and nights".** [*Matthew 12 verse 39-40, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

Reading this verse, there is no ambiguity possible. This prophetic duration is indeed three days and three nights. In reality, here's what happened: **"Then Jesus shouted, "Father, I entrust my spirit into your hands!" And with those words he breathed his last. [...]** *Now there was a good and righteous man named Joseph. [...]*

**He went to Pilate and asked for Jesus' body. Then he took the body down from the cross and wrapped it in a long sheet of linen cloth and laid it in a new tomb that had been carved out of rock.**

**This was done late on Friday afternoon, the day of preparation, as the Sabbath was about to begin. [...]**

**But very early on Sunday morning the women went to the tomb, taking the spices they had prepared. They found that the stone had been rolled away from the entrance. So they went in, but they didn't find the body of the Lord Jesus. As they stood there puzzled, two men suddenly appeared to them, clothed in dazzling robes.**

*The women were terrified and bowed with their faces to the ground. Then the men asked, "Why are you looking among the dead for someone who is alive? He isn't here! He is risen from the dead!"* [*Luke 23 verses 46, 50, 52-54 to Luke 24 verse 6, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

This text traces the period starting from the moment when Jesus Christ died on the infamous cross until the time when he was resurrected. We will first establish the validity of the three days he was to remain in the tomb, and then we will investigate the situation regarding the three nights.

Before getting to the heart of the matter it is important to note that in [*Matthew 27 verses 50 and 57-60*] we read that the next day (*of Jesus' death*), his tomb was guarded. Furthermore, we have just seen in the text of the Apostle Luke, that on the first day of the week the soldiers were still there.

By taking these texts into account, we find **three very distinct days** between the death and the resurrection of Jesus:

*The first is called the “preparation day” (for the Sabbath), the second is called the “Sabbath day” and the third is called “Sunday”! In order to fully understand the continuity of these three days when Jesus Christ was present in the tomb, we must take into account the following fact.*

*Let us take the case of a birth. Whether you are born at 6 a.m. or at 4 p.m., your day of birth remains the same! Let's look at another example. If you start working on Friday afternoon and finish on Sunday morning, you will have worked flat out for three days: **Friday, Saturday and Sunday!***

*So even if you didn't work **seventy-two hours** straight, you will still have worked three days. As for Jesus Christ, notice that He had prophesied that He would remain in the tomb for **3 days and 3 nights**, not for seventy-two hours.*

*We find again our **3 days** which are: The “day of preparation” (for the Sabbath) therefore on **Friday**, the “Sabbath day” which is **Saturday** and “**Sunday**”.*

On the other hand, if we literally count the time Jesus spent in the tomb, we have a problem, because we find *the three days but not the three nights*. When we read the texts about Christ's passion we discover that:

*Jesus Christ died at noon on the “preparation day” (for the Sabbath), **Friday**, and then spent the **24 hours of the Sabbath** in the tomb, To be resurrected on the **Sunday morning**. He remained in the tomb only on the nights of the “preparation day” (for the Sabbath) **Friday** and the “**Sabbath**”.*

Seeing things from this angle, events seem to show that Jesus did not stay in the tomb for three days and three nights.

But as assiduous readers of the Bible, we know that appearances can be deceptive. Like the Bereans, we will probe the Gospel in order to shine some light on the mystery of that lost night.

It is because God's Word, and especially the Old Testament, has not been diligently studied, that so far many have been unable to understand the reality of the three days and three nights when Christ was to remain in the bosom of the earth.

In order to penetrate this mystery, it is crucial to take into account the following biblical text: "*And it shall be, in that day light shall not be, but cold and frost. [...] And there shall be one day, which is known to the Lord, not day, neither night, and in the time of eventide light shall be.*

**(And there shall be one day, which is known only to the Lord, which is not day, or night, and there shall be daylight in the evening.) And it shall be, in that day quick waters shall go out of Jerusalem, the half of them shall go out to the east sea, and the half of them to the last sea;**

**In summer and in winter they shall be.** (*And it shall be, on that day living, or fresh, water shall go out of Jerusalem, half of it shall go out to the East Sea, that is, the Dead Sea, and half of it shall go out to the West Sea, or the Mediterranean Sea;*

*This shall happen both in summer, and in winter". [Zechariah 14 verses 6-8, Wycliffe Bible (WYC)].*

This text prophetically presents the day when Jesus Christ the Son of God was to be sacrificed on the infamous cross of Calvary.

This event was to take place in a twilight period which was to be really neither day or night. This prophecy also predicts that as a result of this, the Holy Spirit would flow like living waters.

It is true that if I put myself in your place, you are probably asking yourself how I can tell you all of this just from this one piece of text.

We will therefore not lose our good habits and we will thus delve into the Bible in order to interpret the various symbols incorporated in this text. First of all and in order to place these events in time, it is imperative to take into account the prophetic symbol of the living waters that were to come out of Jerusalem.

Let's first see what the symbol of the living waters represents. To do so let's read this: *"In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.*

**(But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given;**

**Because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)"** [*John 7 verses 37-39, King James Bible*].

The coming of the Holy Spirit is prophetically represented in the form of pure waters, that is, waters that are full of life or that are revived or that are alive (*where life is found*), which are poured out on the earth (*on God's people*). See the following text:

**"For I will pour water on the thirsty land, and streams on the dry ground; I will pour my Spirit upon your descendants, and my blessing on your offspring".** [*Isaiah 44 verse 3, Revised Standard Version Bible (RSV)*].

This other text also informs us: **"And I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you;**

*And I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh. And I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep mine ordinances, and do them.* [*Ezekiel 36 verses 25-27, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

*So the living waters represent the Holy Spirit!*

In the text that follows, we see that Jesus Christ's death, his resurrection and his elevation to his Father was the promise of the coming of the Holy Spirit: *"Nevertheless I tell you the truth:*

*It is expedient for you that I go away; for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you;*

**But if I go, I will send him unto you. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he shall guide you into all the truth [...]"**  
*[John 16 verses 7 and 13, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Here, Jesus speaks of his departure in order to return to heaven to his Father and the next coming of the Holy Spirit who will be given to God's people. Another fundamental clue is given with regard to these living waters and therefore the Holy Spirit which must be dispensed.

It is stated in *[Zechariah 14 verses 6-8]* that these living waters were to come out in Jerusalem. This prophecy was fulfilled literally, because in the following text, we see that it was in Jerusalem that Jesus had prophesied the coming of the Holy Spirit:

*"The first account I made, Theophilus, was [a continuous report] about all the things that Jesus began to do and to teach until the day when He ascended to heaven [...]"*

*While being together and eating with them, He commanded them not to leave Jerusalem, but to wait for what the Father had promised, "Of which," He said, "you have heard Me speak.*

**For John baptized with water, but you will be baptized and empowered and united with the Holy Spirit, not long from now".**  
*[Acts 1 verses 1-2, 4-5, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

It is at Pentecost that the prophecy of *[Zechariah 14 verse 8]* presenting the living waters (*the Holy Spirit*) coming out of Jerusalem was fulfilled. Here is what happened: *"And when the day of Pentecost was now come, they were all together in one place.*

*And suddenly there came from heaven a sound as of the rushing of a mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.*

**And there appeared unto them tongues parting asunder, like as of fire; and it sat upon each one of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance".** *[Acts 2 verses 1-4, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

The living waters flowed simultaneously over both Jerusalems (*literally and spiritually*).

It first poured out when the disciples were in Jerusalem.

By doing so, it was literally poured out on Jerusalem (*the city*). But first of all it poured out on the spiritual Jerusalem.

As we studied in the chapter entitled "*The nonsense of the observance by modern-day Christians of the ancient Jewish holidays*", the people of the new Jerusalem are reunited in Jesus Christ when two or three of God's children are gathered together in his name.

When the Holy Spirit was poured out like living water on the disciples, it was on the New Jerusalem that it was dispensed. Since this prophecy was fulfilled at Pentecost, the Holy Spirit has already been given, so He cannot be given again since He is eternally with us.

This is what Jesus Christ himself promises us in the following text: **"If ye love me, ye will keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may be with you for ever, even the Spirit of truth: Whom the world cannot receive; for it beholdeth him not, neither knoweth him:**

*Ye know him; for he abideth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you desolate: I come unto you".* [John 14 verses 15-18, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Zechariah's prophecy also presented another reality. To find out, let us read this again: **On that day living water will flow out from Jerusalem, half of it toward the eastern sea and half of it toward the western sea. It will continue to flow in summer and in winter".** [Zechariah 14 verse 8, *Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Above all, we must take into account the symbol of the sea. This symbol represents a nation or a people. To discover this fact, I invite you to read the chapter entitled "*The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*".

This portion of this prophecy therefore teaches us that the Holy Spirit was to be poured out on two very distinct peoples. One is from the Orient and the other from the Occident.

We also have an important clue, that the "*living waters*" had to leave Jerusalem in order to flow first into the eastern sea (*therefore on the Orient*), then into the western sea (*therefore on the Occident*).

Jerusalem is in the Orient and it was there that the Holy Spirit first dispensed the living waters. The disciples of Jesus were the first to receive him. Furthermore, in [Acts 13 verses 46-47], we discover that God's message through the Holy Spirit was offered first to the Jewish people of Paul's time, but they were unworthy of it.

In doing so, through Paul the Lord opened the door of salvation in Jesus for the pagans and therefore for the peoples in the Occident.

Thus, henceforth whoever concludes a covenant with Jesus Christ, through baptism, receives the Holy Spirit and becomes a child of God [Acts 2 verses 38-39], [Romans 11 verses 7-27], [Ephesians 3 verses 3-6], [Colossians 1 verse 25-27], [Romans 8 verses 14-18].

From all that we have just seen, we understand that, prophetically, it was during Pentecost that the living waters were given, so [Zechariah 14 verse 8] this was intended to present the first sacrificial coming of Christ.

Now that we have established the truth of the living waters, we understand that the prophetic period that must precede it is merely the one presenting the Christ's divine sacrifice. To understand this, we must take into account the other symbols marking Zechariah's prophecy. He tells us, among other things, that:

**"And it shall be, in that day light shall not be, but cold and frost".**

To understand these symbols, it is imperative not to lose sight of the fact that they are prophetic symbols to be considered in accordance with specific criteria. So, just like the cows that the Pharaoh saw in his dream, which in reality were years [Genesis 41 verses 1-32] the prophetic symbols of *cold* and *ice* mean something else.

The prophetic symbols of *cold*, *ice*, *rain* and *snow* represent God's Word, and especially His prophetic Word and the things He declares and provides to be fulfilled. To understand this, Bible in hand, we will study their prophetic meaning. To do this, let us start with this text:

**"He sendeth forth his commandment upon earth: his word runneth very swiftly. He giveth snow like wool: he scattereth the hoarfrost like ashes. He casteth forth his ice like morsels:**



**Who can stand before his cold? He sendeth out his word, and melteth them:** *He causeth his wind to blow, and the waters flow.*

*He sheweth his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel. He hath not dealt so with any nation: and as for his judgments, they have not known them. Praise ye the LORD". [Psalms 147 verses 15-20, King James Bible].*

Let's reinforce our study with this text: **"For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater:**

**So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth:** *It shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it". [Ésaïe 55 verses 10-11, King James Bible].*

We'll perfect these basics with this: **"God thundereth marvellously with his voice, doing great things which we do not comprehend. For he saith to the snow, Fall on the earth! and to the pouring rain, even the pouring rains of his might.**

*He sealeth up the hand of every man; that all men may know his work. [...] From the chamber [of the south] cometh the whirlwind;*

**And cold from the winds of the north. By the breath of God ice is given; and the breadth of the waters is straitened. Also with plentiful moisture he loadeth the thick clouds, his light dispels the cloud;**

*And they are turned every way by his guidance, that they may do whatsoever he commandeth them upon the face of the circuit of the earth, Whether he cause it to come as a rod, or for his land, or in mercy". [Job 37 verses 5-7, 9-13, Darby Translation Bible (DARBY)].*

In addition to this last text, which presents bad weather as a rod, here's what this symbol actually represents:

*"But he will judge the poor honestly [with justice/righteousness]; he will be fair [upright; Just; fair] in his decisions for the poor [oppressed; meek] people of the land [or earth].*

**At his command evil people will be punished [He will strike the earth with the rod/scepter of his mouth], and by his words the wicked will be put to death [the breath of his lips he will slay the wicked]".** [*Ésaïe 11 verse 4, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

For a better understanding of the symbol of the rod which is also a scepter, let us read this: "*With righteousness he will uphold justice for the poor and defend the lowly of the earth.*

**His words will be like a scepter of power that conquers the world, and with his breath he will slay the lawless one".** [*Ésaïe 11 verse 4, The Passion Translation Bible (TPT)*].

Here God's Word is symbolised as a rod with which the Lord strikes the earth. In order to make His love appear God uses His Word as a rod (*scepter*) with which He strikes the earth, which is symbolised here by atmospheric symbols like *thunder, snow, heavy rain, wind, cold and ice, etc.*

These biblical texts teach us that in reality all of these symbols are used to show God's love manifested in Jesus, he being the descendant (*offspring*) of Isaiah [*John 3 verse 16*], [*1 John 4 verses 7-13*], [*Isaiah 11 verses 1-5*], [*Acts 13 verses 22-23*].

The symbol of *cold* and *ice* discovered in *Zechariah's* prophecy and linked to the living waters, thus represents the period of Christ's passion. Figuratively speaking, it is a unique day when the Son of God, the just one, was to come and die in an ignominious manner for the ungodly.

To understand how this prophecy was fully realised, we must not lose sight of the fact that if Jesus had not died, the Holy Spirit would not have been given. It is thanks to the new covenant that God makes with us through the atoning death of Christ (*he, the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world*) that we can receive God's Spirit.

Jesus had to die, be resurrected and be lifted up to God's right hand so that we could receive the Holy Spirit [*Hebrews 10 verses 5-23*], [*Hebrews 1 verses 2-6, 13*], [*John 14 verses 1-20*], [*John 16 verses 7-16*], [*Acts 2 verses 38-39*], [*Romans 8 verses 14-17*].

To continue one person pointed out to me that the prophecy of [Zechariah 14 verses 6-8] could not concern the atoning death of Jesus.

He clarified that, for him, this prophecy refers to a single day when the facts presented were to occur, whereas in reality several weeks passed between Christ's atoning death and Pentecost.

I replied that it is important not to lose sight of the fact that this is a prophetic text. Therefore, the times specified should not be interpreted according to our criteria. We find this situation in the text of [Daniel 2 verses 24-45], where we discover a prophecy which will unfold over several centuries. The starting point commenced on the day he was given and his end will coincide with the end of this world.

A prophecy can thus refer to several literal periods. So, when we read a prophetic text, we must not interpret it literally. In order to demonstrate the continuity of action in Zechariah's prophecy, we are given a key. Here is what God's Word declares:

**"And it shall be, in that day quick waters shall go out of Jerusalem, the half of them shall go out to the east sea, and the half of them to the last sea; in summer and in winter they shall be".** [Zechariah 14 verses 8, Wycliffe Bible (WYC)].

In this prophetic text, we notice that two periods are specified in order to present the work of the living waters : *The first is: "in that day", which presents the beginning of the work, and the second is: "in summer and in winter they shall be" which represents its continuation.*

Therefore this prophecy was to be fulfilled over two distinct periods. Generally, summer is between the 1st of June and the 31st of August. Winter, on the other hand, runs from the 1st of December to the 28th or 29th of February. This means that these two periods are separated by the three months of autumn.

This indication of summer and winter tells us that this prophecy was to last over a longer period than a single day. Therefore, we cannot think that this period was to take place just once.

This single day does not represent all of the work described in this prophecy, but it gives us its starting point.

This unique day, which is presented in the prophecy to Zechariah that we have already considered, instead of contradicting what happened during the passion of Christ, confirms the validity of the literal three days and three nights that Jesus spent in death.

Other decisive indications are given in this text of Zechariah.

To find out, take the time to reconsider this part of this prophecy:

**"But it will be a unique day which is known to the Lord — not day and not night, but at evening time there will be light".** [Zechariah 14 verse 7, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

First, before the living waters (*the Holy Spirit*) pour out, starting in Jerusalem, there will be a unique day that will be *"neither day or night"* and that as evening approaches the light will appear. This is exactly what happened at the time of Christ's death. From noon to 3 p.m. all of the earth was covered with darkness, but it did not stay that way.

These facts are presented in this text: **"At noon, darkness fell across the whole land until three o'clock. Then at three o'clock Jesus called out with a loud voice, "Eloi, Eloi, lema sabachthani?" which means "My God, my God, why have you abandoned me?" [...]**

**Then Jesus uttered another loud cry and breathed his last.**

[...] **This all happened on Friday, the day of preparation, the day before the Sabbath. As evening approached"** [Mark 15 verses 33-34, 37, 42, *New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

As you can see, darkness was widespread all over the country until 3:00 pm in the afternoon. This implies that once the darkness fell away, the passage of time was able to resume as normal. It says that after that, it was evening. If the day had not reappeared, it would have been specified that the darkness had extended until the evening or until the next morning, but we are told **"As evening approached"**.

For the evening to be about to come, we must move from daylight into darkness. These facts teach us that this unique day prophesied by the prophet Zechariah had to be integrated into another day. In order, Bible in hand, to master this prophecy of Zechariah presenting the passion of Christ and the gift of the Holy Spirit, we must not consider this *"unique day"* as a day consisting of twenty-four hours.

In order to understand the reality of this unique day that is to be found within another day, it is necessary to understand the fundamentals that determine the beginning and the end of a day and that we find in [*Genesis 1 verses 1-5*].

In this text, we see that “*when darkness covers the earth and the day comes*” refers to a phenomenon called a day.

It begins when the sun sets and the night appears and ends at the next sunset. It does not specify a specific time period for this day to be valid. And in the case of Jesus' death, that is exactly what happened:

*At noon, darkness appeared, not as an eclipse that would darken only a part of the earth, but darkness like that which existed before God created light. The entire surface of the earth was affected.*

We discover this fact in the following text: **"And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour. And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst. And when Jesus had cried out with a loud voice, He said, "Father, into Thy hands I commend My spirit".**

**And having said thus, He gave up the ghost".** [*Luke 23 verses 44-46, 21st Century King James Version Bible "KJ21"*].

In order to have another prophetic biblical reference point, which portrays the sun setting at noon in a period of mourning because of an only son (*Jesus Christ*), we must take into account this text: *"Shall not the land tremble for this, and every one mourn that dwelleth therein ?*

*And it shall rise up wholly as a flood; and it shall be cast out and drowned, as by the flood of Egypt. And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the Lord GOD, that I will cause the sun to go down at noon, and I will darken the earth in the clear day: And I will turn your feasts into mourning, and all your songs into lamentation;*

*And I will bring up sackcloth upon all loins, and baldness upon every head; and I will make it as the mourning of an only son, and the end thereof as a bitter day".* [*Amos 8 verses 8-10, King James Bible*].

Here we see that the sun sets at noon in a time of mourning for an only son. This is what happened at the death of God's only son.

The fact that the sun would set at noon was also prophesied in the following text: "[...] **I will bereave them of children, I will destroy My people;** *They did not repent of their ways. "Their widows will be more numerous before Me Than the sand of the seas;*

**I will bring against them, against the mother of a young man, A destroyer at noonday; I will suddenly bring down on her Anguish and dismay.** *"She who bore seven sons pines away;*

*Her breathing is labored. Her sun has set while it was yet day; She has been shamed and humiliated. [...]" [Jeremiah 15 verses 7-9, New American Standard Bible (NASB)].*

This prophecy began to take place at Jesus' birth when these terrible words were prophesied to Mary his mother: "**And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel [...]**

**(Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed". [Luke 2 verses 34-35, King James Bible].**

I can't imagine how Mary must have felt when she saw her son suffer and die in the most ignominious way.

That day Simeon's prophecy came true and a sword pierced her soul at the sight of her son's suffering. I imagine her being anguished and terrified that day. By doing so she fulfilled the first part of Jeremiah's prophecy that we have just considered.

Here is how the other part of this prophecy was fulfilled, which portrays the onset of the anguish that was to descend upon God's unrepentant people on the day when the sun was to set at noon:

**"And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.**

**For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.**

*Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; And to the hills, Cover us". [Luke 23 verses 27-30, King James Bible].*

As you can see, this text depicting the sun setting at noon on the day when a son is in pain foreshadowed the sufferings that Jesus had to endure during his passion. Thus, what is presented in the text of [Zechariah 14 verses 6-8] cannot be a day that has a duration based on the criteria that God has established in the *24 hour clock*. There will not be two days like this particular day in the history of mankind.

We know that the day of the death on the cross of God's Son, who is himself the true God [1 John 5 verse 20] was a unique day, decreed from the moment the world was created [1 Peter 1 verses 18-21].

Christ was predestined to die once and for all for the past, present and future sins of mankind [Hebrews 9 verses 24-28].

After studying all of these points, Bible in hand, we can now establish how long the third day lasted and especially the duration of the night lost during the three nights Jesus Christ was to remain in the tomb. So here is how the three days and three nights Jesus stayed in the tomb unfolded:

— *The first of the three nights began when darkness fell upon the earth at noon and lasted until 3:00 p.m. of the day called the "Preparation Day", that is Friday, and this was therefore **the first night**.*

— *After 3:00 p.m. when the light came back, until the sun set and the evening of that day came, that was **the first day**. So the first day did not begin at the sunrise of the "day of preparation", but at the end of darkness after 3:00 p.m. The end of this first day ended at sunset.*

— *Then **the second night** began at sunset, the evening of the "Preparation Day" (Friday evening), and ended at sunrise, on the "Sabbath morning" (Saturday morning).*

- *From the “Sabbath” at sunrise until sunset, this was the **second day**.*
- *Then at sunset, (on the evening of the “Sabbath”) the **third night** began which ended at sunrise on Sunday.*
- *As soon as the sun rose, the **third day had arrived**, and Christ was resurrected.*

As we said earlier, it was not prophesied that Jesus would remain in the tomb for *3 full days and 3 full nights (that is 72 hours)*, but that He would remain in the tomb for *3 days and 3 nights*.

As you see, God’s Word does not lie and is not mistaken, With our Bible in hand and with the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, we have found these *3 days* and these *3 nights*.

Even with these foundations established, certain questions that have been presented to me still need to be clarified and which are supposed to demonstrate that Jesus did not fulfil the prophecy of the *3 days and 3 nights*, because He did not literally remain in the tomb during this period.

In order to demonstrate that my thesis that I have just presented to you was unfounded, some have argued that just as Jonah stayed three days and three nights in the belly of the whale, the prophecy declared that Jesus had to stay three days and three nights in the bosom of the earth.

Even though I proved the validity of the third night to my detractors, for them, Jesus was still on the cross during that period and not buried in the earth, as according to them, the prophecy predicted.

So that according to this thesis the third night is not admissible as it is only when he was put in the tomb that this period begins.

First of all, in order to answer such arguments, it was imperative to understand that this text describing the three nights and three days when, like Jonah the Lord was to remain in the bosom of the earth, is a prophetic text.



Thus the symbol of the earth which is presented here cannot be interpreted literally. To understand it, let us read this text which presents what happened at the death of Jesus: *"Now there was a good and righteous man named Joseph. He was a member of the Jewish high council, but he had not agreed with the decision and actions of the other religious leaders. He was from the town of Arimathea in Judea, and he was waiting for the Kingdom of God to come.*

**He went to Pilate and asked for Jesus' body. Then he took the body down from the cross and wrapped it in a long sheet of linen cloth and laid it in a new tomb that had been carved out of rock".** [Luke 23 verses 50-53, *New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

We realise that Christ did not literally stay in the earth after his death, but in a stone tomb (*been carved out of rock*).

*Therefore, we do not find the symbol of the earth. Does this mean that my questioner is right? Of course not!*

In order to understand the symbol that the bosom of the earth represents, we should first read this: *"All we like sheep have gone astray; we have all turned to our own way, and the Lord has laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he did not open his mouth;*

*Like a lamb that is led to the slaughter, and like a sheep that before its shearers is silent, so he did not open his mouth. By a perversion of justice he was taken away. Who could have imagined his future?*

*For he was cut off from the land of the living, stricken for the transgression of my people. **They made his grave with the wicked and his tomb with the rich, although he had done no violence, and there was no deceit in his mouth"**.* [Isaiah 53 verses 6-9, *New Revised Standard Version Bible (NRSV)*].

In this text, which presents the impending sufferings of God's Son and his death, we discover that it was indeed in a tomb that he was to be placed. In any case the tomb where Jesus was placed was carved in the rock and therefore in the bosom of the earth.

So we see that God's Word is very effective in this regard.

Now that this point has been made, we will demonstrate the sequence of events which took place on our third night, I remind you, between noon and 3:00 *p.m.* on the Friday of Christ's bloody passion.

Just as the symbol of the earth represented a tomb dug out of rock, death is also linked to the symbol of the earth.

In order to understand what this is about, we need to read [*Genesis 3 verse 19*], [*Genesis 2 verse 7*], [*Ecclesiastes 12 verse 7*].

By summarising these texts, we discover that "*returning to the earth*" represents death. We become dust again, as we were. We also find out that man was created from the dust of the earth and when we die the breath that God has given us is taken away from us.

From then on, we return to dust and this prophetic reality is fulfilled wherever one dies.

**Example:** *take the case of a man who is devoured by a shark in the middle of the ocean and whose whole body ends up in the shark's stomach. Even if his body is not put in the ground, prophetically speaking, as soon as he has given back the breath of life, we will say that he has returned to the dust of the earth.*

God's breath animates man from the moment he is born and he becomes a living soul. When man dies, this breath being returned, he returns to the dust of the earth and *nothingness*.

In order to reinforce what we have just seen regarding the state of the dead, I invite you to read the *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*The biblical reality of the state of non-being in which the dead are and the various anti-biblical doctrines that have been instituted in this matter*".

*The prophetic symbol that shows Jesus Christ having to spend three days and three nights in the bosom of the earth must be interpreted by the absence of God's breath (life).*

*This time begins when Jesus Christ expires on the cross, and lasts for three days and three nights.*

## 8 The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn

**T**o begin this chapter I would like to tell you that the message of the first angel of the apocalypse is also intended to present the righteousness of God, for after having had patience with human beings for centuries [2 Peter 3 verses 9-13], the hour of his judgment has come.

In the chapters that make up this part, we will look at the iniquitous doctrines that have been instituted throughout the centuries in Christendom and that rob God of the glory that is His due.

We will discover how under the guise of faith the worst enemy of God and his people, rose up against the Lord and proclaimed himself God. To achieve this end, over the centuries, he has martyred and killed a myriad of the Lord's faithful children.

To introduce you to this iniquitous being, I would like to say that he is one of the most powerful beings this world has ever known.

This entity is very emblematic, for it is a spiritual power, yet it is most bloodthirsty and blasphemous. Its deeds are presented in great detail in this text: **"And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.**

**And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: And the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; And his deadly wound was healed:**

*And all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: And they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast?*

*Who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.*

*And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.*

**And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.**

**If any man have an ear, let him hear. He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. [...] Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six".** [*Revelation 13 verses 1-10, 18, King James Bible*].

In order to better understand this text, we will first begin by interpreting the first symbol presented to us, that of the sea from which this apocalyptic beast emerges. In order to decipher this symbol let us read this: **"But the wicked are like the tossing sea, for it cannot be quiet, and its waters toss up mire and mud".** [*Isaiah 57 verse 20, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

In addition let's consider this: **"On Damascus. Hamath and Arpad are confused, for they have learnt bad news, they are trembling; It is a tormented sea, which refuses to calm down".** [*Jeremiah 49 verse 23, Bible Louis Segond (translated into English from the original text)*].

The symbol of the rough sea which does not calm down and which disturbs the **mire and silt**, just like during a storm when the water becomes muddy, symbolises the wicked one.

In addition, a sea that is raging but not muddy represents harsh trials to come that will be accompanied by great pain and anxiety.

These images of the sea that we have just seen are not explicit enough for me to understand what this symbol represents within the framework of our basic text. This is why we will now see other texts in order to decipher this symbol. In doing so, let's continue our investigations, considering this other text: "**Woe to the many nations that rage – they rage like the raging sea! Woe to the peoples who roar – they roar like the roaring of great waters!**" [*Isaiah 17 verses 12, New International Version Bible – UK (NIVUK)*].

Usually in prophetic language the symbol of the sea represents a nation or nations and is used to highlight their power.

Let us also read this text whose meaning reflects this: "**[...] Behold, a people cometh from the north country, and a great nation shall be raised from the sides of the earth. They shall lay hold on bow and spear; they are cruel, and have no mercy; their voice roareth like the sea**" [*Jeremiah 6 verses 22-23, King James Bible*].

The state of the sea (*its roar*) represents the power of the nation it symbolises. However, depending on the secondary symbols associated with it, it can also represent the defeat or ruin of a nation.

Here is what was prophesied concerning Babylon: "**Therefore thus saith the LORD; Behold, I will plead thy cause, and take vengeance for thee; And I will dry up her sea, and make her springs dry. And Babylon shall become heaps [...]**" [*Jeremiah 51 verses 36-37, King James Bible*].

Thus, this symbol of the sea from which the beast with seven heads and ten horns emanates represents the fact that it will emerge (*will come into being*) from the nations. In order to understand the characteristics of this place from which this beast originates, we need to understand what the nations represent in prophetic language.

To do this let us read this: "**For the house of Israel and the house of Judah have dealt very treacherously against me, saith the LORD. They have belied the LORD [...]** Lo, I will bring a nation upon you from far, O house of Israel, saith the LORD:

**It is a mighty nation, it is an ancient nation, a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest what they say. Their quiver is as an open sepulchre, they are all mighty men. And they shall eat up thine harvest, and thy bread, which thy sons and thy daughters should eat [...] They shall impoverish thy fenced cities, wherein thou trustedst, with the sword".** [*Jeremiah 5 verses 11-12, 15-17, King James Bible*].

Usually, when God's people abandoned Him, He would raise up a powerful nation or nations against them, in order to strike them down.

In this text, in order to demonstrate that the nations are not part of God's chosen people, the difference between the two is highlighted.

The symbol of the nations represents all of those who live without worshipping the one true God, who is the Eternal One. Here is how their deeds are presented: **"When thou art come into the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not learn to do after the abominations of those nations. [...]**

*For all that do these things are an abomination unto the LORD: and because of these abominations the LORD thy God doth drive them out from before thee. Thou shalt be perfect with the LORD thy God".* [*Deuteronomy 18 verses 9, 12-13, King James Bible*].

In order to understand the traits linked to the symbol of the sea from which the first beast emerges, it is necessary to consider who lives in this place and dominates it. This text informs us about this:

*"That day the LORD will intervene with his hard sword, with his great and strong sword, against the Leviathan the fugitive serpent, against the Leviathan, the tortuous serpent; And he will kill him, that monster that dwells in the sea".* [*Isaiah 27 verse 1, Bible Semeur (translated into English from the original text)*].

For the sake of clarity, let's discover this text in this other version: *"That day the Lord will take up his great, his terrible, his mighty sword, to intervene against the monster Leviathan, the tortuous, elusive serpent;*

**And he will kill this sea dragon".** [*Isaiah 27 verse 1, Nouvelle Bible en Français Courant (translated into English from the original text)*].

Here we are introduced to the tortuous (*and therefore cunning or malicious*) snake, which is also called the dragon that lives in the sea.

The symbol of the sea being that of the nations and the symbols of the serpent and the dragon representing Satan [*Revelation 12 verses 7-9*], so it is he who is mentioned here. The sea (*the nations of the earth*) is the place where the devil dominates and this is very well signified in this text: "*We know that we belong to God, while the whole world is under the devil's thumb*". [*1 John 5 verse 19, Bible Semeur (translated into English from the original text)*].

This prophecy presenting the emergence of this beast with seven heads and ten horns from the sea (*among the nations*), identifies it as having originated from a people who do not revere the Lord (*therefore the world*) and who are under the dominion of the devil.

As we have seen, the symbol of the nations generally represents peoples who are enemies of God's people. On this basis, this prophecy has already been fulfilled, because the entity symbolised by the beast with seven heads and ten horns originated within the Roman Empire, which was one of the greatest persecutors of Christians.

Later we will reveal the facts which present the links which exist between this beast and the Roman Empire. For the time being, in order to continue, I would like to point out that in our basic text presenting this entity, its main hallmark is the persecution of God's people that it perpetrates. This fact leads us to understand that in the Bible this apocalyptic beast is described using different images.

In order to better understand our study it is therefore important to discover another text that depicts it in another form. To do this let us read the following: "*Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of heaven brake forth upon the great sea. And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another. The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings [...]* And, behold, another beast, a second, like to a bea [...]"

*After this I beheld, and, lo, another, like a leopard, which had upon its back four wings of a bird [...]* **After this I saw in the night-visions, and, behold, a fourth beast, terrible and powerful, and strong exceedingly.**

*[...] Then I desired to know the truth concerning the fourth beast, which was diverse from all of them, exceeding terrible, whose teeth were of iron, and its nails of brass; Which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with its feet; And concerning the ten horns that were on its head, and the other horn which came up, and before which three fell, even that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake great things, whose look was more stout than its fellows.*

**I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them; Until the ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the Most High, and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom. Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be a fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all the kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces.**

**And as for the ten horns, out of this kingdom shall ten kings arise: and another shall arise after them; And he shall be diverse from the former, and he shall put down three kings.**

**And he shall speak words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High; and he shall think to change the times and the law; And they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and half a time. But the judgment shall be set, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end".** [*Daniel 7 verses 2-7, 19-26, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

The symbol that interests us here is that of the "*little horn*". Nevertheless, the context in which it is used allows us to identify it, so we will go over the related symbols. This text mentions this entity, in the context of a prophecy chronicling the course of history from the Babylonian reign to the time of Christ's second coming.

This prophecy is one of the most important and interesting ones, for those who know how to decipher it! We find the glory and the decline of various kingdoms that succeeded one another and reigned on Earth. To identify them, it is advisable to return to another dream which we find in [*Daniel 2 verses 26-45*] and where their identity is clearly disclosed.



Several anchor points link these two prophecies to each other and allow us to know the various periods they represent, which in fact relate to the same events.

One of the most important reference points is given at the end of the two texts of [Daniel 2 verset 44] and [Daniel 7 verset 27].

In these two portions of the prophetic text, we find mention of a people whom God inspires and who will dominate all nations.

In [Daniel 2 verse 44] we are also told that this people that God will raise up will exist forever. In [Daniel 7 verses 18 and 27] he tells us that the saints of the Most High, therefore God's chosen people, will also continue forever. Only those who are with Jesus and remain faithful to him will live forever. Two texts are therefore describing the same fact.

Moreover, the fourth kingdom of [Daniel 2] and the fourth beast of [Daniel 7] are made up of the same symbol, iron, which means that it is the same entity that is mentioned here.

Just like the two dreams the Pharaoh had in [Genesis 41 verses 1-36] which present the same event under different symbols, these two dreams reported in the book of Daniel are describing a single chain of events, namely the future of the human kingdoms. These symbols represent the kingdoms, which will succeed one another on Earth.

*The first kingdom being Babylon, which represents the golden head of the statue and which by extension symbolises the lion that had eagle wings. The next is none other than a symbol representing "the Medo-Persians" and history tells us that it is they who succeeded the Babylonians.*

*This means that the third animal represents the Greeks who defeated the "Medo-Persians".*

*Finally, the last animal symbolises the Romans, who defeated the Greeks. The little horn had to stem from the Romans.*

On the strength of all that we have just seen, before continuing I would like to highlight one of the symbols contained in the text of [Daniel 7 verse 3], that as we have just seen refers to the sea.

It is from this place that these four titanic beasts emerge, so the symbol of the sea represents the nations well. Now this point has been made, we can return to our theme.

In this prophecy of Daniel, we see that the little horn is a fifth kingdom that arose after the other four, which are symbolised by the four beasts. Daniel describes it to us as being a power different from that of the beast from which it originated.

One of the elements that identify it is that it is a power that can legislate, because it has a king at the head of a kingdom.

In addition, we learn that it brings about the downfall of three horns, therefore three kings, so it is a place with geopolitical power.

Nevertheless, this kingdom is not of the type of those that preceded it, for in addition to having supremacy over monarchs, it is also a religious power, for it rises up against God and has dominion over God's people and aims to wage war on them.

The little horn is therefore a being of great power, for it wins the war it wages against God's people, but also against kings. We are also told that amongst other things it will seek to change the law.

This symbol also shows us that the little horn has the capacity to legislate and therefore has the authority of a state and guardian of the laws of men. Its predominance over God's people also gives it the authority to falsify God's law. This entity is also portrayed as speaking arrogantly and through these words it will oppose the Most High and therefore the Eternal God.

*This confirms its religious nature.*

Its end will come at judgment time, when God's judgment will be implemented at the time of Christ's second coming and God's people will receive dominion over all of the kingdoms of the world.

In the history of the world, there is only one power, which was both political and religious, which came out (*was born within*) of the Roman Empire and which was so powerful that it replaced it.

This power is the Catholic Church. The following text presents the foundations on which the Catholic Church is built:

*“Edict of the emperors Gratian, Valentinian II and Theodosius Augustus, to the people of the city of Constantinople.*

**We want all of the peoples who govern the moderation of Our Imperial Clemency to commit themselves to this religion which the divine Peter the Apostle gave to the Romans, thus affirming a tradition starting with him and reaching into the present day and it is clear that Pontiff Damascus I and the Bishop of Alexandria follow Peter, a man of apostolic holiness.**

*That is to say, in accordance with apostolic discipline and evangelical doctrine, we believe in the one Divinity of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit in equal Majesty and pious Trinity.*

**We ordain that those who follow this law should take the name of Catholic Christians and that others, whom we judge to be demented and foolish, should assume the infamy of heresy.**

*Their assemblies will not be able to be called churches and first of all they will be the subject of divine vengeance and then they shall be punished on our own initiative [...]”. [Excerpt from: « Édît des empereurs Gratien, Valentinien II et Théodose Auguste » (translated into English from the original text)].*

It was around the 380s that this edict appeared, when the emperors *Gratian, Valentin II and Theodosius* decreed Catholicism to be the sole religion of the Roman Empire.

Note that here it is made clear that the Catholic Church was given to the Romans. It is their baby and it is not an illegitimate child, for having been established by the people of the Roman Empire, it bears the name of its father: *the "Roman Catholic Church"*.

*"What could be more normal, because usually in a legal union, the unborn child will always bear the surname of its father"*.

This fact is in accordance with Daniel's prophecy, which presented the little horn as being the offspring of the fourth beast, which historically represents the Roman Empire.

The little horn is presented as a kingdom, therefore a state. The Catholic Church also fulfils this symbol, since it was established on the same foundations as that of a State. This text describes the situation:

**"[...] The Roman Pontiff is the ministerial head"** *in the sense that He does not receive the power of his ministry from Christ, in the person of Blessed Peter, but from the Church through which, as Peter's successor and Christ's true vicar and head of the Church, he has power over the whole Church [...]"*.

*[Extract from: « Constitution Auctorem fidei à tous les fidèles, 28 août 1794. De la dénomination "tête ministérielle" attribuée au pontife » (translated into English from the original text)].*

This other text confirms what we have just seen: *"The Vatican City: it is the seat of the Vatican City State, which only exists since the Lateran Agreements, signed in 1929 between the Pope and the Italian government. The preamble clearly specifies the exceptional symbolic value of the smallest state in the world (44 hectares):*

*"To ensure the absolute and visible independence of the Holy See its indisputable sovereignty must be guaranteed even in the international domain. This is why, by means of special arrangements, it was necessary to constitute the Vatican City in such a way, that the Holy See is recognised to have full ownership, exclusive and absolute power and sovereign jurisdiction over it"*.

**The Vatican City State exists in order to allow the Apostolic See the spiritual freedom necessary to accomplish its mission [...]"**. *[From the website: « <https://eglise.catholique.fr/vatican>, partie: en savoir plus sur le Vatican » (translated into English from the original text)].*

In the first text, we see that the Catholic Church is managed by way of a ministerial system headed by the Roman Pontiff, therefore the pope. It is therefore ministers who manage its organisation, which makes it a state. The second text presents the Vatican City as a State in its own right. It is the smallest of all states and it also has sovereignty, so it is also a kingdom.

Just as it is the case among the various nations of the earth, which are accustomed to having diplomatic exchanges amongst themselves as states, the Vatican also maintains diplomatic relations with the leaders of various countries. This text explains this situation to us: **"The Holy See maintains diplomatic relations with States. [...]**

*These relations are carried out through accredited diplomatic personnel. The Holy See is currently developing diplomatic relations with 174 countries and many international organisations". [From the website: « <https://eglise.catholique.fr/vatican>, Partie: Saint-Siège et Vatican » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Thus the Vatican is not a second-class state, which does not have the recognition of nations, as it maintains diplomatic relations with *174 countries*. It is therefore recognised as a fully-fledged sovereign state by all of these nations.

To this day, the seat of the Catholic Church, which is in the city of Rome in Italy, is a state instituted within a state.

As such, it decrees its own rules of governance, over which the Italian State has no right of control.

The Catholic Church originated amongst the Romans and survived them and has become far more powerful and bloodthirsty than them. The sheep has therefore become beastly and bloodthirsty, like a wolf!

Endowed with all of the powers, the pope could judge everyone, knowing however that no one could judge him. This text shows us the omnipotence of the pope's sentences:

**"The pope's sentence cannot be set aside by anyone and only he has the right to do so". [Excerpt from: « *Dictatus Papae de Grégoire VII* » (translated into English from the original text)].**

The power that the popes acquired century after century made them the dominators of everything that lives on Earth.

The situation was as follows: *"God has put two great stars in the firmament to illuminate it, the sun that presides over the day and the moon that commands at night.*

**Likewise in the firmament of the church, he appointed two top dignitaries. The Papacy, which reigns over souls, and royalty which rules over men. But the first is far superior to the second.**

*As the moon receives its light from the sun, that is far greater in terms of the quality and quantity of its radiance, so royal power derives its brilliance and prestige from pontifical power".*

*[Excerpt from: « Doctrine de la théocratie pontificale décrétée par le pape Innocent III » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Let's add this to our study: **"The emperor, penetrated with the same sentiments, went to the place of election and prostrated himself at the feet of the new pope".** *[Excerpt from: « Concile de Constance 1414/1418; seizième concile œcuménique, tome I, colonnes 628 à 659 » (translated into English from the original text)].*

The Catholic Church had established its dominion over the kings and emperors who were subject to it. They remained the rulers of their people, but they were subject to the pope. Emperors and kings were totally subject to the pope and bowed down before him.

The little horn was to have the power to legislate in order to put God's people to death. This was also the case with the Catholic Church. Here is what its power and its deeds were in this matter for centuries: **"Saint Optat of Mileve defended the civil authority [...]**

**It was the first time that a Catholic bishop advocated the decisive cooperation of the state in religious matters and its right to inflict death on heretics [...]** *Heresy seemed to revive in 447 in Leo I's reign, when he not only justified the act, but declared that, if the proponents of a damnable heresy were allowed to live, there would be an end to human and divine law.*

**The final step was taken and the church definitively promised the suppression of heresy at all costs. Since the time of Theodosius the Great, it is impossible not to attribute to ecclesiastical influence the successive edicts by which, being a heretic was punishable by death".**

[Extract from: « *Histoire de l'Inquisition au Moyen Age* » (New York, 1888, I, 215 / Publication d'informations écrites par Joseph Blotzer.

Transcrit par Matt Dean. *L'Encyclopédie catholique, volume VIII. Publié en 1910; Robert Appleton Société. Inquisition Information catholique I. Les Répressions de l'hérésie pendant les douze premiers siècles 2* » (translated into English from the original text)].

Let's also supplement our study with the following: "[...] **This holy Council [...] declared that John Wycliffe was a notorious and obstinate heretic who died in heresy, and it anathematizes him and condemns his memory.**

**It decrees and orders that his body and bones must be exhumed, if they can be identified among the corpses of the faithful and be scattered away from the church burial place, in accordance with canonical and legal sanctions [...]**

*The Holy Synod has declared that local inquisition Courts and heresy inquisitors must be vigilant in the execution of these matters and duly observe them, insofar as each one is responsible, in accordance with the law and with canonical sanctions. Whoever recklessly violates the foregoing, decrees and sentences of this holy Council shall be punished [...]*. [Excerpt from: « *Concile de Constance 1414 / 1418.* » (translated into English from the original text)].

Strengthened by their Roman heritage of killing all of those they considered undesirable the senior Catholic leaders, especially the one who called himself the "holy" Optat, presented the death of heretics as a necessity. We also discover the legal and legislative power of the Catholic Church, which could enact iniquitous laws to prosecute those recognised as heretics, even after their death.

To discover how abominable the acts of this religion were against the great heroes of the Christian faith, such as *John Wycliffe, John Hus, Jerome of Prague*, I invite you to read my book "*Inquisitiô (The three angels' message) tome I, What has advenu of the holiness of the Word of God ?*".

As you read this some of you must be thinking that if they were heretics, they must have been dangerous like the terrorists of our time.

*Far from it!* For in the text that follows, we see that the Catholic definition of heresy is none other than *"a person who rejects Catholic dogma, in order to only follow God's Word"*: **"Such is the condition of the heretics of that time who have nothing to justify except for hiding behind the pretext of God's Word to overthrow the Church's authority [...]"** [*Excerpt from: Mansi SC, vol. 33, Cols. 529, 530 (translated into English from the original text)*].

To continue, I would like to explain that at that time, it was not good to have only God's Word as a basis of faith, because the price to pay was heavy. This text has more to say on this subject:

**"[...] Archbishops and bishops oblige a priest and two or three laymen of good opinion under oath, or more if necessary, to faithfully, diligently, and frequently search for heretics, by combing houses and underground chambers known to be suspect, searching lean-to buildings, the added constructions under roofs and any other hiding places, which we command to be destroyed.**

*And if they find heretics, or believers, or wrongdoers, who receive them or defend them, after having taken precautions to prevent them from escaping, [...]*

**So that they may be punished with the required chastisement. We command that whoever knowingly allows a heretic to dwell in his premises, whether for money or for any other reason, according to his own confession or as it is proven, shall have his premises forfeited for ever and his body shall be given into the hands of the Lord to do with it as he will.**

**[...] We order the house where a heretic is found to be destroyed and the land confiscated.**

**[...] How to deal with the sick who are deemed heretical or suspected of heresy. We order that no one who is deemed heretical or suspected of heresy shall be allowed to use a physician. [...]"** [*Excerpt from: « Concile de Toulouse (1229) ou Grégoire IX interdit la Bible aux fidèles » (translated into English from the original text)*].



This text describes the persecutions of God's faithful children, who were tracked like beasts. Any place that could hide them was searched in order to flush them out and punish them. Their belongings were to be seized and their houses destroyed. *And for what purpose?*

Because they continued to read God's Word. Doctors were forbidden to see them in consultations, so when they were sick they were condemned to die like stray dogs.

In this text those who have to suffer in this way are suffering because they are presented as being heretics. We have already studied that in the Catholic language heretics are those who had faith only in God's Word and who refused to observe Catholic dogma.

It should be noted that it was under the pen of the most eminent of its fathers, the so-called "**saint**" *Augustine*, that the Catholic Church established that anyone who did not submit to its dogma should be punished by death. Let us take note of these writings, the bloodiest and most anti-Christian:

**"[...] When the horse and the mule, that have no intelligence, resist the men who take care of healing their wounds with bites and kicks and sometimes resist to the point of endangering them, these animals are not left alone because of this.**

**They are treated until the painful energy of the remedies has restored them to health. It is even more vital that a man must not be abandoned by a man, a brother by his brother, lest he perish! Once he is restored to good health, he can understand that what he originally called persecution was only really a good deed for his own benefit [...].**

**But, by a prodigious blindness, these men who know nothing of Christ outside the Scriptures, do not want to learn to know his Church according to the authority of these same divine Books [...]**

*We can do good in two ways with our lost brothers. We can regale them with the speeches of Catholic preachers and oblige them to obey the laws of Catholic princes [...]. But whoever refuses to obey the laws of the emperors, which are based on God's truth, will be exposed to great torment.[...]" [Excerpt from: « Livre ou lettre CLXXXV, de saint Augustin à Boniface (Année 415.). Du châtement des Donatistes » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Let's finish with this other text: *"Please God that the faith were the same in all! One would have a lot less trouble and the devil with his angels would be more easily defeated.*

*But because in this world it is necessary for the citizens of the kingdom of heaven to be subjected to painful temptations in the midst of those who have lost their way and the ungodly in order to be exercised and tested like gold in the furnace, we must not prematurely want to live only with the holy and righteous, so that we may deserve it when the time is right.*

**[...] For if the promised faith must be kept for the enemy with whom one makes war, how much more vital must it be with the friend for whom one fights!**

**You must want peace and only wage war out of necessity, so that God will deliver you from the need to draw the sword and allow you to live in peace. We do not seek peace to cause war, but we wage war to obtain peace.**

**So remain friends of peace, even in battle, so that victory will serve to remind the enemy of the benefits of peace. [...]"** *[Extract from: « Lettre CLXXXIX. (Année 418.) de saint Augustin à Boniface » (translated into English from the original text)].*

I don't know if, reading these lines, you can realise just how crazy "Saint" Augustine was?! In one of these texts he compares the sufferings that must have been the lot of those who rejected Catholic dogma as a remedy applied out of love. In his view, just as a mule had to be cruelly subdued for its own good, heretics had to be made to pledge allegiance to Catholic dogma through suffering.

He advocated that those who rebelled should be beaten and then bandaged, over and over again, until they accepted the Catholic Church's dogma. For him persecution was a blessing destined for the salvation of the persecuted!

For this man, the so-called "saint" Augustine, death was one of the solutions to bring down the enemies of the faith, so that any survivors, who were pardoned, would be forced to submit.

It was necessary to wage war in order to then live in peace.

Moreover in these texts we see that the doctrinal framework which, under the cover of the Catholic Church, allowed monarchs to persecute and kill heretics came from St. Augustine.

In the second text, he advocated that, out of necessity, it was necessary to kill and use violence in order to maintain the faith.

Thus, as he advocated that war should be waged for the sake of peace, this man was the initiator of many abominations and under his pen the "*holy wars*" were born.

Ultimately he was behind the tortures suffered by all those who rejected Catholic dogma and who were put to death at the stake.

*On the strength of this text, those who went into a "holy war" in order to win souls for the Catholic Church were ruthless during the fighting, but showed mercy to the defeated who joined the Papacy after having surrendered their faith in God.*

St. Augustine's writings called for war on his friends who would not submit to the authority of Papal Rome.

The aim was to dominate all minds, which had to submit, not to God's Word, but to Catholic dogma!

Thus there were many fratricidal wars, where brothers, born of the same mother, fought and killed each other all "*in the name of God*". Let us continue our discussion of the iniquitous *St. Augustine*.

In this text he states that only the Catholic Church should be able to persecute heretics, but the opposite was not possible :

*"[...] If the true Church is that which suffers persecution and not that which causes suffering, let the Donatists ask the Apostle to which Church Sarah belonged when she persecuted her handmaiden.*

*He will answer that this woman who ill-treated her handmaiden represented our mother who is free, the heavenly Jerusalem, that is, the Jerusalem of God [...]* **If those who are good and holy persecute no one but resign themselves only to suffering, why, I pray you, are these words of the Psalmist:**

**"I will pursue my enemies, I will overtake them and I will not return until I see them falter [...]"?**

If we want to hold to the truth, we will recognise that unjust persecution is the persecution of the ungodly against the Church of Christ and that righteous persecution is the persecution of the Church of Christ against the ungodly.

*It is therefore blissful to suffer persecution for righteousness' sake and the ungodly are miserable to suffer persecution for iniquity's sake.*

The Church persecutes out of love, the others out of hatred. It wants to resurrect, the others want to destroy;

It wants to learn from its mistakes and the others precipitate them. The Church pursues its enemies and does not let them go until lies perish in them and truth triumphs in them [...]"

*[Extract from: « Livre ou lettre CLXXXV (1), de saint Augustin à Boniface (Année 415.); Du châtement des donatistes » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Of all of St. Augustine's iniquitous and infamous texts, this is one of those that will make the most martyrs, for he presents the fact that the Catholic Church may persecute and pursue until they overwhelm its opponents as the will of the Lord.

To do this he distorts biblical texts to support his thesis.

Reading this text one might believe that what is described is normal and approved by the Lord, especially since a biblical verse is called upon here to support and justify the fact that the Catholic Church was only doing its duty as a "good Christian" by killing its opponents.

But is this really the case? Could the Lord have endorsed such action on the part of Catholics? We are going to investigate all of this.

In order to do so, we will now review a contemporary version of the basic text that is quoted here:

**"I pursue my enemies, I catch up with them, I don't return until I have killed them".** *[Psalms 18 verses 38, Bible Parole de Vie (translated into English from the original text)].*

It is important to note that this text is part of the Old Testament and justifies the killing of the enemies of God's people in ancient times. To understand how divine justice was brought about during this period, it is worth reading this:

**"And if any mischief follow, then thou shalt give life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, *burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe*". [Exodus 21 verses 23-25, King James Bible].**

What is presented here is to demand an eye for an eye, which means to do to one's neighbour what he does to us.

What I have just presented to you may, for some, tend to prove that the Catholic Church had biblical legitimacy when, without mercy, it hounded and killed all those opposing people who refused to deny God's Word and rejected Catholic dogma. However, let us not forget, these texts are taken from the Old Testament, therefore long before the coming of Jesus, whom the Catholic Church "*says*" it serves.

If this were the case, as servants of Christ the approach and basis of conduct of the Catholic prelates should have been quite different:

**"You heard that it was said, 'An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth'. But I say to you not to resist the evil person. But whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also. *And to the one wanting to sue you and take your tunic, permit him also the cloak.* [...] "You heard that it was said, 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy'.**

**But I say to you, be loving your enemies, and be praying for the ones persecuting you, so that you may prove-to-be sons of your Father in *the* heavens — because He causes His sun to rise upon evil and good *ones*, and He sends rain upon righteous and unrighteous ones.**

**Therefore you shall be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect". [Matthew 5 verses 38-40, 43-45, 48, Disciples' Literal New Testament Bible (DLNT)].**

In addition let's consider this: **"Be blessing the ones persecuting you — be blessing and not cursing [...] To be giving-back evil for evil to no one; to be providing-for good things in the sight of all people, *living-in-peace with all people if possible — as far as from you*; to not be avenging yourselves, beloved, but give a place to the wrath of God. For it has been written: "Vengeance is for Me, I will repay, says the Lord" [Deut 32:35].**

*“But if your enemy is hungry, feed him; If he is thirsty, give-a-drink to him. For doing this, you will heap coals of fire upon his head” [Prov 25:21-22]. **Do not be overcome by evil, but be overcoming evil with good”.** [Romans 12 verses 14, 17-21, Disciples’ Literal New Testament Bible (DLNT)].*

We are immediately aware of the contrast between what God’s Word has established and what Catholic doctrine advocates.

The servants of Jesus are peaceful people who do not use violence. An eye for an eye and tooth for tooth has been abolished by Christ, who asks us not to repay evil for evil. On the contrary, he asks us to do good to those who persecute us. The Lord asks us to be perfect as he himself is, doing good to all, especially to our enemies and adversaries.

Thus, even though St. Augustine used this text from the Book of Psalms, seen above, to justify the butchery that the Catholic Church practised by torturing and killing its opponents, who as we have seen were Christians (*Martyrs*) and generally peaceful people, the Lord could not accept such CRIMES.

Are you aware of the type of doctrine that Saint Augustine advocated here, that is to say the Catholic dogma?

Let me give you an example :

*Imagine in this generation, a religion, which in order to convert its enemies, tortures them, kills them and goes to war against nations that don't have the same faith as it does.*

*What would you call such actions? In my opinion, the current term is terrorism! Well before those active in this century, there was a precursor, the Catholic Church, which acted in this manner and in a planned way, killing men, women and children. The massacre of the Protestants of Saint Barthélemy is a good example of this.*

*During this tragedy all of the entrances to the city of Paris were cordoned off and the partisans, the Catholic bouchés (butchers), meticulously murdered men, women, children and newborns, without any mercy, as if they were nothing more than vermin.*

*This massacre, which began in Paris on "the 24th of August 1572", lasted several days, then spread to about twenty provincial towns and lasted for weeks and even months.*

*Under the murderous Catholic embrace, between "15,000 and 30,000 Protestants" lost their lives. Their crime was to have rejected the Catholic dogma, in order to only serve the Lord by having his Word as a basis of their faith and it alone.*

Thus, history teaches us that the worst and greatest terrorists the world has ever known were the Papacy at the head of its bestial and bloodthirsty horde. What we have just seen speaks for itself.

In doing so, do not be fooled by this iniquitous text of St. Augustine, which we have just seen and which attempts to use a biblical basis to justify the genocide of God's children of which he was the instigator. Let us now return to this text. He also makes it clear that one must not stop until death ensues.

One must not stop until one has seen them agonising. The lie had to die in them literally and figuratively. To sum up all that we have just seen, I would say that *St. Augustine* prepared the minds of many generations, teaching them that extreme measures had to be applied to those who were recognised as heretics.

He also decreed that those who only have faith in God's Word must be pursued and tortured. These writings became the Catholic Church's basis of faith. Through his pen, the Papacy tortured, killed and looted a multitude of Christians who, only having faith in God's Word, rejected Catholic dogma.

It should be noted that, in my opinion, St. Augustine's most pernicious works are those in which he argued that torturing and killing heretics was a way of winning over the survivors to the Catholic cause.

The basis of faith that he left to the Catholic Church allowed this religion to destroy those recognised as heretical in countless ways.

On the strength of the teachings that this man left behind, this religion put those recognised as heretics under psychological pressure in addition to physical suffering.

This text gives us some information on the subject:

"[...] In 1076 or 1077, a Cathar has been condemned to the stake by the bishop of Cambrai and his chapter.

**Despite the intervention of the Archbishop, other Cathars were given the choice by the magistrates of Milan of either paying homage to the Cross or being burnt at the stake.**

**By far the greatest number chose the latter".** [Extract from: « *Publication d'informations écrites par Joseph Blotzer. Transcrit par Matt Dean. L'encyclopédie Catholique, Volume VIII. Publié 1910 ; Robert Appleton Société. Inquisition Information catholique I. Les répression de l'hérésie pendant les douze premiers Siècles 3* » (translated into English from the original text)].

First of all, to understand the context of what is happening here, it is necessary to know that the Lord has never asked us to worship the cross. On the contrary, He presents it as an object of a curse.

To find out, I invite you to read *Volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Perfidious pagan heritage ratified and magnified by the dominator of nations*".

We can now return to this text. Thus, it is an unspeakable choice that the Catholic prelates offered to those recognised as heretics.

These two options were most tortuous:

*Either to obey and worship the cross and thereby reject God by worshipping something other than Him, in transgression of the first and second of the Ten Commandments. Or accept rejection of the cross and end up burning at the infamous stake.*

Faith being stronger than death, many chose to burn at the stake instead of denying the Lord. Thus, it was the courageous and faithful children of God that the Catholic Church persecuted and killed. By doing so this religion fulfilled the criteria of persecution and death that the little horn was to carry out against God's people.

So far we have discovered many of the iniquitous deeds of the Catholic Church, but that is not everything. To find out more about these bloody, read *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*The bloodthirsty legislative legacy*".



Let us now turn to the text of [Revelation 13 verses 1-17], where many clues about this entity with seven heads and ten horns are given to us. The first one tells us that power has been given to this beast, which suggests that it can legislate (*create laws*), this symbol is reinforced by the fact that it has received the ability to wage war against the saints.

In order for there to be war, there must be a law that enshrines it. In addition to this power is given to it over all human beings.

This beast is therefore a political power! But it is also, like the little horn, a religious place, because people bow down before it to worship it. It is therefore a political-religious place!

These two criteria are fulfilled by the Catholic Church, because, as we have seen, over the course of the centuries it has dominated both the State and all of Christendom for a long period.

We have another weighty clue, because we learn that the reign of this abnormal being will ensue in two stages. It must reign all-powerful, then must be defeated, for a time, after which humanity will once again give it glory. We also discover that one of the heads of this apocalyptic beast is mortally wounded as it were, symbolising a loss of power and a period of captivity. What I have just presented also represents what happened to the Catholic Church:

*Napoleon overthrew Pope Pius VI, whom he had kidnapped and imprisoned in Valence (France) and where he died on the 29th of August, 1799. Then came the French Revolution when the monarchy and the institutional power of the Catholic Church were abrogated.*

*Thus the power that the pope had had for centuries over the States ended. Nevertheless, prophecy predicts that the beast will be healed and be powerful again.*

*This situation also happened with regard to the papacy!*

In order to present it to you I invite you to read this text: **"With the Pope as head of state of the Vatican City, the papacy has possessed territories since the 8th century.**

**These Papal States strongly exercised their independence over the reigning monarchs.**

*The unification of the peninsula in 1861 together with the creation of the Kingdom of Italy led to the annexation of the pontifical state on the 2nd of October, 1870. The papacy was losing the city of Rome, which had become the capital of the new kingdom.*

What was going to be known as the “Roman question” would only finally be solved with the Lateran Agreements, signed on the 11th of February, 1929 between the Holy See and Mussolini's Italy, agreements which have founded the Vatican City-State”.

[...] These agreements recognised the exclusive sovereignty of the pope over this territory of 44 hectares comprising the Vatican City. The pope was once again going to be recognised as a head of state. [...]

[From the website: « <https://eglise.catholique.fr/vatican>, partie: Saint-Siège et Vatican » (translated into English from the original text)].

Let's also consider this: *"The Holy See or Apostolic See: It is the legal expression of the pastoral government of the Roman Catholic Church, of which the Pope is the visible head. [...]*

– The “Apostolic” Nuncio in France is the “ambassador” of the Holy See... *and not of the Vatican City State!*

– *The French ambassador is appointed to the Holy See... and not to the Vatican City State.*

– The Vatican City State does not have a seat at the UN, but it is the Holy See that represents the Roman Catholic Church there through its permanent observer status, *just like the Red Cross or the Order of Malta (legal entities recognised by international law).*

– When the Pope goes to a country, he does not visit it as a head of state (even if he has all of the honours), *but as head of the Holy See.* The Roman Curia: The Roman Curia which has been active since ancient times is the assortment of dicasteries (ministries) and organisms which help the Pope in his supreme pastoral responsibility [...]. It is mainly composed of:

The Secretariat of State: [...] 3 ecclesiastical courts [...].  
[From the site: « <https://eglise.catholique.fr/vatican>, text by: Father B. Dubasque, juin 2014, partie: En savoir plus sur le Vatican » (translated into English from the original text)].

In my opinion, these texts are very explicit. Firstly the first presents us with the position that the papacy, at the head of the Catholic Church, acted as a head of state, which had other states under its sway.

Its administrative base was established in the *Vatican City in Italy* and more precisely in Rome. During this period Italy was under Catholic rule. Then came a time when this country chose to emancipate itself from the yoke of the papacy and became an autonomous sovereign state. From then on the Catholic Church was in decline and lost the right to be recognised as a state.

Thus, by this act, the mortal wound that Bonaparte had begun to inflict on the beast (*Catholicism*) was definitively recorded. Then this text presents us with the recognition of the Vatican City as a State and the Pope was once again elevated as the head of that State.

The second text gives us more information about the structure of the Vatican. We learn that this place is managed along the lines of a government or a nation, so we find there:

*Dicasteries (ministries) and therefore their ministers help the Pope to govern. Ambassadors have also been instituted and as such are empowered to deal with all of the nations of the earth. As in any state, there are also courts. When the Pope visits a country, he receives all of the honours due to a head of state. In addition, although as a state the Vatican does not have a seat at the United Nations, the Papacy does have permanent observer status at the UN.*

So from what we have just seen from these texts, which come from a Catholic website, we understand that the Pope no longer has any real political power, but as head of state his influence in politics is now that of a spiritual consultant. *But is this really the case?*

This text gives us some information on this subject: **"The head of the UN was received by the head of the Catholic Church on Friday in an audience at the Vatican.**

*Five days away from Christmas, United Nations Secretary-General António Guterres met Pope Francis whom he hailed as a fervent defender of human dignity".*

**“You are a messenger of hope and humanity who helps to reduce human suffering and promote human dignity”,** said Mr. Guterres at the end of his audience with the head of the Catholic Church. **“Your clear moral voice stands out *whenever you highlight the plight of the most vulnerable, including refugees and migrants facing poverty and inequality*”,** he added [...]

The Secretary-General praised Pope Francis' call for disarmament and his role as a **“builder of bridges between communities”** [...] *At the Vatican, the head of the UN publicly recognised the strong support that Pope Francis had given to the work of the United Nations. [...] Before the member states,*

*Pope Francis had called upon all UN member states to protect the environment and fight against exclusion. That year, the Member States had agreed on 17 Sustainable Development Goals [...].”*

[From the website: « [https://news.un.org/fr\\_story](https://news.un.org/fr_story) (translated into English from the original text)].

The main point that I want to raise is the influence that the Pope has in the United Nations even though his role there is only that of a spiritual adviser.

We are discovering that the influence of the Papacy on the various nations of the earth is therefore real, because his voice is heard and his remarks taken into account and acted upon.

Here Pope Francis called on the States that are members of the UN to protect the environment and as a result concrete plans were put in place. Otherwise, have you noticed all of this praise that the head of the UN addressed to the Pope?

Let's review some of the words he used to describe Pope Francis:

- **“[...] A fervent defender of human dignity [...].”**,
- **“You are a messenger of hope and humanity who helps to reduce human suffering and promote human dignity”,**
- **“Your clear moral voice stands out [...].”**,
- **“Builder of bridges between communities”.**

*What is happening here is the fulfilment of the prophecy.*

It had been prophesied that the deadly wound of the beast with seven heads and ten horns was to be healed and that therefore the inhabitants of the earth, living without God, were to worship and praise him.

This is happening with the papacy, since although the pope does not have any power over governments, they have all submitted to him. More often than not, once elected, the leaders of the nations come to make a vow of allegiance to him.

To find out the truth about this situation, let's read this: *"Visit to the Vatican this Tuesday, the 26th of June, by the French president Emmanuel Macron. [...] Visits by French presidents to the Vatican have now become a tradition, which to some extent were inaugurated by René Coty, president of the IVth Republic.*

*In June 1957, he was received by Pope Pius XII at the apostolic palace. [...]"*. [From the website: « <https://www.vaticannews.va/fr>, partie: *En images, les visites des présidents français au Vatican* » (translated into English from the original text)].

Let us add this other text to our study: **"The visit to the Vatican by the President of the Republic of Congo (Congo-Brazzaville), Denis Sassou Nguesso [...] 9th of December, 2013 [...] After talking for about twenty minutes with Pope Francis [...]"**

**Pope Francis presented a rosary to each of the 15 members of the Congolese delegation. [...]"**. [From the website: « <https://www.cath.ch/news/> parti Rome: *Le fondamentalisme en Afrique évoqué lors de la visite au Vatican du président du Congo-Brazzaville* » (translated into English from the original text)].

Let's finish with this: **"The Christian Lebanese President Michel Aoun was received by Pope Francis at the Vatican, thus choosing to break with the tradition of reserving the French capital for his first official visit to Europe.**

*At the end of his meeting on Thursday with the Pope, Mr. Aoun declared that his country had "a special place in the heart of Pope Francis" [...]"* **He will respond to our invitation to visit the country of the Land of the Cedars.**

**The popes have always seen Lebanon as a model, which has always regarded the Holy See with appreciation and gratitude", he added, according to the same source. [...]**

*The Lebanese president, who spoke in Arabic with an interpreter, offered the Pope a baby Jesus dressed in a Lebanese flag and a red cape, as well as a bronze olive branch, the symbol of peace".*

*[From the website: « <https://www.voaafrique.com/>, partie: Le président libanais réserve sa première visite européenne au pape » (translated into English from the original text)].*

What happens in these texts seems quite insignificant yet their impact is quite considerable, because let us not forget the Pope is no longer supposed to have any political power.

However, the presidents of various republics come to visit him and by doing so some of them depart from their traditions by first going to see him before visiting their counterparts and European partners.

The Pope is regarded by certain presidents with appreciation and gratitude and they fervently hope that he will do them the "favour" of visiting their countries. Here we again discover the admiration and adoration which the beast with seven heads and ten horns (*the papacy*) arouses in the hearts of the inhabitants of the nations.

Furthermore, it is customary that there are exchanges of "spiritual" gifts between the Pope and these senior international leaders. Thus, the pope offered rosaries to a president and to several of these senior leaders and a president offered him a baby Jesus. All of these being idolatrous symbols that the Catholic cult has instituted.

To understand this, read *Volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Examples of pagan rites from Roman times that the little horn has used for his benefit*". Thus the beast's wound (*the Catholic Church*) was healed and it now enjoys a new kind of power. It is not like the old one, for it has a great religious power, which leads the whole earth to worship it.

We have just seen many symbols that qualify the Catholic Church as the little horn and the beast with seven heads and ten horns, but we will not stop there. [*Revelation 13*] also describes this entity as a blasphemous being. In order to better understand it, we must understand what blasphemy is biblically speaking.

To do so, let's read this: "*[...] For a good work we stone thee not; But for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God*". [*John 10 verse 33, King James Bible*].

Let's finish with this: "*When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.*

*But there was certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?"* [*Mark 2 verses 5-7, King James Bible*].

Let's supplement our studies with this final text: "**But whoever blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit and His power [by attributing the miracles done by Me to Satan] never has forgiveness, but is guilty of an everlasting sin [a sin which is unforgivable in this present age as well as in the age to come]**" — **[Jesus said this] because the scribes and Pharisees were [attributing His miracles to Satan by] saying, "He has an unclean spirit"**. [*Mark 3 verses 29-30, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

Biblically speaking, there are two situations that qualify as blasphemy:

*The first is to pretend to be God, the second is to attribute what is the Lord's, especially in the case of the Lord's Holy Spirit, (His glory, His work, etc.) to a person or to a spirit (angel or demon) etc.*

Since the apocalyptic beast hurls its blasphemies against God, this symbolises that it will have to declare that it is God.

The objective of this abominable and blasphemous being will thus be to become God. The Catholic Church has realised this fact because it has presented the pope as the most powerful being in the universe.

This religion also declared that its doctrines were placed above God's Word and were therefore superior to it.

To discover the truth behind this situation, read the chapter entitled "*The obscure plans of the dominator of nations*".

We have made good progress, but not enough, so let us continue on this beautiful journey together. A great mathematical clue is given to us in this text of [Revelation 13]:

*We learn that the name of the beast is represented by a number, which is 666.*

To understand this mystery, we must go back to the origins of the Catholic Church, which, let us not forget, came into existence among the people of the Roman Empire. By doing so, when we look at Roman numerals, they also represent letters.

**So I = 1, V = 5 and X = 10.**

Starting from these fundamentals, we will first establish what name the Catholic Church has given to the Papacy and we will convert it into Roman numerals. This text tells us about this name:

**"[...] That the same Roman Pontiff** *is the successor of Blessed Peter, Prince of the Apostles, the true Vicar of Jesus Christ, the head of the whole Church [...]"*.

*[Excerpt from: « Bref "Super soliditate Petrae", 28 novembre 1786. Erreurs du fébronianisme concernant le pouvoir suprême du pape » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Let us finish with this second text: **"[...] The Roman Pontiff** *receives the power of his ministry by which, as the successor of Peter, true vicar of Christ and head of the Church, he has power over the whole Church [...]"*.

*[Excerpt from: « Constitution Auctorem fidei à tous les fidèles, 28 août 1794. De la dénomination "tête ministérielle" attribuée au pontife] » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Let's consider this third text: **"[...] In Blessed Peter, Prince of the Apostles, the Roman Pontiff,** *his successor, was established by God as the visible head of the Church and Vicar of Jesus Christ, [...]"*

*[Excerpt from: « Bref "Super soliditate Petrae", 28 novembre 1786. Erreurs du fébronianisme concernant le pouvoir suprême du pape » (translated into English from the original text)].*



The Catholic Church has established that *the pope is the vicar of Christ*, therefore of God's Son, which in Latin, which was the language spoken by the Romans living in the ancient region of central Italy known as Lazio, gives:

**Vicar of the Son of God = VICARIUS FILII DEI.**

In order to solve the mystery of this name, we must not forget that it is a puzzle, so we will look for similarities between these letters and Roman numerals. Before we begin, it is important to note that some Roman numerals have equivalences, so that **U = V = 5**.

In addition, some letters are not equivalent to others and are mute, but this does not disqualify this thesis, because in human language, some letters in a word can be mute.

*This is the case with the H in French. In our puzzle the silent letters are the AR and the S of VICARIUS or the F of FILII, as well as the E of DEI.*

*Which yields: (V = 5) + (I = 1) + (C = 100) + [AR are silent letters] + (I = 1) + (U = V = 5) + [SF are silent letters] + (I = 1) + (L = 50) + (I = 1) + (I = 1) + (D = 500) + [E is a silent letter] + (I = 1) = 666.*

Please note that I have only repeated the work which has already been carried out, because the mystery of the beast's name has already been deciphered a long time ago by God's people.

*Nor am I the first to bear evidence that the pope, who has proclaimed himself the "Vicar of God's Son", is the beast bearing the name of 666.*

Nevertheless it was unavoidable that I should mention these elements for those who had not yet mastered them. To continue we will look at another prophetic symbol linked to the beast with seven heads and ten horns, that also describes the Catholic Church.

To find out more about it, let's read this: *"But the angel said to me, "Why do you wonder? I will explain to you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns.*

**“The beast that you saw was [once], but [now] is not, and he is about to come up out of the abyss (the bottomless pit, the dwelling place of demons) and go to destruction (perdition).**

*And the inhabitants of the earth, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, will be astonished when they see the beast, because he was and is not and is yet to come [to earth].*

**Here is the mind which has wisdom [and this is what it knows about the vision]. The seven heads are seven hills on which the woman sits; and they are seven kings [...]** [Revelation 17 verses 7-10, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Above all, it is important to note that it is the same beast we have just studied that is mentioned here. It has seven heads and ten horns and it must appear once, then disappear and reappear.

We also discover that the inhabitants of the earth who live without God, will be in awe of this beast. In order to understand this, let us review the portion of this text that presents this situation in this other biblical version:

**"The beast which you saw was and is not and is going to come-up out of the abyss. And he goes to destruction.**

**And the ones dwelling upon the earth whose name has not been written on the book of life since the foundation of the world will be caused-to-marvel while seeing the beast, because he was and is not and will be present".** [Revelation 17 verse 9, *Disciples' Literal New Testament Bible (DLNT)*].

Otherwise, the symbols I want to highlight are those of the seven hills, which are the seven heads of the beast on which Babylon is sitting (*her seat*).

In order to understand what we are talking about, we must first of all look for the symbol representing "*seat*" in the Bible.

To do this, let us read the following: "*Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Because thine heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, I am a God, I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas;*

*Yet thou art a man, and not God, though thou set thine heart as the heart of God" [Ezekiel 28 verse 2, King James Bible].*

Let's supplement our studies with this:

**"Would the wicked make you sit on their throne, they who form iniquitous designs in spite of the law?" [Psalm 94 verse 20, Bible Louis Second (translated into English from the original text)].**

In prophetic language, he who sits on a seat that belongs to another person does the deeds of the owner of the seat. Now we need to understand what the symbol of the "head" represents. In order to do so, let us read this: **"And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead;**

*That in all things he might have the preeminence. For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell [...] Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ [...]" [Colossians 1 verses 18-19, 24, King James Bible].*

Let's supplement our studies with this most interesting text:

*"And it came to pass in the days of Abaz̄ the son of Jotham, the son of Uz̄ziah, king of Judah, that Rezin the king of Syria, and Pekah the son of Remaliah, king of Israel, went up to Jerusalem to war against it, but could not prevail against it. [...]"*

**For the head of Syria is Damascus, and the head of Damascus is Rezin [...] And the head of Ephraim is Samaria, and the head of Samaria is Remaliah's son. [...]" [Isaiah 7 verses 1, 8-9, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].**

*The symbol of the head represents the one who leads!*

In the case of Jesus this symbol is even deeper, because it is the Word of God made flesh [John 1 verses 1-18], so it is the divine teachings and commandments (*laws*). This symbol is also implied in the image given of the various kings shown above, for in order to reign, a monarch does so according to written texts and legal rules.

The fact that the whore of Babylon sits on the heads of the beast represents the fact that she practises these precepts and doctrines.

To discover this I invite you to read the chapter entitled "*The purpose of the message of the second angel of the apocalypse*".

However, this symbol of the head also represents a given place, which is the capital of a state where its monarch or senior leader lives.

Let us reread part of the text of the prophet Isaiah, which we have just seen, in this other version:

**"For the head (capital) of Aram is Damascus and the head of Damascus is [King] Rezin [...] And the head (capital) of Ephraim is Samaria, and the head of Samaria is Remaliah's son [King Pekah]. [...]"** [Isaiah 7 verses 8-9, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

This symbol of Babylon the Great, the woman of the apocalypse, sitting on this seat, which is made of the seven heads of the beast, therefore symbolises the adherence of this iniquitous woman to her mount's deeds, but also indicates the geographical place where this beast resides (*or it lives or remains*).

This place represents the capital of the country where it is located. To find out what this is for the papacy read this: **"The Vatican:**

**Strictly speaking it is one of the Seven Hills of Rome and place of the execution and burial of the apostle Peter [...]. The Vatican [...] Where a basilica was built. It was the Basilica of St. John Lateran that was to become the cathedral of the Bishop of Rome"**.

[From the site: « <https://eglise.catholique.fr/vatican>, partie: *En savoir plus sur le Vatican* » (translated into English from the original text)].

Let's supplement our studies with this most relevant text: **"The Pope is the Bishop of Rome and thereby, the successor of the Apostle Peter. The Gospels show that Saint Peter enjoyed a primacy within the apostolic group constituted by Christ.**

**The Pope inherits this primacy. It makes him the head of the College of Bishops and therefore the supreme head of the Catholic Church.**

[...] *Since the origins of the Church, the Bishop of Rome is considered to be the successor of the Apostle Peter, by virtue of the fact that Rome is the place where the head of the apostles was martyred.*

*The Pope is the Bishop of Rome". [From the site: « <https://eglise.catholique.fr>, partie: Le rôle du Pape » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Before going into more detail, I would like to remind you that we have already seen that it was in Italy and in Rome, that the Vatican was founded as a state and in fact on two occasions.

The Vatican was a sovereign state that dominated all states and in any case all of those in the west.

Then the Papacy lost that dominance over the nations. In a second phase, the Vatican was again re-established as a sovereign state. Nevertheless, during all of these phases, the nerve centre of the Vatican did not change location.

Now we understand that this place was not chosen at random, because the city of Rome is the place where the apostle Peter was tortured and buried.

Thus the city of Rome is the religious centre (*lungs*) of the Catholic Church. The symbol of this mythical city is these seven hills and it is on one of them that the Vatican was built.

It is in this way that the prophecy of the seven hills representing the seven heads of the beast is well represented in the Catholic traditions.

The prophecy also specifies that these seven heads are seven kings and this symbol is the same symbol that we find in the prophecy of [Daniel 7] where we saw that the little horn was to appear among ten horns and make three of them fall.

*Here we are talking about the Roman empire.*

Having been founded on the Roman laws, the Papacy has therefore based its structure on the laws of the monarchs who came before it and over which it eventually established its domination.

Thus the seven remaining horns with their legal and political framework became the basis on which the Papacy built its power.

This is symbolised by that part of the prophecy which presents the seven heads of the beast as also being seven kings.

We have come to the end of this chapter and to finish it on a high I have saved the best till last.

In order to do this I would like to tell you that what most identifies the deeds of the little horn is that it had to seek to change the times and the law.

The Catholic Church has fulfilled these two poles of the prophecy of [Daniel 7 verse 25] in a textual way. It has even gone so far as to change the Lord's Ten Commandments.

I presented these facts to you in *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of "the Eternal God" or of the "sun god"*".

If not, although the symbol of the little horn has been interpreted time and time again by theologians over the centuries, there are still hidden points, as if concealed under a veil of mystery.

If the law that the little horn was seeking to change has been properly interpreted so far, it is not the same situation for the times it would seek to change:

*They have been misinterpreted.*

I present to you the situation regarding the times that the little horn seeks to change and the part that the Catholic Church has played and still plays in this work, in the chapter entitled "*The reality of prophetic times*". So this religion has also sought to change the times the Lord has established just as it has sought to do so for God's Law.

These two deeds that I have just mentioned qualify the Catholic Church more than ever as being the little horn, for it is presented as aspiring to change the times and the law.

Thus the Catholic Church fully meets the criteria of the little horn and the apocalyptic beast with seven heads and ten horns.

It is also the Catholic Church, which, in the guise of the seven-headed, ten-horned beast, will be the one who will give the order to allow the apocalyptic beast, which is like a beastly lamb with two horns, to bestow the mark of the beast without which no one will be able to "*buy*" or "*sell*".

We will discover this reality in the chapters entitled "*The modalities of the sealing of the two peoples (that of God and that of the beast)*", and "*The prophetic reality that hides behind the symbols "buy" and "sell"*".

## 9 The obscure plans of the dominator of nations

**S**o far we have seen many pernicious works of Catholic prelates over the centuries. Certainly many of you cannot believe that, while claiming to be in the service of God, they have been able to work so much against him and his people.

I want you to know that everything I mention in this book, as well as in its second volume, is not the result of isolated facts due to random circumstances, because the deeds of the Catholic Church had been prophesied and were described through various symbols.

We have already discovered this in the features of the beast with seven heads and ten horns, as well as in the form of a little horn, but other images in prophetic language also identify it.

In Paul's time, this apocalyptic beast, also presented symbolically by *the little horn*, whose ambition was to become God, was called *God's adversary, the ungodly, or the son of perdition*, who would rise above all that is called God.

We find this prophecy in the following text: *"We find this prophecy in the following text: 'May no one seduce you in any way;*

**Because apostasy must have happened before and one saw the appearance of the man of sin, the son of perdition, the adversary who rises above everything that is called God or that which we adore, until sitting in the temple of God, proclaiming himself God.**

*Don't you remember that I was telling you these things when I was still with you? And now you know what is holding him back, so that he may be revealed at the proper time.*

**For the mystery of iniquity is already at work; it is only necessary that the one who still holds him back has disappeared.**

**And then shall the ungodly one appear, whom the Lord Jesus will overthrow with the breath of his mouth and destroy by the splendour of his coming.**

**The appearance of this ungodly one shall be in accordance with how Satan works. [...]" [2 Thessalonians 2 verses 3-9, Bible Louis Second (translated into English from the original text)].**

One of the important symbols that identifies this abominable being is that it is behind a great apostasy to come.

To understand what this is about, first of all we must understand what apostasy is. In my research in dictionaries I have found the following information on this subject:

*Apostasy is the negation, disavowal and the public renouncement of someone's faith that has been previously professed. Here it is about the rejection of Jesus' faith (that is God's Word) by that treacherous being.*

In this biblical text we have a clearer view of the nature and deeds of the one who is called *God's adversary*. As far as the papacy at the head of the Catholic Church is concerned he has totally accomplished this work of apostasy that the *son of perdition* had planned.

We will see about this, but before doing so we must take into account another part of this prophecy, which is directly related to the works of anathema that this iniquitous being was to carry out.

In order for him to be able to rise above all that we adore and to be able to declare himself God, before this could happen, a person who was an embarrassing witness had to be made to disappear.

In order to discover who this embarrassing witness is, who prevents God's enemy from acting, we must emphasise an important point, which the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians highlights:

*It is said that the mystery of iniquity is already at work! Iniquity is sin [1 John 5 verse 17, Bible Louis Second], which itself is the transgression of God's law [1 John 3 verse 4].*

*Thus the mystery of iniquity arises due the violation of God's law.*

This work had already begun in the time of the early Church, because Paul says that the mystery of iniquity is already at work, but it could not take full effect because the law was at the centre of the life of God's people.

So that Satan and his servant, the son of perdition, could act, God's law had to disappear.



Of all of God's word these are the Ten Commandments which testify against iniquity and it is they which prohibit worshipping other things or anyone other than God. They are also the ones that establish that we are to worship and revere only the one true God, he being the Lord the God of all eternity [*Exodus 20 verses 1-5*].

So, because of the papacy's megalomaniacal plans, God's law had become embarrassing and so the Catholic Church falsified it. To find out, read *Volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of "the Eternal God" or of the "sun god"*".

In addition, so that this work could not be discovered, this religion had forbidden the reading and possession of the Bible. Any persons contravening this edict risked becoming embroiled with the painful game of the inquisitors who tortured them like a cat playing with a mouse. Then they were invited to be burnt at the stake!

I present this work to you in *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*The bloodthirsty legislative legacy*". For those who originated them these abominable and iniquitous events had a specific reason and followed a well-established plan.

It was difficult for the papacy to tamper with God's law unnoticed, if the Bible was in the hands of the people. Thus the main thrust of the conspiracy it fomented was to completely wipe the Holy Scriptures from the face of the earth. The knowledge of the Gospel was a brake on the Catholic prelates' thirst for power, so it had to be eradicated!

Through its principles, the Bible has the capacity to enlighten the one who reads it, allowing him to distinguish the sacred from the profane. This is how attacks on God's Word were to be implemented by this religion. This work manifested itself in the form of *considerable cuts (deletion of certain parts)*, which took place within the Ten Commandments, especially in relation to the second and fourth.

Let us see what it is all about:

*The second of the Ten Commandments is the one that forbids the worship of graven images and statues and this fact was an obstacle to the expansion of idolatrous Catholic doctrines.*

*Indeed, in this dogma it was established that statues and icons were to be worshipped and to this day they proudly adorn Catholic churches.*

*The fourth commandment is the one that urges the observance of the Sabbath, so it is in total opposition to the worship of the day of the sun, Sunday, which Catholic dogma inherited from Constantine, who established it to revere the "sun god".*

These two commandments instituted in God's Word considerably hindered the progress of the Catholic Church's plans and these troublesome witnesses had to be removed. Thus, with its increasing power it came to falsify the Ten Commandments.

In *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of "the Eternal God" or of the "sun god"*", I have displayed a comparative table which, highlights what this Christian religion has established and what the Holy Scriptures say.

On one side of the table I have put the ten commandments that God has given us, which are taken from God's Word and are based on the text of [*Exodus 20 verses 3-17*].

The other half of the table shows the Ten Commandments which the Catholic Church has falsified and arranged to suit its own ends.

I invite you to take the time to make the comparison between the two columns of this table that I have just presented to you because as far as the transgression of God's law is concerned, the malpractices of this religion are flagrant. You will certainly be amazed when you read the said comparative table!

It seems important to me to underline the fact that the text found in this table presenting the ten commandments reworked "*in favour of Catholic doctrine*" is not from the beginning of Christianity or even from the Middle Ages, but it was enacted in 1942 and the version I have used is a re-edition of this text which is from 1963.

This comparative table showing the changes made to the *Ten Commandments* is therefore a text that is contemporary to us and reveals the nothingness on which the foundations of Catholic dogma were and still are founded.

Thus, in order to get rid of this *true and embarrassing witness that God's Word represents*, the senior Catholic dignitaries put in place strategies to quench their thirst for omnipotence and to do so they formally forbade the people to read the Bible.

Thus through the *Council of Toulouse in 1229* the first phase of the plan was put in place, where a ban was decreed on reading and possessing the Bible. This text was reinforced by the *Council of Trent in 1506*, which allowed the Catholic elite to read the Bible but only in Latin, a language that the people did not master.

In this way, the Catholic Church was able to keep people ignorant of God's Word. *Volume II* of this book presents this reality to you in the chapter entitled "*The muzzling of the faithful witness in order to establish the infamy of the mystery of iniquity*".

Through this work of "*spiritual illiteracy*" that the Catholic Church put in place, it also fulfilled another aspect of the prophecy that presents the son of perdition. At the beginning of the excerpt, from the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians, seen earlier, Paul exhorts us to remain anchored in God's Word.

He also asks us to be careful that words or letters supposedly written by Christ's disciples do not offer teachings that have not been established in the Bible. Here Paul exhorts us not to be deceived by pernicious doctrines and invites us to remain faithful to the teachings (*God's Word*) that we have already received.

In order to understand these recommendations, it is vital not to forget just how important the Gospel is in the hearts of those who cherish it. In order to do this let us read the following:

*"Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: He that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. [...]*

*And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free". [John 8 verses 12 and 32, King James Bible].*

Jesus is God's Word made flesh [*John 1 verses 1-14*], so all who diligently study the Holy Scriptures abide in the truth and have the light of life in them. In doing so, they cannot be deceived by the agents of the devil who preach these pernicious doctrines.

Thus as long as God's Word, which is the true witness (*Jesus Christ*) dwells among God's people, no adulterated spiritual doctrine could be instituted.

Here is the safeguard that the Lord had prescribed for this:

*"I marvel that ye are so quickly removing from him that called you in the grace of Christ unto a different gospel; which is not another gospel: only there are some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.*

**But though we, or an angel from heaven, should preach unto you any gospel other than that which we preached unto you, let him be anathema.**

**As we have said before, so say I now again, If any man preacheth unto you any gospel other than that which ye received, let him be anathema".** [*Galatians 1 verses 6-9, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Thus, since the biblical teachings were impediments to the papacy's thirst for power, it made them disappear by forbidding people to read or possess the Bible.

Once these prohibitions were decreed, the Catholic Church established doctrinal foundations by which its dogma would no longer be questioned and to this end, throughout the centuries, decrees and edicts were promulgated.

By way of illustration, the following is an example of what could be found in them: **"I recognise the Holy, Catholic and Apostolic Roman Church as the Mother and Teacher of all Churches. I promise and I swear true obedience to the Roman Pontiff, successor of Blessed Peter, head of the apostles, and vicar of Jesus Christ.**

**I receive and profess without question all that, by the holy canons and by the ecumenical councils, principally by the Holy Council of Trent and by the Ecumenical Council of the Vatican, has been issued, defined and declared (specially on the primacy of the Roman pontiff and his infallible magisterium).**

*At the same time, I also condemn, I reject and I anathematise all that is contrary to them and all and any types of heresy condemned, rejected and anathematised by the Church".*

[*Excerpt from: « La dépendance du concile œcuménique catholique par rapport au pape édité vers les années 1515; Profession de foi tridentine » (translated into English from the original text)*].

In this text, amongst other things the Catholic Church calls on men to “*profess without doubt*”, therefore with faith, that they agree to adhere to the precepts of the *Council of Trent*. For the record, it is this same Council that forbade the people to study the Bible unless it was through a Catholic prelate who was to read it in Latin.

As very few people were able to master Latin at that time, this Catholic decree therefore ensured that the Bible was no longer within the reach of the general population.

Those who violated what was decreed became anathemas, which led them to be burnt at the infamous stake. Thus, thanks to its already established doctrinal structure, as seen in this text above, this religion was to lay another milestone likely to nourish its “*megalomaniacal*” ambitions, in particular the one decreeing that the Roman Pontiff and therefore the Pope had an infallible magisterium.

This declared pontifical infallibility was the beginning of the process resulting in the presentation of the pope as God.

*Hum... one thing puzzles me... since human nature suggests that all of us are sinners and therefore perfectible surely no human being can be infallible! Hmm... is the pope inhuman and without sin? I will let you reflect on this for a moment...*

For the time being, for my part, here is what the Holy Scriptures teach me about the state of humanity, (*including the Pope*): “*What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: [...]*

*For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus” [Romans 3 verses 9-10, 23-24, King James Bible].*

Following what we have just read, the immediate conclusion is that only God is infallible! Let us return to the matter of the papacy.

Having been presented by the Catholic Church as being infallible, it naturally follows that its *henchmen* in “*robes of holiness*” were able to work to free their religion from the domination of the Holy Scriptures.

It was in this way that the legislators of this order declared Catholic dogma (*teaching*) superior to God's Word.

This is confirmed by the following excerpt: "*Finally at the last meeting on the 18th of January, 1562, any hesitation had disappeared.*

**The Archbishop of Reggio made a speech in which he openly declared that tradition is above the Scriptures.**

**Consequently the authority of the church could no longer be bound by the authority of the Scriptures".** [*Excerpt from: « Canon et Tradition, p: 263, Dr. H J Holtzmann » (translated into English from the original text)*].

Note, that before establishing its dogma (*its tradition*) as being more important than the Scriptures (*God's Word*), the Catholic Church had a period of hesitation.

How could it be otherwise for such a serious decision to supplant the Holy Scriptures and replace them with men's doctrines!

We certainly cannot make this change straight away. Indeed, God's Spirit calls upon our conscience to think twice. However, we are always free to act or not to act! This is what is known as the concept of free will. But the opportunity was too good and the repercussions were far too significant for the Catholic Church to turn back.

What was at stake here was to be freed from all ties, the aim being to become the most powerful entity in the universe that would not be accountable to anyone, not even to God.

*It was therefore in all conscience that this religion decreed that its dogma was superior to God's Word and therefore to God!*

What we have just seen was the first step of the work that the son of perdition had to carry out. Now we can return to the culmination of our study of [*2 Thessalonians 2 verses 3-9*], the one presenting these characteristics.

It is a being that has great spiritual power, since it is presented as sitting in God's house (*his temple*).

Moreover, he will proclaim himself God and seek to rise above all things (*even the Lord*). In order to understand how one seeks to become a "god", the following text must be taken into account:

**"And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.**

*And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost". [Acts 12 verses 21-23, King James Bible].*

As soon as our words take precedence over God's Word and we accept the glory of men, we become "God".

As we shall see, this is the type of philosophy that the Catholic Church practised and still practises. To continue, I would like to say that what we have just seen was only one step in a process of iniquitous elevation that the papacy and its faithful had undertaken.

Thus, by building upon its initial investment, this religion was able to achieve a great masterstroke by decreeing that its traditions were above the Holy Scriptures. As we have seen, these early foundations were intended to encourage the world to worship the Pope as a "god" and by extension the Catholic Church. So this religion did not stop there and *drove in another nail of iniquity* with this new text:

**"The fullness of the power which the Apostolic See and the successors of Peter, vicars of Christ, have over spiritual things is such that at the same time the decrees of the holy ecumenical council of Constance, in the fourth and the fifth session, on the authority of the general councils, approved by the Apostolic See, confirmed by the practice of the Roman pontiffs themselves and of the entire Church and always religiously observed by the Gallican Church are in force and remain immutable;**

*But those who question the validity of these decrees, as if their authority were dubious and they were less approved, or who restrict the affirmations of the Council are not approved by the Gallican Church, [...]". [Extract from: « Alexandre VIII : 6 octobre 1689; 1er février Articles gallicans concernant les droits du pape » (translated into English from the original text)].*

This text declares that the apostolic see, and therefore the papacy, possesses the "fullness of spiritual power".

In doing so, from that time on, it established its works to be superior to those of God, so it was only natural that men should be encouraged to revere this teaching.

This text enlightens us about these facts: **“[...] I likewise venerate and acknowledge the Ecumenical Council of the Vatican, and I embrace and profess very firmly all and every one of the articles that have been issued, defined and declared by it, especially about the primacy of the Roman Pontiff and regarding his infallible magisterium”**.

*[Extract from: « La profession de foi prescrite aux Orientaux par la Constitution "Nuper ad Nos" du 16 mars 1743 » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Before elaborating on the above, let us take a look at what is presented below:

**“That the same Roman Pontiff is the successor of Blessed Peter, Prince of the Apostles, the true Vicar of Jesus Christ, the head of the whole Church, the father and the doctor of all Christians and that to him was entrusted, by Our Lord Jesus Christ, the full power to nourish, regulate and govern the universal Church [...]”**. *[« Extrait littéral du Pastor Aeternus » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Catholic dogma claims to be the successor and therefore the heir of the teachings that the apostle Peter left us, while practising works which are in total opposition to those of this faithful servant of the Lord. To understand this, let us now return to our text, the one in which the Catholic Church asks us to venerate *the Ecumenical Council of the Vatican, or its dogma*.

To fully understand the significance of this commandment and to understand why the Catholic Church cannot avail itself of the apostle Peter to support its actions, let us specify the latter's position in matters of veneration.

To do this, let us take a look at what he says here: **"And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him. But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I myself also am a man"**. *[Acts 10 verses 25-26, King James Bible]*.



While Cornelius wanted to worship Peter, the latter refused this gesture, arguing that he was only a man.

We can easily understand, in view of the above, that the Catholic Church does not act according to the works of Peter. Rather, its behaviour is reminiscent of that of Satan who sought in vain to bring Jesus Christ to worship him: [*Luke 4 verses 5-8*].

Thanks to its claims to be worshipped, the Catholic Church therefore performs the same works as the devil. By calling upon the world to observe its dogma to the detriment of God's Word. Because it established that the world (*all mankind*) must observe its dogma to the detriment of God's Word, it claims the right to be worshipped and particularly, it calls men to venerate the Pope, its senior leader.

Strengthened by this spirit of bewilderment that guided it, in order to firmly establish the Catholic view that the pope was the most powerful being in the universe, this religion also gave the papacy the title of "*supreme judge of the faithful*".

This text demonstrates this to us: "*This one (Eybe 1) did not hesitate to call a "bunch of fanatics" those who he envisaged would cry out upon seeing the pontiff.*"

*Here is the man who has received the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven from God, with the power to bind and loosen, to whom no other bishop can be compared, from whom the bishops themselves receive their authority, as he himself has received his supreme power from God;*

**It is he who is the vicar of Jesus Christ, the visible head of the Church, the supreme judge of the faithful".**

[*Extract from: « Bref "Super soliditate Petrae", 28 novembre 1786. Erreurs du fébronianisme concernant le pouvoir suprême du pape » (translated into English from the original text)*].

When we read such texts without a biblical background, these words may seem reasonable to us, but it is not the case when we probe them with Bible in hand. It is therefore important to understand that this process of recognising the Pope as the supreme judge of men also implies that the divine sacrifice of Jesus has no purpose:

**"How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power [...] whom they slew and hanged on a tree: Him God raised up the third day [...]"**

**And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead".** [*Acts 10 verses 38-40, 42, King James Bible*].

This text, together with [*Acts 17 verses 30-31*], presents Jesus as having been appointed by God as **“the judge of the living and the dead”**. However, it should be noted that this rank was not granted to him without him being worthy of it.

Indeed, it was not because of his sonship with God that this title was bestowed upon him, as an inheritance from a father to his son.

It was through His divine sacrifice that Christ acquired this title.

That is why only in Jesus are we saved and delivered from the death sentence that sin had brought upon us: [*1 John 4 verses 7-13*], [*Romans 5 verses 6-11*], [*Romans 6 verses 23*], [*Colossians 2 verses 10-15*], [*Galatians 3 verses 13-29*].

Jesus Christ, could not grant himself the title of **“the supreme judge of the living and the dead”** out of complacency, because although he was the son of God and God himself, he had to learn obedience through suffering and then die an ignominious death, he the righteous one dying for the unrighteous (*for a fallen and sinful race*):

[*Hebrews 5 verses 5-10*], [*1 Peter 2 verses 21-25*], [*2 Corinthians 5 verses 17-21*].

It is because of this voluntary gift of his life for humanity and his resurrection that he acquired the divine right to become *“the supreme judge of the living and the dead”*. As you can see, this title is intrinsically linked with the sacrificial death on the cross.

Thus, Jesus Christ is the only one who is worthy of carrying the title of *“Supreme Judge of the faithful”*. Therefore, by granting this title to the pope, the Catholic Church rejects the divine sacrifice of Jesus Christ. In doing so, the underlying reflection would be the following:

*Would we be saved by the merits of the Pope? **Question:** Did a pope die and rise again to redeem you or humanity? My one and only saviour is Jesus Christ! What about you?*

*The answer to this question will allow you to know whether or not, biblically speaking, the papacy is worthy of the title of “the Supreme Judge of the Faithful”!*

This usurpation of the divine title of Jesus Christ wrongly attributed to the pope did not stop at this title alone.

Indeed, in the text that follows, it is said that the pope holds the “*supreme power*”, power that is actually in the hands of Jesus:

*“[...] Or is it necessary to call fanatical so many solemn and so often renewed decrees of Roman pontiffs and the councils by which those were condemned who denied that in Blessed Peter, Prince of the Apostles, the Roman Pontiff, his successor, has been appointed by God the visible head of the Church and Vicar of Jesus Christ and that he has been given full power to govern the Church and that all who bear the name of Christians owe him genuine obedience;*

*And that such is the virtue of the primacy he holds by divine right, that he is above all other bishops not only by the rank of honour, but also by the extent of his supreme power?”.*

*[Extract from: « Extrait de Bref “Super soliditate Petrae”, 28 novembre 1786. Erreurs du fébronianisme concernant le pouvoir suprême du pape » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Unfortunately, one can only deplore this folly of grandeur and thirst for power that led the Papacy to consider itself endowed with the supreme power, the one that only Christ holds, in other words, the Pope would have omnipotence.

To understand how supreme power is acquired, let us read this:

*“Which He produced in Christ when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all rule and authority and power and dominion [whether angelic or human], and [far above] every name that is named [above every title that can be conferred], not only in this age and world but also in the one to come.*

*And He put all things [in every realm] in subjection under Christ’s feet, and appointed Him as [supreme and authoritative] head over all things in the church” [Ephesians 1 verses 20-22, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

Let's supplement our studies with this: **"For He (the Father) has put all things in subjection under His (Christ's) feet.**

**But when He says, "All things have been put in subjection [under Christ]," it is clear that He (the Father) who put all things in subjection to Him (Christ) is excepted [since the Father is not in subjection to His own Son].**

*However, when all things are subjected to Him (Christ), then the Son Himself will also be subjected to the One (the Father) who put all things under Him [...]" [1 Corinthians 15 verses 3-4, 27-28, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

Just as with the title of supreme judge, as we have seen, the one who holds supreme power is Jesus and here again this omnipotence has not been attributed to him out of complacency by God.

The privilege of having Almighty Power conferred on him is based on his merits, evidenced by his death and resurrection. Therefore, this title cannot be conferred on a mere mortal. *Under no circumstances can a pope be the holder of supreme power!* On the strength of all that it had already instituted the Catholic Church, did not stop there, but it continued to progressively increase these claims until it established the total domination of the Pope over all things. This text informs us:

**"All the faithful are obliged to believe that the Holy Apostolic See and the Roman Pontiff have primacy over the whole world.**

**[...] The Roman church, by divine provision, has the principality of ordinary power over all other churches.**

**This power of jurisdiction of the Roman Pontiff, a truly episcopal power, is immediate.**

*The pastors and the faithful, each and every one, whatever their rite and their dignity, are subject to it by the duty of hierarchical subordination and true obedience, not only in the things which concern faith and morals, but also in those which belong to the discipline and government of the Church throughout the universe [...]*

**The Roman Pontiff is the supreme judge of the faithful:**

*One can have recourse to his judgment in all cases, which relate to ecclesiastical matters. On the contrary, the judgment of the apostolic see, above which there is no authority, cannot be reformed by anyone;*

**No one is permitted to judge its judgment [...] The Roman Pontiff, when he speaks [...]**

*Fulfilling the office of pastor and doctor of all Christians, by virtue of his supreme apostolic authority, defines that a doctrine on faith or morals is to be believed by the universal Church and through the support that has been promised to him in the person of Blessed Peter, fully enjoys that infallibility for which the divine Redeemer wanted his Church to be provided with by defining the doctrine concerning faith and morals.*

**Consequently, such definitions of the Roman Pontiff are irreformable by themselves and not by virtue of the Church's consent. That if, God forbid, anyone had the temerity to contradict this definition, let him be anathema".**

*[Extract from: « Le 18 juillet 1870 fut décrété, dans le concile du Vatican, la constitution, extrait littéral du Pastor Aeternus » (translated into English from the original text)].*

So we see that in order to reaffirm this total domination which the Pope has, the Catholic Church adds that there is no authority above the apostolic see and therefore over the pope...

*Amazing isn't it?! Would this mean that the pope is not subject to God?*

In my opinion, when one reads these affirmations, the pope is again presented here as the supreme authority who rules over the universe and beyond! Let us recall that this religion had already declared that its dogma was superior to God's Word. In this text, it reinforces this idea by stating that no one can amend the pope's writings.

*Hmm... including God? By recognising that the pope is the holder of supreme power, the Catholic Church has placed him as the most powerful being in the Universe. For this religion, this means that he is more powerful than God.*

Thus, you must remember that what led to all this was the attack that the Catholic Church had carried out against the faithful witness (*the Bible*).

Having established these precepts as superior to God's Word it no longer had to submit to them.

From then on the papacy was free to sit in God's house and proclaim itself as having authority over all things, which presents it as being "god".

This is how the Catholic Church's ambitions to wield almighty power were able to gain momentum.

Throughout the centuries, in order to achieve its ends, it has acted like a skilful chess player and its greatest achievement was to take the Bible out of the hands of God's people.

This was the one thing, which could have hindered the papacy's plans in its desire for domination and adoration.

By banning the Bible from the people, the Catholic Church had succeeded in laying the foundations for its strategy of eradicating any movement of thought that did not conform with its dogma. This masterstroke has succeeded brilliantly so far!

Over the centuries this is what enabled it to establish its supremacy and no wonder, because this is what inevitably happens when mortal human beings put their law and precepts above those of God!

The practising of such acts can only result in abominations of the kind that the inquisitors practised by burning at the stake all those who only had faith in the Gospel!

To continue, I would like to say that I understand how shocked those of you are who discover this situation for the first time. It was the same for me.

However, this already considerable shock is even more shocking when we realise that the essence of Catholic dogma comes from the writings of these fathers, the illustrious prelates of the past. It is from their teachings and their fame that this religion gains its strength.

*The most famous of all being the so-called "Saint" Augustine.  
Of all the "serial killers" in history, for me, this man was the  
worst, for it was the blood of God's faithful people that he shed.*

And why, did he act in this way, just because these men, women and children had chosen to remain faithful to the Lord and rejected the papacy's adulterated teachings.

I have already brought you the proof of what I am saying.

In addition, in the chapter entitled “*New type of action from the iniquitous falsifier*”, I show you that the core of Catholic dogma comes from the writings of Saint Augustine, who was responsible for the shedding of so much innocent blood.

*At this point in this book, do you think in your heart of hearts and conscience that the abominable (Yes **ABOMINABLE!**) doctrines of St Augustine, which call for the killing and torture of all those who reject Catholic dogma and have the Bible as their sole basis of faith, may be superior to or replace God's Word? Of course **NOT!***

It is time for the myths to be debunked and for everyone to know that however illustrious a man may be, he is mortal and fallible.

In doing so, no human doctrine can be superior to God's Word, or replace it. We must be very vigilant because the doctrines that we adopt, especially those of a spiritual nature, determine to whom we bear allegiance. In the case of the Lord, in order to glorify him we must know him, and what makes this possible is his holy Word [*Romans 10 verses 14-18*].

Whoever wants to glorify God and submit to him must obey his Word, otherwise he is an idolater [*1 Samuel 15 verses 22-23*].

In order to understand what the glorification of a superior being involves, let's consider an image:

*In Roman times, the conqueror who returned victorious from wars was crowned with a laurel wreath.*

*A procession was formed in the streets in front of him, led by criers who proclaimed his glory and declared his virtues and heroic victories.*

*Then the heroic conqueror appeared, who was mounted on a fine chariot and behind him were chariots loaded with his spoils of war, then at the end of this illustrious procession came his enemies in chains, who had become his prisoners.*

This image speaks for itself, yet it is important to realise that the glory we bring to God or Satan does not just come about by proclaiming their magnificence.

It is our obedience to their teachings and directives that determines our allegiance to one or the other. That is why in [*Luke 4 verses 5-8*] we see that when Satan tried in vain to seduce Jesus, he wanted to encourage him to take part in his fiendish ordinances. If Jesus had obeyed, he would have glorified and given allegiance to the devil.

If Christ had accepted, he would have become Satan's subject and would have been rejected by God, for one cannot serve two masters at the same time [*Matthew 6 verse 24*].

Our choice to follow a person's precepts indicates our allegiance to them. The glory we bring to God depends on our obedience to his word. In the case of Jesus Christ, we see that it was by opposing Satan with the Gospel that he defeated him, thereby demonstrating that he, the Christ, was subject to God and gave allegiance to him.

The worship that God desires is not to receive victims as a sacrifice, but that his people obey his word: [*1 Samuel 15 verses 22-23*].

From the moment the Catholic Church decreed that its dogma was more important than God's Word and established its law as superior to that of God, it chose to emancipate itself from its omnipotence and rejected God as its master and Lord.

In doing so, the actions of the Catholic leaders against God and his Word weakened their faith, leading them to worship the creature (*the pope*) at the expense of the creator [*Romans 1 verses 18-23, 25*].

As we can see, it is never without consequence that mortal man is given a rank that belongs to God alone.

To conclude, I would say that it is vital to understand that the deeds practised by the Catholic Church have a direct impact on our future and our salvation.

And this is also true whether we are Catholics or Protestants, because plans were established to lose all humanity.

The foundations of this conspiracy do not just involve the Catholic Church, as alas the latter is only a puppet remotely controlled by the master puppeteer, the devil. Under the mantle of faith, it is therefore dancing to the devil's tune.

We have seen this fact in the text of [*2 Thessalonians 2 verses 3-12*], where we discovered that it was Satan who was in control of the deeds that the son of perdition was to carry out.

The Catholic Church has achieved these actions through the ages.



## 9.1 New type of action from the iniquitous falsifier

In this chapter we will continue the epic saga that we have undertaken against the dragon and his servant, that has taken on many guises, the most striking of which in my opinion is that of this apocalyptic beast with seven heads and ten horns.

We saw that this beast, that symbolises the Catholic Church, was to have great power, then be wounded and that it had to heal and regain another type of dominance over the nations.

We have already seen that the fatal blow (*at the legislative level*) that this beast (*the Catholic Church*) received came from Napoleon and that the one who brought about its spiritual downfall was the great reformer Martin Luther. Before him, many great reformers had undertaken to denounce the iniquities practised by the Catholic Church, but their voices could not be heard like Luther's.

What made this possible was a new invention that appeared at the time of this great reformer, namely the printing press. This device made it possible for information or teachings to be presented to as many people as possible in a very short space of time, without a Catholic spy being able to prevent this.

In this century, the major advance that the Lord has placed at our disposal is the internet, which allows information to circle the earth in an instant. This is why I am offering this book and its second volume free of charge in a digital format. For more details see the last chapter of this book. Let us return to Martin Luther.

Thanks to God's Spirit and strengthened by these writings, he opened the eyes of the greatest number of people. In doing so, thanks to him, the Bible being in the hands of the people in their mother tongue, Catholic dogma could no longer dominate minds.

Thus, the Catholic Church could no longer falsify God's Word at its pleasure in order to establish its supremacy, so it had to make another plan, which was to twist the Holy Scriptures.

As we shall see, this work is not confined to ancient times, because it continues to perpetuate itself in this century as well.

In order to do this, let us study extracts from a Catholic text that is still in force today. This is the *Vatican Council 2, which was issued from the 11th of October 1962 to the 8th of December 1965 and was presided over by Pope John XXIII.*

This text is therefore contemporary and a little more than fifty years old. It is therefore the very essence of Catholic dogma in this century. Let us discover an initial extract:

**“The Holy Tradition and Holy Scripture constitute a unique sacred deposit of God’s Word, entrusted to the Church; [...]**

**The responsibility for interpreting God’s Word in an authentic way, either written or handed down, has been entrusted to the only living Magisterium of the Church whose authority is exercised in the name of Jesus Christ.**

**Yet this Magisterium is not above God’s Word, but serves it, teaching only what has been handed down, since by God's mandate, with the assistance of the Holy Spirit, it listens to this Word with love, guards it holily and also exposes it truthfully and draws from this unique deposit of faith all that it proposes and believes was revealed by God.**

**It is therefore clear that Holy Tradition, Holy Scripture and the Magisterium of the Church, according to the very wise design of God, are so much intertwined and supportive of one another that none of these things exist without the other [...].”**

*[Extract from: « Concile du Vatican 2, qui s’est tenu entre du 11 octobre 1962 au 8 décembre 1965 et fut présidé par le pape Jean XXIII. Chapitre Dei Verbum, partie 10, Tradition, Écriture, Peuple de Dieu et Magistère » (translated into English from the original text)].*

The impression one can get from reading these lines is that the Catholic Church has recognised, rejected, confessed and atoned for its abominable deeds, which it has practised in the past.

Which would be, in my opinion, a beautiful and most touching example of repentance and biblically approved by the Lord.

Here is what the Lord asks in this matter: **"He that covereth his transgressions shall not prosper; But whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall obtain mercy"**. *[Proverbs 28 verse 13, American Standard Version (ASV)].*

Let us finish with this: *"Therefore, O thou son of man, speak unto the house of Israel: ‘Thus ye speak, saying, “If our transgressions and our sins be upon us and we pine away in them, how should we then live?””*

**Say unto them: ‘As I live, saith the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live. Turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways;**

**For why will ye die, O house of Israel?’** *Therefore, thou son of man, say unto the children of thy people: ‘The righteousness of the righteous shall not deliver him in the day of his transgression.*

*As for the wickedness of the wicked, he shall not fall thereby in the day that he turneth from his wickedness, neither shall the righteous be able to live for his righteousness in the day that he sinneth.’*

*When I shall say to the righteous that he shall surely live, if he trust to his own righteousness and commit iniquity, all his righteousnesses shall not be remembered; but for his iniquity that he hath committed, he shall die for it.*

**Again, when I say unto the wicked, ‘Thou shalt surely die,’ if he turn from his sin and do that which is lawful and right, If the wicked restore the pledge, give back that which he had robbed, walk in the statutes of life without committing iniquity, he shall surely live; he shall not die.**

**None of his sins that he hath committed shall be mentioned unto him. He hath done that which is lawful and right: He shall surely live.** *“Yet the children of thy people say, ‘The way of the Lord is not equal.’ But as for them, their way is not equal.*

*When the righteous turneth from his righteousness and committeth iniquity, he shall even die thereby.*

**But if the wicked turn from his wickedness and do that which is lawful and right, he shall live thereby.** *Yet ye say, ‘The way of the Lord is not equal.’*

**O ye house of Israel, I will judge you every one according to his ways.”** [Ezekiel 33 verses 10-20, 21st Century King James Version (KJ21)].

We discover that true repentance demands that iniquitous foundations be abandoned and unjust deeds no longer practised.

*We will therefore find out in this chapter whether the repentance of the Catholic Church really came from sincere hearts.*

Above all, it is important to note that in this portion of the text of *the Vatican Council 2*, it must be noted that the Catholic Church in this century has completely changed its mind, because it recognises that its magisterium, therefore its dogma, is not above God's Word and is therefore not superior to it, but is at its service.

This change of direction was made because of all of the upheaval following the Protestant revolution led by Martin Luther, so the Catholic Church had no option other than to adapt.

Because the Bible was now in the hands of the people the Catholic prelates were unable to act as they had done in the past and had to revise the whole basis of their dogma without changing the essentials.

*At the end of this text, however, it appears that God's Word is given the same importance as the magisterium and Catholic traditions and it should be noted that tradition is cited first.*

To crown it all, it is decreed that the three cannot exist without each other. Having lost its past glories, the Catholic Church could no longer force men to observe its dogma and present it as being superior to God's Word. Nevertheless, when I continue reading *Vatican Council 2*, my feeling is:

*"Chase away the natural and it will come back at a gallop!"*

Several ancient Catholic doctrines appear in a different light in these lines, but remain just as pernicious as in the time of the omnipotence of this religion.

To develop this argument, I will present several other portions of this council text, which demonstrate that the announced repentance of this religion is nothing more than *smoke and mirrors*.

This text shows us this fact: *"The bishops who teach in communion with the Roman Pontiff are entitled, on the part of all, to the respect befitting those who are witnesses of the divine and Catholic truth;*

*[...] This religious assent of will and intelligence is due, in a singular capacity, to the Supreme Pontiff in his authentic magisterium, even when he does not speak ex cathedra, which implies the respectful recognition of his supreme magisterium [...].*

This infallibility, with which the divine Redeemer wished to provide his Church in order to define the doctrine concerning faith and morals, *extends in a far-reaching manner to the deposit itself of the divine Revelation to be guarded in a holy way and displayed faithfully.*

From this infallibility, the Roman Pontiff, as head of the college of bishops, exercises the actual fact of his responsibility when, as pastor and supreme doctor of all of the faithful and responsible for confirming his brothers in the faith (cf. Lk 22, 32), by a definitive act he proclaims a point of doctrine governing faith and morals. This is why the definitions he pronounces are said, rightly, to be irreformable in themselves [...]

*Therefore, they do not have any need for the approval of others, just as they may not be able to appeal to another judgment.*

*Then, in effect, the Roman Pontiff does not pronounce a sentence as a private person, but he presents and defends the doctrine of the Catholic faith, insofar as he is, with regard to the universal Church, the supreme master in whom resides, in singular title, the charism of infallibility which is that of the Church herself.*

*[...] When the Roman Pontiff, or the body of bishops with him, make a ruling, they do so in accordance with the revelation itself to which all must abide and conform, a revelation which is handed down completely, in written form or by tradition [...]"*

*[Extract from: « Concile du Vatican 2, qui s'est tenu entre du 11 octobre 1962 au 8 décembre 1965 et fut présidé par le pape Jean XXIII.*

*Chapitre Lumen Gentium, partie 25, La fonction d'enseignement des évêques » (translated into English from the original text)].*

*We note that the pope's infallibility is renewed in this council.*

We have already seen that only God is infallible, so by affirming the pope's infallibility the Catholic Church is treating itself as being God.

Furthermore, the Pope is presented here as the supreme pastor of the faithful, a title that also belongs to Jesus alone. Here are the ways that the right to bear this title can be conferred: **"And may the God of peace, who brought again from the dead the great pastor of the sheep, our Lord Jesus Christ, in the blood of the everlasting testament, Fit you in all goodness, that you may do his will;**

*Doing in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom is glory for ever and ever. Amen." [Hebrews 13 verses 20-21, Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition Bible (DRA)].*

It was through his divine sacrifice that Christ acquired the right to become the “*supreme shepherd*” reigning over God’s people.

*As we have already seen, since no pope died and rose again for the redemption of mankind, this title cannot be applicable to the papacy!*

In this text, which we have just seen, it also appears that the Pope's judgments cannot be challenged, making him the supreme master of the universal Church.

The same is true of his writings, which are irreformable. In a few words, the pope is presented as not being subject to any higher authority and not even to God.

*In short, he is the supreme master reigning over humanity.*

Thus, in spite of what it seemed to want to display to demonstrate its willingness to repent, the fact remains that, in reality, the Catholic Church has reaffirmed the Pope's omnipotence.

In order to do so, once again it also had to reaffirm the independence of its dogma from God’s Word and this is what was done in this *Vatican Council 2*.

How was this done? The answer is given by the following:

**“The Holy Tradition and Holy Scripture are therefore related and communicate closely with each other.**

*Since both spring from the same divine source, they form an overarching whole with the same purpose, so to speak. Indeed, the Holy Scripture is God’s Word, under the inspiration of the divine Spirit, which is recorded in writing;*

**As for the Holy Tradition, it embodies God’s Word, entrusted by Christ the Lord and by the Holy Spirit to the Apostles and is handed down in full to their successors, so that, illuminated by the Spirit of truth and by preaching it, they keep it, present it and faithfully spread it:**

**The result is that the Church does not derive its certainty on all the points of revelation from Sacred Scripture alone.**

**That is why, one and the other must be received and venerated with an equal feeling of love and respect”.**

*[Extract from: « Concile du Vatican 2 (...) Chapitre II: La transmission de la Révélation divine, partie 9, Le rapport réciproque entre la Tradition et l'Écriture » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Here, the Catholic Church has put in place a safeguard allowing it to establish doctrines rejected by the Bible:

*By declaring that it not only derives its doctrinal framework from Sacred Scriptures, but also from its “holy” tradition, it has opened a small back door allowing it to act as it pleases.*

No longer being able to present its dogma as being *above* God's Word, the Catholic Church has placed them *side by side* and therefore calls for the veneration of both.

*Unable to be the supreme dominator, it has therefore proclaimed itself as a co-dominator.*

Let us not forget, we should only worship, venerate or revere God alone, but here this religion asks for adoration, which is to be given to it by mankind.

To be clear about the term “*holy*” tradition it uses here, let us read this text, which is also taken from the *Vatican Council 2* :

**“[...] As for the Tradition received from the Apostles, it includes everything that contributes to the holy behaviour of the life of God's people and the enhancement of their faith;**

**Thus the Church perpetuates its doctrine, its life and its worship and hands down everything that it is and everything that it believes to each generation.**

*[...] In fact, the perception of the issues involved as well as the words handed down is growing, either through the contemplation and study of the believers who meditate on them in their hearts [...]*

*Or through the preaching of those who, in the succession of the episcopate, have received the sure charism of truth.*

Thus in the course of the centuries the Church has constantly held to the fullness of divine truth, *until God's Word shall be fulfilled by it.*

The teaching of the Holy Fathers attests the life-giving presence of this Tradition, whose riches are put into practice and in the life of the Church that believes and prays.

It is this tradition that enables the Church to acknowledge the full canon of the Holy Scriptures;

It is also this same tradition in the Church, that gets across these Sacred Scriptures and makes them continually effective.

Thus God, who spoke long ago, never ceases to converse with the Bride of his beloved Son *and the Holy Spirit, through whom* the living voice of the Gospel resounds in the Church and through the world thanks to the Church and introduces believers to the *whole truth [...]*.

[Extract from: « Concile du Vatican 2 (...) Chapitre II: La transmission de la Révélation divine, Partie 8. La sainte Tradition » (translated into English from the original text)].

In this text we discover that this religion presents its tradition as originating from the writings of the apostles, nevertheless, century after century, the Fathers of their order added their own knowledge bases to it.

This tradition, having been enriched, has become the basis of faith for the Catholic Church.

It is a mixture of its traditions and the Gospel. What is presented in this portion of *Vatican Council 2* is simultaneously instructive, astounding and highly blasphemous. In order to understand it, it is imperative not to lose sight of the foundation on which the Catholic tradition rests. To this end, let us read this:

**“We call them Fathers, because our Saviour, who fills them particularly with his Spirit, gave them to his Church to be its defenders and its counsellors and to the world to be its oracles and its light. [...]**

United in the Scriptures, their works, consecrated by the approval of the Church, at the very least add the imposing weight of an indirect inspiration which produced them to the authority of the divine word, *immediately emanating from the Holy Spirit.*



[...] **They make up this august chain of the tradition whose majestic unity is supported unwavering through the shocks of revolutions, the attacks of schism and heresy, the ruins of time, the darkness of ignorance and the ravages of bad morals**".

[Extract from: « *Catéchisme de persévérance troisième partie XXIII; Leçon le Christianisme conservé et propagé* » (translated into English from the original text)].

It thus appears that it is the writings of the fathers of the Catholic Church, which constitute their traditions. In the following text, they appear as being its most eminent men of the past:

**"We call Fathers of the Church all those great men who appeared in order to defend the Church and explain its doctrine over the first six centuries.**

[...] *The most illustrious of these illustrious men, that is, those who have written the most and whose doctrine is most generally authorised and followed, bear the title of Doctors of the Church.*

**There are four great doctors of the Greek Church, namely: Saint Athanasius, Saint Basil the Great, Saint Gregory of Nazianus and Saint John Chrysostom; And five from the Latin Church:**

*Saint Ambrose, Saint Jerome, Saint Augustine, Saint Gregory the Great and Saint Thomas Aquinas [...]*". [Extract from: « *Catéchisme de persévérance troisième partie XXIII; Leçon le Christianisme conservé et propagé* » (translated into English from the original text)].

Let us take into account this last text, a perfect complement to those we have just read:

**"We call them Fathers, because their writings, full of the science of salvation, says St. Augustine, spread like an abundant dew in the field of the Church, to make the germs of life fruitful there, which Jesus Christ and his first disciples had left, so that they could nourish the souls of the purest substance of the true doctrine.**

[...]". [Extract from: « *Catéchisme de persévérance troisième partie XXIII; Leçon le Christianisme conservé et propagé* » (translated into English from the original text)].

It follows from this that the tradition and therefore the Catholic dogma, is based on the writings of their fathers, who were the illustrious men who came to the fore in this religion during the first six centuries.

*The description that is made of the writings of the Catholic fathers is that of an abundant dew flowing on the field of the Church in order to nourish souls...*

*This image is very embarrassing! YES!*

*Let us not forget that the fathers of the Latin Catholic Church are, among others, Saint Jerome, Saint Augustine, Saint Gregory the Great and Saint Thomas Aquinas.*

In my book *“Inquisitiô (The three angels' message), tome II. The reality of the attack of the little horn of Daniel 7 against the Law of God and the times of prophecy. Historical part”*, thanks to irrefutable evidence, the nothingness on which the writings of these *“illustrious men”* are based could be discovered.

Apart from this, if need be, it should be pointed out that the most famous writings of the fathers of the Catholic Church come from those of the said *“Saint” Augustine*. See in what laudatory terms he is mentioned:

*“What a pleasure it is to love religion and to see it believed, supported, explained by such beautiful geniuses and such fine minds, especially when we come to know that, by the extent of knowledge, by the depth and penetration, by the principles of pure philosophy, by their application and development, by the correctness of the conclusions, by the dignity of the discourse, by the beauty of the ethics and feelings, there is nothing, for example, that we can compare to Saint Augustine!”*.

*[Extract from: « Catéchisme de persévérance troisième partie XXIII; Leçon le Christianisme conservé et propagé » (translated into English from the original text)].*

Before expanding further, allow me a little touch of irony:

*I will admit that when I read this description of the works of the said “Saint” Augustine, I was almost moved to tears...*

*But a thought came to me like an electric shock and jolted me out of the torpor that had almost made me lower my guard and this related to the abominable nature of this man's writings.*

While *Saint Augustine* is presented as the cantor of cantors, as far as Catholic teaching is concerned, his works are worse than those of a *serial killer*. To get a glimpse of these iniquitous writings I invite you to go to the chapter entitled “*The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*”.

In my book entitled “*Inquisitiô (The three angels' message) tome I, What has advenu of the holiness of the Word of God?*” in the chapter “*Basis of the bloody and macabre dogma of the serial killer of all serial killers*”, you will discover more.

*Yet the Catholic Church has made the writings of this “bloodthirsty serial killer” the backbone of its dogma!*

*With all of this in mind, it is easy to understand that instead of the fragrant dew that the Catholic fathers were supposed to distil through their writings, one actually finds oneself exposed to the “foul stench of death”.*

To continue, let us discover another text presenting the iniquitous deeds he instituted: “**Saint Augustine is going to teach us why martyrs are so venerated. This holy doctor, writing [...]:**

**“If Christians honour holy martyrs, it is either due to the desire to participate in their accomplishments, or in the hope of being happy as a result of their prayers, or by getting excited when imitating their virtues. [...] We therefore revere the martyrs. [...]”.** [Extract from: « *Catéchisme de persévérance troisième partie; IX Leçon le Christianisme établi (1er Siècle suite)*. Rome souterraine.

*Détails sur les martyrs. Le Christianisme conservé et propagé » (translated into English from the original text)].*

In this text the said “*Saint*” Augustine, always him, is made the devil’s advocate and exalted the idolatry consisting of venerating the martyrs and praying for them.

This doctrine has been updated in this century and has now become the backbone of Catholic dogma.

This text presents this fact: **“According to tradition, the saints are the object of worship in the Church and one venerates their authentic relics and images there.**

[...] *We are only going to extend to the universal Church those feast days commemorating saints who are really of universal importance*”. [Extract from: « Concile du Vatican 2, qui c'est tenu entre du 11 octobre 1962 au 8 décembre 1965 (...)

*L'année liturgique, Partie 111, la fête des saints » (translated into English from the original text)].*

As you can see, the worship of the relics and images of the saints, i.e. of the dead, which the Catholic Church inherited from the pagan Roman religion continue to be perpetuated within it.

To find out more see *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled “*Examples of pagan rites from Roman times that the little horn has used for his benefit*”.

All of this despite the prohibition of such a practice notified in the second of the ten commandments.

All that we have just seen allows us to understand that what has happened in the past is still what remains in Catholicism.

The nuance being that with the arrival of Protestantism, the Catholic Church was obliged to kowtow somewhat and review its doctrinal basis.

Whether it is intended or not, it has readapted its dogma, because God's Word being in the hands of the majority of the people these doctrinal foundations could no longer remain in place as they had done over the centuries.

In order to do this the Catholic Church sought to justify these writings (*its dogma*) by referring to the Bible, however one only needs to probe through the Gospel to see that its doctrines are based on shaky grounds.

Thus, the repentance of the Catholic Church was nothing more than window dressing. So, the same doctrinal foundations that this religion once practised and that we have discovered earlier are those that it continues to display.

They have just been dusted off and brought up to date! To do this and in order to give new legitimacy to its dogma, this religion has therefore used biblical texts, whose meaning it has twisted.

Thus, the actions of this Christian religion, although having taken on a different face, nevertheless continue to be anti-biblical.

Having introduced a new gospel, the Catholic Church has made itself anathema according to the basis of [*Galatians 1 verses 6-10*].

In the Bible, the one who works in this way, by tampering with the Word of the Lord, is none other than the devil.

We see it in [*Luke 4 verses 9-13*], where the devil uses God's Word to justify his iniquitous demands.

All those who seek to make their religion more functional, to the detriment of the Holy Scriptures, are presented in the Bible as children of the devil [*John 8 verse 44*], [*Mark 7 verses 5-13*].

*The Catholic Church having turned away from the Holy Scriptures has come to act like the devil!*

*The one who allows them to continue to perpetrate such acts is none other than Saint Augustine.*

*Throughout this council we find traces of his writings. I have noted at least ten of these texts in the Council of Vatican 2.*

*Unbelievable! Let us not forget that it is these same writings of Saint Augustine that pushed the Catholic Church to the atrocities it committed, by torturing and burning all those who only had God's Word as a basis of faith and who by extension rejected the Church's dogma.*

*It continues to sublimate them, yet it says it has repented!*

How can such subversive writings as those of "Saint Augustine", who shed so much innocent blood, still be proclaimed in this century by those of his spiritual descendants who claim to have repented?

Let us take an example:

*How would you consider Germany if, after repenting for the abominations that Hitler and the Nazis committed, it continued to use their writings in its legislation?*

*If such a case had occurred, I am sure that Germany would not be in the good graces of France and its wartime allies.*

*True repentance imposes the misappropriation of the works and writings that have been decried.*

However, it is therefore clear that the Catholic Church, although having given the world an *impression of renewal*, continues to practise these same ancient traditions.

*Saint Augustine still remains the leading light of this religion!*

*This is how other Catholic doctrines, spearheaded by Saint Augustine, continue to survive within this religion.*

In conclusion I would like to say that this is how the deadly wound of the beast with seven heads and ten horns was healed.

We were able to discover how the Catholic Church first reached the peak of its power, only to lose it during the French Revolution and then how it recovered it again.

Then in a second phase, representing current times, although it no longer has legislative power, it has become one of the greatest powers in the world. The leaders of the nations worship it.

We have seen how, in the name of their people, the presidents of various nations are received by it and come to pay homage to it.

The world, those living without God, has come to regard the pope as the most saintly of beings. The papacy has become the phoenix from on high of this world, so all those who do not love truth (*the world*) worship it and practise these doctrines.

We have come to the end of this journey into the land of the megalomaniacal actions of the *dominator of the nations*.

May these lines arm you so that from now on you will be firm and unshakeable, thanks to God's Word and to it alone.

It should be noted that we have not finished with the iniquitous doctrines of the Catholic Church, for we will decipher still others, all of them also iniquitous, in the following chapter and in my book entitled "*Inquisitiô (The three angels' message), tome II. The reality of the attack of the little horn of Daniel 7 against the Law of God and the times of prophecy. Historical part*".

## 10 The reality of prophetic times

**T**o start this chapter I would tell you that in [Revelation 14 verse 8] we find the message of the second angel who presents the downfall of Babylon because of the iniquities she practices and in [Revelation 18 verses 2 and 24] we learn that among they are his work against the prophets, therefore prophecy.

This same work is also that which the little horn is called to perform. So, on the strength of these bases, it seemed judicious to me, before starting the second angel's message, to present to you the reality of the attack that these entities carried against the prophecy.

In doing so, the first chapters of this book are therefore intended to shed light on these facts.

This chapter is important because it presents a reality that many people are unaware of or have misinterpreted. It is the work of the *little horn* that the prophet Daniel saw that it is about.

This entity is presented as seeking to change the times and the law. As far as the law is concerned, we understand that it is God's law, but when the times are mentioned, what is it really about ?

*Is it literal time, the one quantified in our good old calendar, or is it something else altogether ? We will see it!*

To continue, I will tell you that we live with different times that manage our daily lives. Generally, when we speak, there are times that are marked by punctuation.

The same is true of our writings, which are punctuated by punctuation. Punctuation manages our words just as the various road signs do for driving a car.

The comma is compared to a "*Yield the Way*" sign, which asks you to slow down, the full stop would be comparable to the "*Stop*" sign, which means total stop, etc.

It is in music that the times are most clearly marked and identified by notes. As oral forms of expression are marked by tenses, those who want to express themselves or sing well must respect them in order to be consistent.

As with everything, in the Bible too, time is mentioned.

In His prophetic Word, the Lord establishes this measure to mark the exact period when the fulfilment of His revelations will take place.

Understanding the usefulness and significance of prophetic times is vital for God's people, for they are meant to guide us.

To deepen this thesis, we will discover several texts that present the times of prophecy. Here is the first one :

**"After a short time you won't see me. Then after another short time you will see me again".** [John 16 verse 16, *Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Here is the second text : *"That thou shalt be driven from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field, and thou shalt be made to eat grass as oxen, and shalt be wet with the dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass over thee;*

*till thou know that the Most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will".* [Daniel 4 verse 25, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Here is the third text : *"Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe for the earth and for the sea: because the devil is gone down unto you, having great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time. [...]*

*And there were given to the woman the two wings of the great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness unto her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent".* [Revelation 12 verses 12 and 14, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Here is the fourth text: **"And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince who standeth for the children of thy people;**



*And there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book.*

*[...] But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased. [...]*

*And I heard the man clothed in linen, who was above the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and swore by him that liveth for ever that it shall be for a time, times, and a half; and when they have made an end of breaking in pieces the power of the holy people, all these things shall be finished. [...]*

*And he said, Go thy way, Daniel; for the words are shut up and sealed till the time of the end". [Daniel 12 verses 1, 4, 7 and 9, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Here is the fifth text : *"Now, brothers and sisters, we do not need to write you about times and dates [seasons; related to end-time events]". [1 Thessalonians 5 verse 1, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

Here is the sixth text : *"[...] According to this time it shall be said of Jacob and of Israel, 'What hath God wrought!'" [Numbers 23 verse 23, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

And finally, here is the last text : *"Listen carefully, you will be continually silent and unable to speak until the day when these things take place, because you did not believe what I told you; but my words will be fulfilled at their proper time." [Luke 1 verse 20, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

In all these texts, we see that this notion of time is important, because it determines the exact period when an action that the Lord has stopped by a prophecy will be realised. The example par excellence of this time of fulfilment was that which God had set centuries in advance for the virginal birth of his son Jesus.

This coming was planned from all eternity by God and prophets such as Isaiah had long ago given the signs of the times when this should happen. Here is what we find out about this:

*"Then Isaiah said, "Hear then, O house of David! Is it too small a thing for you to try the patience of men, but will you try the patience of my God as well? Therefore the Lord Himself will give you a sign:*

**Listen carefully, the virgin will conceive and give birth to a son, and she will call his name Immanuel (God with us)".** [*Isaiah 7 verses 13-14, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

This prophecy set out the modalities of the birth of our saviour. Once it was decreed, its countdown began, for God had just marked the time when Jesus Christ was to be born. Thus, at the time marked by God, the time of salvation, our Saviour came into this world taking flesh in Mary. Here is what the apostle Matthew tells us about it:

*"Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the Holy Spirit.*

*And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily.*

*But when he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife:*

*For that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name Jesus; for it is he that shall save his people from their sins.*

**Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, And they shall call his name Immanuel; which is, being interpreted, God with us. And Joseph arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took unto him his wife"** [*Matthew 1 verses 18-24, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Here we see the fulfilment of the time that God had established in this prophecy.

To confirm the announcement of this virgin birth, it was through a dream that the Spirit of God presented to Joseph the fulfilment of the prophetic time that God had already announced through the prophets.

We have already seen that when the Lord speaks to one of his prophets in order to reveal a prophecy to him, he does so, among other things, in a dream or a vision.

The time of the prophecy establishes the precise moment when the prophecy is to be fulfilled.

*There is never any retard with the Lord, for it is at the appointed time that everything he has announced comes true !*

It is vital that God's people can master this reality, otherwise they risk missing the fulfilment of prophecy. A good example of what I am saying is presented in this text:

*"Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, wise men [astrologers] from the east came to Jerusalem, asking,*

*Where is He Who has been born King of the Jews? For we have seen His star in the east at its rising and have come to worship Him.*

**When Herod the king heard this, he was disturbed and troubled, and the whole of Jerusalem with him.**

**So he called together all the chief priests and learned men (scribes) of the people and anxiously asked them where the Christ was to be born. They replied to him, In Bethlehem of Judea, for so it is written by the prophet:**

**And you Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, you are not in any way least or insignificant among the chief cities of Judah; for from you shall come a Ruler (Leader) Who will govern and shepherd My people Israel".** [*Matthew 2 verses 1-6, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

What is happening here is unheard of, the Jewish nation is God's chosen people, they are the trustees of his authority and the guardians of his Word and his prophecies, yet they are strangers, the Magi, who reveal to them that the most important time for them and for humanity has arrived.

*In addition, the high Jewish dignitary not having been reactive, it is one of the worst bloodthirsty murderers in history, King Herod, who must set up research to know the place of the birth of our savior.*

It is because the chosen people were not attentive at the time of the prophecy that it was humble shepherds who had the great honour of being the first to worship the divine child who was born in this humble stable : [Luke 2 verses 1-20].

On *this occasion*, God's chosen nation was undeserving, yet the birth of Jesus Christ was one of the most present in the prophecies.

As proof, another strong prophetic time was linked to it and was fulfilled in the period of his birth.

We find this prophecy in the following text : **"Thus says the Lord: A voice is heard in Ramah, lamentation and bitter weeping. Rachel is weeping for her children; she refuses to be comforted for her children, because they are no more"**. [Jeremiah 31 verse 15, *Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

The fulfilment of this prophecy is one of the most difficult that the Jewish people contemporary with Jesus had to endure, because it is about the death of a number of his innocent children. Here is how this prophecy came true: *"Now after they had gone, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream and said, Get up! [Tenderly] take unto you the young Child and His mother and flee to Egypt;*

*And remain there till I tell you [otherwise], for Herod intends to search for the Child in order to destroy Him. And having risen, he took the Child and His mother by night and withdrew to Egypt And remained there until Herod's death. This was to fulfill what the Lord had spoken by the prophet, Out of Egypt have I called My Son.*

Then Herod, when he realized that he had been misled by the wise men, was furiously enraged, and he sent and put to death all the male children in Bethlehem and in all that territory who were two years old and under, reckoning according to the date which he had investigated diligently and had learned exactly from the wise men.

**Then was fulfilled what was spoken by the prophet Jeremiah:**

**A voice was heard in Ramah, wailing and loud lamentation, Rachel weeping for her children; she refused to be comforted, because they were no more. *But when Herod died, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt And said, Rise, [tenderly] take unto you the Child and His mother and go to the land of Israel, for those who sought the Child's life are dead.***

*Then he awoke and arose and [tenderly] took the Child and His mother and came into the land of Israel. But because he heard that Archelaus was ruling over Judea in the place of his father Herod, he was afraid to go there. And being divinely warned in a dream, he withdrew to the region of Galilee.*

*He went and dwelt in a town called Nazareth, so that what was spoken through the prophets might be fulfilled: He shall be called a Nazarene [...]"*. [Matthew 2 verses 13-23, *Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)* ].

The murderous work orchestrated by King Herod on the children of Bethlehem is the fulfilment of the prophecy that the prophet Jeremiah had foretold centuries before. It should be noted that in addition to the prophecy presenting the abominable work of King Herod, we also have the prophecy which indicated that during his childhood Jesus was to live for a time in Egypt.

In this text we also learn that the prophecy that Jesus Christ was to grow up in Nazareth was also fulfilled.

Thus, all those prophetic times that God had foreordained were fulfilled as they had been prophesied. Both the birth and the death of Jesus happened in their time, in accordance with what God had made his servants prophesy, the prophets of the past. We have seen the prophecies inherent in his birth, let us now discover those that presented the events that were to precede his death.

Here is one of the prophetic signs that the Word of God gave centuries before to prefigure the beginning of Christ's sufferings: *"Even my own close friend in whom I trusted, Who ate my bread, Has lifted up his heel against me [betraying me]"*. [Psalm 41 verse 9, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Here is how this prophecy came true: **"I am not speaking of all of you. I know whom I have chosen; but [this has happened] in order that the Scripture may be fulfilled: 'He who eats My bread has raised up his heel against Me [as My enemy].'**

*From now on I am telling you [what will happen] before it occurs, so that when it does take place you may believe that I am He [who I say I am — the Christ, the Anointed, the Messiah].*

*I assure you and most solemnly say to you, the one who receives and welcomes whomever I send receives Me; And the one who receives Me receives Him who sent Me [in that same way]."*

*After Jesus had said these things, He was troubled in spirit, and testified and said, "I assure you and most solemnly say to you, one of you will betray Me and hand Me over." The disciples began looking at one another, puzzled and disturbed as to whom He could mean.*

*One of His disciples, whom Jesus loved (esteemed), was leaning against Jesus' chest. So Simon Peter motioned to him (John) and [quietly] asked [him to ask Jesus] of whom He was speaking.*

*Then leaning back against Jesus' chest, he (John) asked Him [privately], "Lord, who is it?" Jesus answered, "It is the one to whom I am going to give this piece [of bread] after I have dipped it." So when He had dipped the piece of bread [into the dish], He gave it to Judas, son of Simon Iscariot. After [Judas had taken] the piece of bread, Satan entered him.*

*Then Jesus said to him, "What you are going to do, do quickly [without delay]." But no one reclining at the table knew why He said this to him. Some thought that, since Judas [as the treasurer of the group] had the money box, Jesus was telling him, "Buy what we need for the feast," or that he was to give something to the poor.*

**After taking the piece of bread, he went out immediately; and it was night.** *So when Judas had left, Jesus said, "Now is [the time for] the Son of Man [to be] glorified, and God is glorified in Him;*

*[if God is glorified in Him,] God will also glorify Him (the Son) in Himself, and will glorify Him at once". [John 13 verses 18-32, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

The work that Judas was to carry out against Jesus had a central place in the plan of salvation that the Lord prepared for us.

Some of the significant gestures and attitudes he had during this period had already been prophesied centuries before he practised them. Here is what we can still read about them:

**"And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my hire; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my hire thirty pieces of silver".** [*Zechariah 11 verse 12, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Here is how this prophecy came true: **"Then Judas, who had betrayed Him, when he saw that He was condemned, repented and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, "I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood." And they said, "What is that to us? See thou to that!"**

*And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple and departed, and went and hanged himself. And the chief priests took the silver pieces and said, "It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood." And they took counsel and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in.*

*Therefore that field was called the Field of Blood unto this day.*

**Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, "And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of Him that was valued, whom they the children of Israel did value, and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me".** [*Matthew 27 verses 3-10, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

We see that this prophecy had also been foretold by the prophet Jeremiah. Other prophecies also spoke of that tragic time when the Son of God was to be delivered into the hands of the ungodly.

Here is one of them: **"They gave me also gall for my food; And in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink".** [*Psalms 69 verse 21, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Let us complete with this other prophecy which came true in the same period as the previous one:

**"He keepeth all his bones: Not one of them is broken".**  
[*Psalm 34 verse 20, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

These two prophecies found the time for their fulfillment during the passion of Christ. Here is what happened:

**"After this Jesus, knowing that all things are now finished, that the scripture might be accomplished, saith, I thirst.**

**There was set there a vessel full of vinegar: so they put a sponge full of the vinegar upon hyssop, and brought it to his mouth. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished:** *And he bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.*

*The Jews therefore, because it was the Preparation, that the bodies should not remain on the cross upon the sabbath (for the day of that sabbath was a high day), asked of Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.*

*The soldiers therefore came, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other that was crucified with him: But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs:*

*Howbeit one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and straightway there came out blood and water. And he that hath seen hath borne witness, and his witness is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye also may believe.*

**For these things came to pass, that the scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.** *And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced".* [John 19 verses 28-37, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

First of all, it goes without saying that when Jesus says "*All is accomplished*", he was talking about the events fixed in advance and which took place in their time.

It therefore appears that every significant detail of the life of Jesus Christ was already recorded in the prophecies and that the smallest details were fulfilled in the marked times. As you can see, in these prophetic revelations, the Lord has placed time markers intended to present the unfolding of the revelations He has given in advance.



Each of them is intended to indicate the evolution of the time in which these things are to take place.

Like we would for a puzzle, the people of God must be able, with the assistance of the Holy Spirit, to place each revelation received in chronological order of fulfilment in order to have a clear vision of what is to come. In what we have just studied, we find the usefulness of the multitude of dreams and visions.

In order to know in what time it is, the people of God must, in this period of the end, take the example of the prophets of past ages, who probed the prophecies in order to know the time of their fulfilment : *[1 Peter 1 verses 10-12]*.

When we consider how these prophecies were fulfilled at the appointed time and in accordance with what the Lord had, centuries before, decreed, we understand the impact of the prophetic times on those who claim to be of the Lord.

It is vital that from now on God's people pay attention to the times of the prophecies that God gives them, because our survival depends on them. We must therefore, pay special attention to the periods (*therefore, the times*) that God has appointed, so that the events that He shows us in our dreams and visions can occur.

The instructions that are thus received must be applied promptly, otherwise there is danger :

*Imagine that Joseph, when he had the dream enjoining him to leave for Egypt, delayed, not believing that the time of the peril had arrived, we would not be saved, because King Herod would have had time to kill our Jesus when he was just a baby.*

It is important to note that it was through dreams that the Lord gave Joseph more guidance about the realisation of these various prophetic times. In order to understand the importance of the place of the dreams that Joseph had in the canvas of the time of the fulfilment of these various prophecies, we must consider the following text:

**"And for that the dream was doubled unto Pharaoh, it is because the thing is established by God, and God will shortly bring it to pass".** *[Genesis 41 verse 32, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

When God gives a prophecy, it only becomes effective and applicable when a second revelation confirms the first.

The second revelation that God makes by this means can be given to the same person (*as was the case with Pharaoh*), or to different persons (*as was the case with Joseph and the ancient prophets*).

Moreover, this second revelation can be granted centuries later, but also within hours of the first. This is what we discover in this text:

*"And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest, and asked of him letters to the synagogues at Damascus, that if he found any who were of this Way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.*

*And as he journeyed he came near Damascus, and suddenly there shone round about him a light from heaven. And he fell to the earth and heard a voice saying unto him, "Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou Me?" And he said, "Who art Thou, Lord?"*

*And the Lord said, "I am Jesus whom thou persecutest; it is hard for thee to kick against the goads." And he, trembling and astonished, said, "Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do?"*

*And the Lord said unto him, "Arise and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do." And the men who journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice but seeing no man.*

*And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he could see no man; but they led him by the hand and brought him into Damascus. And he was three days without sight, and neither did he eat nor drink.*

**And there was a certain disciple at Damascus named Ananias. And the Lord said to him in a vision, "Ananias."**

**And he said, "Behold, I am here, Lord."**

**And the Lord said unto him, "Arise and go into the street which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judas for the one called Saul of Tarsus; For behold, he prayeth and hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight."**

Then Ananias answered, "Lord, I have heard from many of this man, and how much evil he hath done to Thy saints in Jerusalem. And here he hath authority from the chief priests to bind all who call on Thy name."

But the Lord said unto him, "Go thy way, for he is a chosen vessel unto Me, to bear My name before the Gentiles and kings and the children of Israel. For I will show him what great things he must suffer for My name's sake."

*And Ananias went his way and entered into the house, and putting his hands on him said, "Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus who appeared unto thee on the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight and be filled with the Holy Ghost."*

*And immediately there fell from his eyes something like scales, and he received sight forthwith, and arose and was baptized. And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples who were at Damascus". [Acts 9 verses 1-19, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

The Lord has appointed a time when His will is to be done. In order for things to be done, he gives the *top start* in dreams or visions so that those who are to work can be ready. This is what we see in this account of the conversion through Jesus Christ of Saul (*Paul*), the former persecutor of Christians.

It was in a vision that Ananias knew that the time for Saul's ministry for the work of God had come. This was the second vision that God had given to present this work, for Saul had already received a first vision beforehand. The reality of these two times of fulfilment of prophecy is important. I will develop it in my book entitled "*Nise (The World of Dreams Unveiled)*".

Reading this text from [Acts 9], we understand the importance of obeying, in the time allotted, the injunctions that the Lord gives us in dreams or visions.

First of all, we see Ananias' hesitation, quite understandable, in the face of God's directives ordering him to go and heal Saul. Then, as a faithful servant of the Lord, he walked by faith.

Had he hardened his heart and not obeyed, he would have hindered the time that God had long since prepared for the salvation of the pagans. Paul, the ancient persecutor of the Christians, was the instrument that God had chosen, many centuries before his birth, to bring the gospel to the Gentiles.

In the following text we discover that God had already made Isaiah prophesy the coming of Paul who, as we have seen, was the apostle in charge of the salvation of the Gentiles :

*"I the Lord have called you to demonstrate my righteousness. I will guard and support you, for I have given you to my people as the personal confirmation of my covenant with them.*

**You shall also be a light to guide the nations unto me".** [*Ésaïe 42 verset 6, Living Bible (TLB)*].

Let us complete with this text: *"He says, "It is too trivial a thing that You should be My Servant To raise up the tribes of Jacob and to restore the survivors of Israel; I will also make You a light to the nations That My salvation may reach to the end of the earth."* [*Isaiah 49 verse 6, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Here is how the Word of God presents the fulfilment of these two prophecies: *"And the next sabbath almost the whole city was gathered together to hear the word of God.*

**But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with jealousy, and contradicted the things which were spoken by Paul, and blasphemed.**

*And Paul and Barnabas spake out boldly, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first be spoken to you.*

*Seeing ye thrust it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.*

**For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee for a light of the Gentiles, That thou shouldest be for salvation unto the uttermost part of the earth".** [*Acts 13 verses 44-47, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

In the various cases cited, the prophecies that were already announced found their fulfilment through new revelations that the Lord gave in dreams or visions. The latter therefore have a predominant place in the time of application of the prophecies.

It will always be so, the following text reaffirms this: **"Surely the Lord God will do nothing, unless He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets"**. [*Amos 3 verses 7, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

The Lord will always give a new revelation in the marked time to enable His servants to work. To guide them, especially when they are in peril, these revelations are brought to them by the Holy Spirit.

Dreams and visions are the means par excellence that the Lord uses to complete the directives he had already given : [*Job 33 verses 14 to 18*], [*Luke 12 verses 11-12*].

We should give our dreams and visions our undivided attention, especially in these troubled times of the end, when one prophesy after another comes true.

Even though it is said that prophecies come to us at the marked time, the fact remains that some of them take centuries to come true, so that the vigilance of those who have received them may not be the same as that of their descendants or followers.

Not being attentive to the time that God has stopped so that his prophetic revelations can be realised makes us unfit to face the events that he has revealed to us. We must therefore be vigilant!

Where are we with the prophecies that have already been given by the Lord and whose time of fulfilment has already been arrested? Here is the question Jesus Christ asks us about it:

*"He also said to the crowds, "When you see a cloud rising in the west, you immediately say, 'It is going to rain,' and that is how it turns out. And when [you see that] a south wind is blowing, you say, 'It will be a hot day,' and it happens.*

***You hypocrites (play-actors, pretenders)! You know how to analyze and intelligently interpret the appearance of the earth and sky [to forecast the weather], but why do you not intelligently interpret this present time?"*** [*Luke 12 verses 54-56, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

As we read the chapter of [Matthew 24], we discover the signs of the end times. Before the last hour of mankind's history sounds, there will be prophetic signs that will be set in motion.

Their fulfilment will determine for God's people the time in which we find ourselves and the things that are yet to come.

To ignore these signs would be to go, like a ship without a rudder, towards the fatal precipice of perdition.

God has not changed, as he has done in the various biblical episodes we have already considered in this chapter, at the right time, he will give new revelations in dreams and visions to his people.

In order to understand the importance, for us who live in this century and for future generations, of the times that God has established in prophecy, we must take into account what is presented here: **"I don't need to write you about the time or date when all this will happen. You surely know that the Lord's return will be as a thief coming at night.**

**People will think they are safe and secure. But destruction will suddenly strike them like the pains of a woman about to give birth. And they won't escape.** *My dear friends, you don't live in darkness, and so that day won't surprise you like a thief.*

**You belong to the light and live in the day.** *We don't live in the night or belong to the dark. Others may sleep, but we should stay awake and be alert. People sleep during the night, and some even get drunk. But we belong to the day.*

*So we must stay sober and let our faith and love be like a suit of armor. Our firm hope that we will be saved is our helmet. God doesn't intend to punish us, but wants us to be saved by our Lord Jesus Christ.*

*Christ died for us, so that we could live with him, whether we are alive or dead when he comes. That's why you must encourage and help each other, just as you are already doing. [...]*

**Don't turn away God's Spirit or ignore prophecies. Put everything to the test.**

**Accept what is good and don't have anything to do with evil".** [1 Thessalonians 5 verses 1-11, 19-22, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)].

*Here we can take the full measure of the times that God has established in prophecy.*

It is thanks to the fulfilment of the signs already given in advance by God in prophecy, as well as in his dreams and visions, that his people will know exactly what time it is.

*He who does not watch, in this sense, is in danger.*

So that his people may not be in darkness, the Lord asks them to be on their guard so that the day of recompense does not come upon them as a thief does. It is vital to understand what time God has marked for everything and especially for the return of Jesus Christ.

Otherwise, we will be found sleeping, and will be surprised like the pagans. In order to become fully aware of the peril that awaits those who act in this way, let us read the following text: *"Then shall the Kingdom of Heaven be likened unto ten virgins, who took their lamps and went forth to meet the bridegroom.*

*And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps and took no oil with them, but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made:*

*'Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.' Then all those virgins arose and trimmed their lamps.*

*And the foolish said unto the wise, 'Give us of your oil, for our lamps are gone out.' But the wise answered, saying, 'Not so, lest there be not enough for us and you; but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.'*

*And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, 'Lord, lord, open to us!'*

*But he answered and said, 'Verily I say unto you, I know you not.'* **Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of Man cometh".** [Matthieu 25 versets 1-13, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].

The foolish virgins were among God's chosen people, for they were in the company of the wise. They had the same assets as they did. They did not pay enough attention to the time when the spouse was due to arrive and were negligent about their ration of oil for their lamps.

When they finally arrived, they were turned back at the door, and that, although they were virgins, therefore called of God.

The advice given in this parable is to keep watch, for no one knows the day or the hour. So that we may not be like the foolish virgins who come too late and are not turned away at the door, we must be vigilant and watch, for there are many called and few chosen : *[Matthew 22 verse 14]*.

In order to do this, the Lord asks us not to despise prophecy.

*We must pay attention to the message he gives us in this form!*

They are like the light of a lamp shining on our path leading at return of Jesus Christ, symbolically presented as the morning star : *[2 Peter 1 verse 19]*, *[Revelation 22 verse 16]*.

Prophecy is the weapon par excellence that God gives to his people so that they may be victorious over their enemies. As we have already seen in *[1 Corinthians 14 verses 22, 24-25]*, the gift of prophecy enables us to unmask the plans of our enemies and to destroy them.

It would therefore be suicidal and certainly fatal for the people of God not to understand the value of the prophetic revelations made to us by the Lord in dreams and visions. In them are the times of the realisation of the divine revelations leading to victory.

The devil has therefore made plans so that the people of God may be made incapable of understanding what the Lord reveals to them in dreams and visions. Thus, one of the greatest victories the devil won over the children of God was when he led them to distrust his two exceptional weapons which the Lord has entrusted to them.

In doing so, he was able to prevent them from knowing the time the Lord had stopped for significant events to take place.

Especially those linked to the time of salvation. Its aim is that as many of God's children as possible should be foolish virgins who arrive at their wedding feast with the lamb after the hour.



## 10.1 The anti-dream/vision and anti-Law of God plans fomented by the little horn

By way of introduction to this part, I would say that in the spiritual world, the destiny of humanity and especially that of the people of God is at stake.

For the great majority of the inhabitants of the earth this is very difficult to conceive, especially since it is in the invisible that these events take place.

*Yet this reality is tangible!*

In order to have a clear vision of it, we need to discover the veil of the invisible in order to be able to see it. Here is what the word of God teaches us about it:

**"Put on the full armor of God [for His precepts are like the splendid armor of a heavily-armed soldier], so that you may be able to [successfully] stand up against all the schemes and the strategies and the deceits of the devil.**

For our struggle is not against flesh and blood [contending only with physical opponents], but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this [present] darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly (supernatural) places.

Therefore, put on the complete armor of God, so that you will be able to [successfully] resist and stand your ground in the evil day [of danger], and having done everything [that the crisis demands], to stand firm [in your place, fully prepared, immovable, victorious].

*So stand firm and hold your ground, having tightened the wide band of truth (personal integrity, moral courage) around your waist and having put on the breastplate of righteousness (an upright heart), and having strapped on your feet the gospel of peace in preparation [to face the enemy with firm-footed stability and the readiness produced by the good news].*

*Above all, lift up the [protective] shield of faith with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God". [Ephesians 6 verses 11-17, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

Although Satan and the other demonic beings are spirits, therefore live in the invisible world, the Lord gives us (*to us these children*) weapons to overcome them, and among them is His Word.

The Word of God is also the prophecy, which is for me one of the most powerful weapons to overcome demons. Although Satan and his engence are beings of the invisible, the Lord gives us the assurance of the victory and of the domination that he gives us over them.

Here is what we can read about it: *"And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the demons are subject unto us in thy name.*

**And he said unto them, I beheld Satan fallen as lightning from heaven. Behold, I have given you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy:**

*And nothing shall in any wise hurt you". [Luke 10 verses 17-19, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

First of all, Jesus presents the fall of Satan on earth, therefore his defeat – to better understand it read [Revelation 12 verses 7-12] – this reality being realised only after Jesus' death and resurrection, it is therefore a vision that Jesus had just had.

This shows us that the victory that the Lord promises us against the forces of evil will also be based on prophecy – which is made up of dreams and visions, among other things. This victory that the Lord gives to his people against demons, through dreams and visions, he does the same for their enemies made of flesh and blood.

We have already studied this in the text of [1 Corinthians 14 verses 22, 24-25] where we see that through the prophetic messages to His children, the Lord protects them from the javelin blows (*attacks*) of their enemies.

This reality is also present in *[Job 33 verses 14-18]*.

Prophecy, therefore, is a powerful weapon with which we can confuse our enemies, for it enables us to know their plans before they carry them out.

*Can you imagine the advantage that a people who, in times of war, have the ability to know the plans of their enemies in advance ?*

*Well, this is what God's people have had for centuries by having the gift of prophecy in their midst.*

*The Lord spoke to His people through His prophets, and made them victorious when their enemies sought to harm them [2 Kings 6 verses 8-12].*

Unfortunately, it is clear that in this century, the people of God are deprived of this powerful weapon, when they are in dire need of it, for we are reaching the climax of the most devastating war we have to do face. Here is how it is presented:

**"Then war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon.**

**The dragon and his angels also fought, but he could not prevail, and there was no place for them in heaven any longer.**

**So the great dragon was thrown out — the ancient serpent, who is called the devil and Satan, the one who deceives the whole world. He was thrown to earth, and his angels with him.**

*Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say, the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ have now come, because the accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been thrown down.*

*They conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; for they did not love their lives to the point of death.*

**Therefore rejoice, you heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has come down to you with great fury, because he knows his time is short".** *[Revelation 12 verses 7-12, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].*

The understanding of this text is vital for the people of God, because it presents the war that the devil has waged against God, against his people and against mankind.

*Let us not forget that the demon has already been defeated by Jesus Christ on the cross.*

Nevertheless, he remains more powerful than all those living without God. The victory of Jesus Christ over the devil is certainly a victory of the children of God, but they have not yet overthrown all the fortresses of the devil.

This work will be done in its time and has been prophesied. So there is still one last phase to come in the war we are waging against the devil and of which he is the author.

Here's what will happen : *"For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I rejoice therefore over you: but I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple unto that which is evil.*

**And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you".** [*Romans 16 verses 19-20, American Standard Version (ASV)*].

This victory of the people of God over all the bastions of the devil is certainly already stopped, but it can only be accomplished in the time marked by God. The demons know this.

See how, in this text, they claim it: *"Jesus arrived at the other side of the lake in the country of the Gadarene people. There, two men who had demons inside them came to him. They lived in the burial caves and were so dangerous that no one could use the road by those caves.*

**They came to Jesus and shouted, "What do you want with us, Son of God? Did you come here to punish us before the right time?"** *Near that place there was a large herd of pigs feeding.*

*The demons begged Jesus, "If you make us leave these men, please send us into that herd of pigs." Jesus said to them, "Go!" So the demons left the men and went into the pigs. Then the whole herd of pigs ran down the hill into the lake, and all were drowned".* [*Matthew 8 verses 28-32, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

It is with conviction that the demons question Jesus here, the aim being to point out to him that *the time* of their torment has not yet come. We therefore understand that they know that a most dire time awaits them and that there is also a time fixed for the fulfillment of the prophecies.

They are therefore not unaware that in His prophetic Word, God has marked a time when they will be destroyed and that nothing will be done before then.

These texts provide information on this subject: [*2 Peter 2 verses 4-10*], [*Jude 1 verses 5-7*], [*Revelation 20 verses 7-15*].

Knowing that Jesus Christ could not destroy them at that time, because the time for it had not yet come, they asked him permission to go into the swine, which was allowed to them.

As you can see, if the majority of God's people are ignorant of the times of prophecy, it is not the same with the demons who know their values.

They know that the prophetic time of their destruction is approaching, that is why Satan seeks to take their most powerful sword, prophecy, out of the hands of his enemies.

Since he has little time, he has therefore worked so that the children of God may not have the knowledge of the time when they will defeat him in his final defeat.

The devil's aim is therefore to ensure that the exact knowledge of the times when God's chosen ones will be able to crush his head and that of his seed under their feet is not revealed to them.

He therefore worked so that they would be unable to understand the instructions inherent in this work.

In order to achieve his goal, here are the plans that he has fomented through his servant, the little horn:

***"Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of heaven brake forth upon the great sea.***

***And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another.***

*The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings [...] And, behold, another beast, a second, like to a bea [...]*

*After this I beheld, and, lo, another, like a leopard, which had upon its back four wings of a bird [...]*

**After this I saw in the night-visions, and, behold, a fourth beast, terrible and powerful, and strong exceedingly.**

*[...] Then I desired to know the truth concerning the fourth beast, which was diverse from all of them, exceeding terrible, whose teeth were of iron, and its nails of brass; which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with its feet;*

*And concerning the ten horns that were on its head, and the other horn which came up, and before which three fell, even that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake great things, whose look was more stout than its fellows.*

**I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;**

*Until the ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the Most High, and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.*

**Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be a fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all the kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And as for the ten horns, out of this kingdom shall ten kings arise:**

**And another shall arise after them; and he shall be diverse from the former, and he shall put down three kings.**

**And he shall speak words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High;**

**And he shall think to change the times and the law;**

**And they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and half a time.**

**But the judgment shall be set, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end". [Daniel 7 verses 2-7, 19-26, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].**

This text and those of [Revelation 13 verses 1-10] and [2 Thessalonians 2 verses 3-12] present the same entity that acts under the influence of the demon and has the supreme objective of worshipping him and getting mankind to do the same.

This iniquitous being is presented as having to persecute the people of God and will have as its supreme objective to change times and the law.

In the chapter entitled "*The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*" as well as in volume II of this book in the chapter entitled "*The bloodthirsty legislative legacy*", I demonstrate that the Catholic Church has fulfilled its criteria of persecuting the people of God.

In this book that I have just presented to you, I also show you that she has worked to change the Law of God.

Moreover, we have already discovered the value of the times of the prophecy instituted by the Lord and which is manifested, among other things, through the fulfilment of dreams and visions.

In the chapters that follow, you will see the work of desacralization that the Catholic Church has fomented around dreams and visions.

Through the fulfilment of these acts, it is easy to affirm that this entity presented under various names and whose objective is to serve the devil by changing the times and the Law, is the Catholic Church.

The attack on the times of prophecy by the devil and his henchman is not insignificant. For the Law, one of the objectives of the devil, hoping to change it, is to escape judgment, for it is by she that he will be judged [James 2 verses 12-13] and those who will have to judge him are God's chosen ones [1 Corinthians 6 verses 2-3].

All, men and angels – therefore also fallen angels who are demons – will be judged by the people of God, through the law.

His plans therefore have one single purpose, to make the people of God ineligible by causing them to transgress the Holy Law.

Moreover, since the demon must be defeated in the time marked by the children of God, it is only natural that he has set up his plans in order to render them incapable of interpreting the revelations which the Lord gives them and by which he gives them new directives.

When I think of this work that the devil has set up in order to lead God's people to turn away from the times of prophecy, I tell myself that in life there is nothing more deadly than ignorance of the workings of something that could save us from the danger we are in.

**Example:** *Imagine that you are at war, and you find yourself unarmed in the face of an enemy who is also unarmed.*

*Nevertheless, unarmed, neither he nor you really are, for you have a grenade, but you don't know what it is.*

*At that time, it had just been invented and was a military weapon that the state hid from the population (you know how it goes). As you did not undergo any military training, because you enlisted because of the lack of men at the front, you are defenseless, although armed.*

*In front of you, your enemy who is a dog of war (an old army veteran) is disarmed, but recognises the grenade and understands that you don't know what it is.*

*He will make sure to engage a hand-to-hand combat to steal it from you and will atomize you with it.*

*The end result will be that what should have been your strength becomes the cause of your loss.*

Satan the perfidious has, in many ways, succeeded in his plans to take this mighty light which is the prophecy from the hands of God's people, as well as the knowledge of God's Law.

As the demon could not attack God's consecrated people head-on, he made sure to induce them through his servant, the little horn, to set aside these two weapons of excellence.

*History teaches us that he has so far succeeded in this, as we shall see. From now on this time is over, because the light of the bases of the prophecy contained in these lines are destined for the whole truth to shine!*



## 10.2 The true value of time attacked by the little horn

After centuries of obscurantism during which the Catholic Church had forbidden the reading of the Bible, the people of God, beginning with the Reformation under Martin Luther, began to study it diligently.

Thus the text of [Daniel 7 verses 24-25] presenting the work of the little horn became known. From that moment on, with the devil's plans about to be discovered, he set up a subterfuge that enabled him to turn the tide. As a good general, Satan set up the best strategy in order to be victorious, it can be summarized as follows :

*The best defense is the attack!*

Thus the devil's plans changed, because the Catholic Church could no longer forbid men to read the Bible, so she set up a counteroffensive that took on a different form.

The works by which the Catholic Church had changed the Law of God, as well as the texts in which it established that its dogma was above the Word of God, led theologians to understand that the Pope, the high leader of this religion, fulfilled the criteria of "*the little horn*".

In order not to lose all his marbles, the devil therefore fomented a plan. He prepared the counteroffensive by mounting a Trojan horse at the niveau of the times that the little horn was supposed to change.

He used the theologians' need to establish, Bible in hand, all the characteristics of the *little horn* in order to send them on a false trail.

Since they had already established, through historical texts, the involvement of the Catholic Church in changing God's Law, he wanted to do the same for the times the little horn hoped to change.

It was in one of the great reforms of the calendar put in place by the Catholic Church that the reformers thought they had found it.

Here is what was put in place during this reform : **"The Julian calendar assumes that the length of the solar year is 365 ¼ days while it is 11 minutes and a few seconds shorter. This annual error accumulated over the years.**

**A few proposals, such as those of Stoffer in 1518 and Pilate of Verona in 1537 were accepted to correct this error, but this question was not seriously considered until 1577 by Pope Gregory XIII.**

As in 1582 the spring equinox was to fall on a date (March 11) ten days earlier than that of the Council of Nice in 325, Gregory published a bull, dated March 1, 1582, canceling ten days so that the date which should have been (4 October 1582 becomes October 15). *To prevent displacement, it was ordered that three leap years that arrive in the year 400 be considered common years.*

*The three leap years chosen to become common years were those which end the centuries (example which ends with 00) and are divisible by 400. Thus 1600 was a leap year, 1700, 1800 and 1900 were common years, 2000 will be a leap year and so on.*

**This method of arranging the days of the year is called the Gregorian Calendar or the New Style".** [Taken from: *Standard Encyclopedia of the World's Knowledge, vol. V, art. "Calendar" p. 360 (translated into English from the original text)*].

Let's complete with this other text: *"It should be noted that in the Christian period the order of the days of the week was never interrupted, thus, when Gregory reformed the calendar in 1582 Thursday October 4 was followed by Friday October 15.*

**Therefore in England in 1752, Wednesday September 2 was followed by Thursday September 14"** [Taken from: *The Catholic Encyclopedia, Vol. III, art. "Chronology" p. 740 (translated into English from the original text)*].

As we can see, *Gregory XIII* – who was a Catholic prelate – reformed the calendar so that *Thursday, October 4, 1582 was followed by Friday, October 15, 1582.* The new calendar he issued was called the “*Gregorian calendar*” after this pope.

The theologians, who succeeded one another over the centuries, found in the work of *Pope Gregory XIII* a basis for establishing that the times that the little horn (*therefore the Catholic Church*) would seek to change were those established in the calendar.

This was a great mistake on their part, for this Catholic prelate did nothing more than readjust errors that had crept into the calendar for centuries.

Even he has reworked the calendar, he has only put in its place days that others had had fun manipulating long before him. It is important to note, first of all, that history tells us that it was the Romans who worked to rework the calendar to *their sauce*. In order to venerate their "gods", they undertook to upset the periods of the calendar.

Here is what we learn from the historical texts on these facts : **"Numa, who immediately followed Romulus, added fifty days to the year [...] So that the year was increased to three hundred and fifty-four days, a space that he thought he should embrace the twelve revolutions of the moon. To the fifty days that he had added to the year, Numa added another six more, subtracted at the six months of thirty days, one day from each of them;**

**And having thus formed fifty-six days, he distributed them in two equal months. [...] Shortly afterwards, in honor of the odd number, the mystery of which nature had revealed prior Pythagoras, Numa added to the year a day, which he gave in the month of January, in order to maintain the imparity both in the year than in the months, that of February alone excepting [...]**

**According to this division of Numa, conform at the course of the moon, calculated their year like the Greeks, necessarily had to establish like them an intercalary month [...] The Romans wanted to adopt this arrangement [of the Greeks]; But it was no use, because they did not take into account the day which, added in favor of the odd number [...] By the effect of this accident, the octenary intercalation could not restore the regularity either in the order or in the number of days. As the error was not first noticed, they began to count, following the example of the Greeks, adding ninety days extra for every eight years.**

**[...] But the year of the Romans having one day more than that of the Greeks, as we have said, each year was found to have one day left; Which, at the end of eight years, formed an excess of eight intercalary days. This error having been recognized in turn [...] Every twenty-four years, instead of ninety days, only seventy were inserted. By this retrenchment of twenty-four days, operated every twenty-four years, the excess of twenty-four days, produced by the day added to the year of the Greeks, was exactly compensated [...]** [Taken from: *Saturnales Chap XIII; de Macrobe (translated into English from the original text)*].

Let us continue our study with this text presenting the reorganization of the calendar set up by the Romans: "**Julius Caesar therefore added ten days to the old year, so that the year would embrace the three hundred and sixty-five days which the sun uses to run the zodiac; And, in order not to neglect the remaining quarter of a day, he established that, every four years, the priests who presided over the months and days would intercalate a day in the same month and in the same place where the elders intercalated, that is before the last five days of February;**

**And he called this operation the bisextum. As for the ten [...] added by him, this is the order in which he distributed them. He added two days to the months of January, sextilis and December, and one day to the months of April, June, September and November;**

**But he did not add a day in the month of February, so as not to undermine the worship of the infernal gods. March, May, quintile and October remained in their old state, as having a sufficient number of days, that is, thirty-one.**

**Caesar [...] had established; January, sextilis and December, to which he added two days, although since that epoch they had thirty-one, continued to count five days of nones. The calends which follow them are fixed nineteen days after their ides, because Caesar did not want to insert the days which he added, neither before the nones, nor before the ides, so as not to disturb, by a new enumeration, the rite religious set at these times.**

*He did not want either to place these days immediately after the ideas, so as not to have to trouble any fêtes in the rank assigned to him; But he placed these new days after all the fêtes of each past month" [Taken from: Macrobe, Saturnales, 14 (translated into English from the original text)].*

Here are other changes by which the Romans ended up establishing their calendar on the cycles of the Moon: "**Caesar having thus organized the civil division of the year, which he put in accordance with the revolutions of the moon, made the public promulgation by an edict. The error could have ended there, if the priests had not formed a news of the correction itself.**

*But while it would have been necessary to insert the day produced by the four quarters of days only after four completed years, and before the beginning of the fifth, they did intercalate, not after, but at the beginning of the fourth year.*

**This error lasted thirty-six years, during which twelve days were inserted, while only nine should have been inserted.**

**But it was finally noticed, and Augustus corrected it, by ordering to let twelve years pass without intercalating;**

**So that these three extra days, produced by the too great haste of the priests for thirty-six years, might be consumed by the following twelve years without intercalation.**

**At the end of this term, he ordered that a day be intercalated at the beginning of each fifth year, as Caesar had regulated;**

*And he had the whole of this division of the year engraved on a brass table [...]" [Taken from: Saturnales 1.14; de Macrobe (translated into English from the original text)].*

In this last text, we still see the manipulations that the Romans made in the calendar by adopting one that was solar: "*Caesar, wishing therefore to undertake a new regulation of the year, first allowed all the days which could still produce confusion to pass:*

*This made this year, the last of the state of disorder, lasted four hundred and forty-three days.*

**After that, in imitation of the Egyptians, the only peoples educated in the celestial economy, he endeavored to model the year on the revolution of the sun, which ends its course in the space of three hundred and sixty-five days and a quarter" [Taken from: Saturnales 1.14.3; de Macrobe (translated into English from the original text)].**

When it was necessary to rework the calendar, it is in order to give glory to their idols that the Romans established it; the names of the months which they instituted were largely those of their divinities:

*One of the Roman months was "Numa" (which became "February") which was the name of the god of attractions.*

*Other months had names like "Romulus", or "Mars". Some of the names of these days they bequeathed them to us!*

It is thus by virtue of their pagan customs that the Romans made the months succeed one another, it was thus established that *March* would follow *February*. In addition, the Romans took a malicious pleasure in changing the skeleton (*structure*) of the calendar.

They added days, half-days, which ended up accumulating century after century. Apart from these historical texts that I have just submitted to you, history presents *Julius Caesar* as having been the Roman emperor who most *malmena* the times of the calendar.

Thus he was able to leave to the world the legacy of a calendar established to the glory of his name, the "*Julian calendar*", the objective being that it be representative of his power.

This is the one I presented to you as having been reformed (*centuries later*) by *Gregory XIII*.

The rest of the calendar was conditioned so that Roman religious festivals would have their place. *Julius Caesar* made many miscalculations when trying to frame time.

He established his calendar without taking into account the literal time that God had already established. As a result, his calendar brought a great imbalance in the calculation of *days, months and years*.

*The morality I take away from this story is that when mortal man thinks he is God and wants to change what the Lord has established, he can make those changes on paper, but the Almighty alone is the master of time.*

Subsequently, it was in order not to leave a testimony of less importance than that of his illustrious predecessor that the Emperor *Augustus Caesar*, also worked on the reform of the calendar.

As *Julius Caesar* had chosen the month of *July* for the glory of his name, *Augustus Caesar* chose the following month to bear his name, and so *August* was born.

Originally, the calendar had been set so that a month bearing *31 days* was to be followed by a month bearing *30 days*, but *Augustus Caesar* did not want the month bearing his name to be one day shorter than that of his illustrious predecessor, so he took a day in February to add it to *August*.

Having undertaken to rework the calendar, he was also able to correct, in part, the mistakes that his predecessor had made in this area. So as not to perpetuate the errors that already existed, he decided to align the calendar days as the Egyptians did – one of the only peoples then able to manage the stars – according to the evolution of the Moon.

He thus obtained a calendar that had *365 days and a quarter*. In doing so, he came closer to the system of time that God created.

The *little hiccup (problem)* was that by accumulating, this small quarter came to increase the overflow of days already accumulated.

It is these half and quarter days that the Romans did not take into account which, having swelled, were transformed into several days ; which led *Gregory XIII* to reform the calendar by removing a certain number of days.

*For many, these changes that these Roman emperors instituted, added to the reworking that Gregory XIII made in the calendar, are the fulfillment of the part of Daniel's prophecy that presents the change of time that the little horn hopes to change.*

I am sorry to contradict those who think this, but historical and prophetic elements make this thesis obsolete.

*In the prophecy of [Daniel 7], the Roman Empire is not symbolized as the little horn, but as the fourth beast (kingdom). It is from this kingdom that another, called the little horn, which was not like the other beasts (kingdom), was to arise.*

In the chapter entitled "*The indivisible unity of the works of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*" I show you that the Catholic Church originates within the Roman people.

We can therefore deduce that the time that the little horn would seek to change is by no means days that the Romans took according to their imagination, because the prophecy of [*Daniel 7 verses 24 and 25*], did not state that it was *the fourth beast* that would seek to change the times and the Law: *it was the little horn that was to lead this work.*

The devil's subterfuge was very skillful, for he pulled off a masterstroke by managing to steer God's people in the wrong direction with regard to the true reality of the times that were to be attacked.

Thus, one of the greatest victories of the people of God, by which he was able to identify who the little horn was, also became his greatest defeat, for thinking that he had found the reality hidden behind the symbol of the times, as being those of the calendar, he no longer searched. In doing so, the times that God established in the world of prophecy (*dreams and visions*) remain a minefield.

This is why the times of actions that God gives us through this means remain misunderstood.

Few among God's people know how to interpret, Bible in hand, the dreams and visions they receive from God's Spirit. In the following chapters we will see that this is due to the Catholic Church, which for centuries forced the majority of people to reject the dreams and visions they had, on pain of being burned at the stake.

This work was so drastic that in this century the greatest number of Protestants proclaim that they no longer adhere to Catholic doctrines, yet they continue to practice and teach the doctrinal bases established by this religion in this matter.

By rejecting their dreams and visions, which are the basis of the times of prophecy, God's people have locked themselves up, because of their unbelief, in a bubble of error and ignorance, which has led them to no longer know how to discern what God is revealing to them directly.

In doing so, God's chosen ones are exactly in the state that the devil wanted them to be in. The goal of the enemy of our souls is for us to be found *asleep*. He wants the people of God to be blinded, like the Gentiles, so that when the Lord, Jesus Christ, comes upon us *unexpectedly*, he will find us wandering and subject to the winds of all doctrines of darkness and therefore we will be lost.



Satan's servants, under his aegis, have been working in matters of the times of prophecy, just as those big serpents that have the power to put their prey to sleep do.

*Imagine one of these reptiles grabbing a man by the waist and hypnotizing him to let him swallow himself without being able to defend himself. He puts him to sleep in order to make him forget the saber he is holding, which would certainly allow him to sever his treacherous predatory head.*

Satan is that serpent, the people of God in this generation are that man, and the gift of prophecy is that sword.

The serpent has disarmed most of God's children from possessing one of the most powerful weapons God gives us and with which we could defeat all the strongholds of the devil.

Satan knows that he cannot attack a Child of God head-on, for as long as he watches and guards himself, the devil cannot touch him as it is written in [1 John 5 verses 18-19].

Therefore he has made plans to lead astray those who could overcome him. His purpose is to take away the ability of God's people to understand the prophetic revelations so that we cannot discern what time we are in through the new revelations that the Lord is making to us through our dreams and visions.

The devil worked so that prophecy would be thrown into oblivion so that he could, through his sophisms, win to his reign the greatest number of souls and even the elect of God if that was possible for him.

In this generation, the facts show that God's people adhere to these preconceived ideas about the foundations and purpose of dreams and visions. The majority of people have come to lose the ability to interpret them, and this ignorance is a fatal weakness that leads the enemy of our souls to decimate them one by one.

They perish for lack of the revelations that God always makes to His servants, the prophets, before acting.

This reality that I have just presented to you I lived it in my flesh, at least through one of my books which, of all those I have written, never know how to sell, it remains on the shelves of bookstores who market it, where in my cupboards has gathered dust.

What is it about will you tell me? To answer you, it is enough for me, I believe, to just present the name of this book to you to understand what it is all about. It is called *“Inquisitió (tome 2), support for the seminar on the theme: better living one's dreams and visions), version with color images”* and presents, as its name suggests, the basis for understanding and deciphering our dreams and visions.

This book is filled with beautiful speaking images which illustrates the knowledge which is carried there and presents the basics of the basics intended to interpret, Bible in hands, dreams and visions.

While I took great joy in writing this work, which is, moreover, the first spiritual book that the Spirit of God inspired me to write, and this theme took me *14 years* to write it, when it was released, this book was not sold. From memory, none of my books has experienced such rejection from the public, not even a sale, when it was marketed in bookstores, and this for more than *3 years*.

When I sat down, months later, after the release of this book to analyze the reasons for this disappointment, it occurred to me that this book did not sell at all, for several reasons.

The first is that the work of desacralizing dreams and visions, which the devil put in place through his servant the little horn, and which we have discovered, has borne these fruits and generation after generation, people have come to distrust it. The second reason is that those who are generally interested in books dealing with this subject, seek the teachings that Freud instituted and which are unbiblical.

I have put a study on this subject in *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled *“How did Christianity come to wear the coat of arms of paganism in matters of dreams and visions to the detriment of the Word of God?”*

In addition, those who have positioned themselves as interpreters of dreams are generally people who work in the field of the obscure one, marabouts, mediums etc. in doing so, they are not interested in this book, nor do they recommend it to their client, because in these lines it is the word of God that is honored and those working in darkness fear the light of the Holy Scriptures.

The third reason is that Christians are suspicious of books that deal with dreams and visions, because generally their bases are by *Sigmund Freud*, therefore based on doctrines from paganism.

In doing so, given the themes of my book, it has been cataloged as being of an obscure nature because dealing with the interpretation of dreams and visions and the end is that Christians have rejected this vital knowledge that the Spirit of God gives me to bring you.

The end result is that this book is gathering dust on my shelves, when it should be in your hands, to you, children of light, faithful people of the Lord. Thereby, with all that we have just studied, do you realize how victorious the demon has been up to now?

Thanks to those great philosophers who declared that it was the times of the calendar that the little horn should seek to change, the people of God, thinking they had discovered the jar of roses, were no longer worried. But it's time to wake up! In order to give you some salutary reflection, I am going to ask a few questions:

— *Can you continue to practice doctrines that came out of the hat of Catholic prelates?*

— *On whom or what is your basis of faith founded?*

— *In what way has your spirituality and your eternal life been endangered by the fact that, since the passage of Julius and Augustus Caesar to our Land, the months of July and August have successively carry thirty-one days to their initiative.*

— *Are your life or your eternal becoming impacted by the fact that February carries twenty-eight or twenty-nine days, or that a pope has reduced days in order to recover lost periods? Of course not! In any case, for me, all this has no impact on my life or my eternal becoming in Jesus Christ.*

*On the other hand, not understanding the time of action that God gives me in my dreams or visions can be detrimental to me, even deadly. O People of God! It is time to awaken you from the deadly sleep in which the enemy of our souls has placed you.*

I have faith that the reality of the phobias that the demon has woven around the world of dreams is now clear to most of those who have read this book so far.

*The time when the veil of ignorance covered the eyes of God's people is gone, for the truth is doing its work in this century.*

Things have changed, for the book of Daniel is open, and in so doing, the knowledge of the truth spreads, like waters that cover the bottom of the oceans.

In one of my dreams, the Spirit of God showed me the prophecy, whose foundations are, as we have already seen, dreams and visions, as being a sword abandoned in a corner, for so long, that its blade has become covered with rust.

I saw myself take this sword, and with my eyes closed, so by faith, I had victory over an antique entity whose iniquitous doctrines had been established to lead God's people and mankind astray.

The time has come for this victory, of the prophetic word, can finally become a reality, because in this century, the children of God are, in my opinion, unfit to understand the messages received in dreams and visions.

The objective is that, like Joseph and his family [*Genesis 37 verses 5-11*], you become capable, by having or hearing a dream or a vision, to be able to interpret it Bible in hand.

*The change is on the way, because thanks to this book that you have in your hands and especially to its volume II, I have faith that your eyes have been opened and that you will certainly feel the need to train yourself in the art of deciphering what the Spirit of God shows you in dream(s) and/or in vision(s).*

To introduce you to this forgotten art, I invite you to read the book that I have just presented to you and which until now has been neglected. It is for sale on my site, the address of which you will find at the end of this book.

## 11 The purpose of the message of the second angel of the apocalypse

*I*n this chapter I am going to tell you about an out of the norm, woman, she is very powerful and bloodthirsty. She is one of those evil beauties who have made a pact with the devil.

In spite of her dominant position, because of these iniquitous works she will be fallen, and the message that presents this reality is the one carried by the second apocalyptic angel.

Before unveiling the content of this apocalyptic angelic message, I would like to tell you about Babylon and present to you a union of the most improbable and bizarre, that of beauty (*Babylon*) and a beast. Further on you will understand the reason for this interlude!

The union of a beautiful young woman and a beast, even in fairy tales, will always be a bizarre thing, and even Revulsive.

Cette réalité des dessins animés à gros budget l'ont adoucie, en prêtant à la bête des sentiments humains des plus nobles, tant et si bien que l'on finis par le trouver attachant.

In addition, the purity of the beautiful, her altruism, her kindness, that her love for the beast, gives the latter an air, faraway, very very faraway, of prince charming.

All this cannot be applied to the belle who is the centre of this chapter, she is even more despicable and bloodthirsty than the beast she knows how to ally with, so much so that she is more of the bloodthirsty female lycanthrope type than a damsel in distress.

Now that imaged recreation moment has passed, let's find out the content of the second angel's message by reading the following:

**“And another, a second, angel followed, saying, Great Babylon has fallen, has fallen, which of the wine of the fury of her fornication has made all nations drink”.** [*Revelation 14 verse 8, Darby Translation (DARBY)*].

Here the second angel presents the the forfeiture of Babylon to us and the reason for her fall is linked to the fornications she practiced and distilled to all nations.

Here a first element of importance is given to us, because we understand that the power of Babylon is worldwide.

In addition, in this text to present the reason for the fall of Babylon, two words *fury* and *fornication* are associated which separately are already strong in meaning, but together call out:

**“Fury”** *generally represents a state of great anger which can often conducting to a frenzy (dementia) which can lead to losing control of our being and leading us to perform unspeakable acts.*

**“The Fornication”** *is synonymous with what is indecent and obscene, it is the character of all that contravenes modesty.*

Thus, by combining the reality of these two words, we understand that Babylon is a woman of extreme depravity.

This reality is not denied in this other text which presents it: *“One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls then came and spoke to me, saying, Come with me! I will show you the doom (sentence, judgment) of the great harlot (idolatress) who is seated on many waters, [She] with whom the rulers of the earth have joined in prostitution (idolatry) and with the wine of whose immorality (idolatry) the inhabitants of the earth have become intoxicated.*

**And [the angel] bore me away [rapt] in the Spirit into a desert (wilderness), and I saw a woman seated on a scarlet beast that was all covered with blasphemous titles (names), and he had seven heads and ten horns.**

**The woman was robed in purple and scarlet and bedecked with gold, precious stones, and pearls, [and she was] holding in her hand a golden cup full of the accursed offenses and the filth of her lewdness and vice. And on her forehead there was inscribed a name of mystery [with a secret symbolic meaning]:**

**Babylon the great, the mother of prostitutes (idolatresses) and of the filth and atrocities and abominations of the earth.**

**I also saw that the woman was drunk, [drunk] with the blood of the saints (God's people) and the blood of the martyrs [who witnessed] for Jesus. And when I saw her, I was utterly amazed and wondered greatly".** [*Revelation 17 verses 1-6, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

By reading the biblical text that we have just seen you can see that, the description that I made of beauty and her beast to present Babylon and her bestial mount, was not overdone, on the contrary.

I am now going to raise the curtain in order to present to you in a literal way the reality of the union of this most iniquitous couple.

Let's start with the beast. We learn that she is covered with the name of blasphemy, and she has seven heads and ten horns.

In addition, the rest of this text, which I did not include, teaches us that this beast must appear twice in the history of mankind because it must exist, then no longer be, and it must again reappear.

When she reappears all the inhabitants of the earth who do not revere the Lord will be amazed (*or in a great astonishment, depending on the version of the Bible*) by him.

All of these symbols represent the papacy at the head of the Catholic Church. I have already presented you, in great detail, this reality in the chapter "*The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*".

Having already elucidated the mystery of the bestial mount of Babylon, the iniquitous horsewoman, we will in this section study the symbols that represent her. Let's discover them, starting with purple.

Here is what we can read about it: **"And these are the garments which they shall make: a breastplate, and an ephod, and a robe, and a coat of checker work, a mitre, and a girdle: And they shall make holy garments for Aaron thy brother, and his sons, that he may minister unto me in the priest's office. And they shall take the gold, and the blue, and the purple, and the scarlet, and the fine linen.**

**And they shall make the ephod of gold, of blue, and purple, scarlet, and fine twined linen, the work of the skilful workman. [...]**

**And thou shalt make the robe of the ephod all of blue. [...]**

**And upon the skirts of it thou shalt make pomegranates of blue, and of purple, and of scarlet, round about the skirts thereof; and bells of gold between them round about”** [Exodus 28 verses 4-6, 31, 33, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Thus purple was one of the bases of the priestly garments that the priests wore, which was consecrated and established in the house of God. In addition, this color was also one of those used in the service of the divine sanctuary.

Here is what we learn about it: **“And they shall take away the ashes from the altar, and spread a purple cloth thereon”** [Numbers 4 verses 13, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Now that we've been able to place purple as consecrated to the Lord, let's take a look at scarlet. To find out, let's read this: **“And of the blue, and purple, and scarlet, they made finely wrought garments, for ministering in the holy place, and made the holy garments for Aaron;**

**As Jehovah commanded Moses. And he made the ephod of gold, blue, and purple, and scarlet [...] And he made the breastplate, the work of the skilful workman, like the work of the ephod; of gold, of blue, and purple, and scarlet [...]**

**And they made upon the skirts of the robe pomegranates of blue, and purple, and scarlet [...] And the girdle of fine twined linen, and blue, and purple, and scarlet, the work of the embroiderer; as Jehovah commanded Moses”.** [Exodus 39 verses 1-2, 8, 24, 29, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

We discover here that scarlet is also a part of the priestly habit of the priests. It is also one of the colors that is used in the house of Lord. This text tells us about this:

**“And he made a covering for the tent [...] And he made the boards for the tabernacle, of acacia wood, standing up. [...] and five bars for the boards of the tabernacle for the hinder part westward. [...] And he made the veil of blue, and purple, and scarlet [...]**



**And he made a screen for the door of the Tent, of blue, and purple, and scarlet [...]** [Exodus 36 verses 19-20, 32, 35, 37, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

Now these two points recorded, let's continue with the reality of precious stones. We also find this symbol in the clothing of the priests and in the house of God. For the dress of the priests here is what we can read: *“And these are the garments which they shall make:*

**A breastplate, and an ephod, and a robe, and a coat of checker work, a mitre, and a girdle: And they shall make holy garments for Aaron thy brother, and his sons, that he may minister unto me in the priest's office. [...]** **And thou shalt make a breastplate of judgment, the work of the skilful workman [...]**

**And thou shalt set in it settings of stones, four rows of stones: a row of sardius, topaz, and carbuncle shall be the first row; and the second row an emerald, a sapphire, and a diamond; And the third row a jacinth, an agate, and an amethyst; and the fourth row a beryl, and an onyx, and a jasper: They shall be inclosed in gold in their settings. And the stones shall be according to the names of the children of Israel, twelve, according to their names;**

*Like the engravings of a signet, every one according to his name, they shall be for the twelve tribes”. [Exodus 28 verses 4, 15, 17-21, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Here there is no textual mention of a precious stone, and this even if by reading the list of stones which are on the breastplate, we understand that they are of this nature. So that no ambiguity can remain, here is what it is written about them: **“And onyx along with other gemstones for mounting on the ephod and breastpiece”**. [Exodus 25 verse 7, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)].

Thus, precious stones were indeed part of the priestly garments of consecrated servants of the Lord. Now to find out their positions in the house of God let's read this: **“Now I have prepared with all my might for the house of my God [...]**

*Onyx stones, and stones to be set, stones for inlaid work, and of divers colors, and all manner of precious stones, and marble stones in abundance*". [1 Chronicles 29 verse 2, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

As you can see, until then all the attributes accompanying Babylon are also that of the servants of God or of his household.

So let's continue to find out if this reality is also true for gold. To do this, let's read this text: **"You are to make sacred garments [official clothing reserved for holy services] for Aaron your brother, for honor and for beauty (ornamentation). [...]**

**They are to use the gold and the blue and the purple and the scarlet fabric and fine twisted linen [from the people], and they shall make the ephod of gold [...]**

**And the skillfully woven sash [...]** be made of the same material: **of gold [...]** *With the work of an engraver in stone, like the engravings of a signet, shalt thou engrave the two stones, according to the names of the children of Israel: thou shalt make them to be inclosed in settings of gold.*

**[...] And thou shalt make settings of gold, and two chains of pure gold; like cords shalt thou make them, [...]** **And thou shalt make a breastplate of judgment [...]** of gold [...]

*And thou shalt make upon the breastplate chains like cords, of wreathen work of pure gold. And thou shalt make upon the breastplate two rings of gold, and shalt put the two rings on the two ends of the breastplate. And thou shalt put the two wreathen chains of gold in the two rings at the ends of the breastplate.*

*[...] You shall make pomegranates of blue, purple, and scarlet fabric all around its hem, with gold bells between them [...]*

**"You shall also make a plate of pure gold and engrave on it, like the engravings of a signet, 'Holy to the Lord.' You shall fasten it on the front of the turban with a blue cord**". [Exodus 28 verses 2, 5-6, 8,11, 13-15, 22-24, 33, 36-37, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

This is what I would call a “*man in gold*”, at least we will say that in his priesthood the priest (*here it is from the high priest, which it is*) was covered with gold. It had magnificence, but the house of God did not fare less well, as far as gold ornaments are concerned, quite the contrary. Here's what we can learn about it:

*“Now these are the measurements for the foundations which Solomon laid for the house of God. [...] And the greater house (the Holy Place) he lined with cypress and overlaid it with fine gold and made palm trees and chains on it”.* [2 Chronicles 3 verses 3 and 5, *Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

Not only were the walls of some parts of the house of God covered with gold, but so was the furniture. This tells us about it: **“They shall make an ark of acacia [...] You shall overlay the ark with pure gold, overlay it inside and out, and you shall make a gold border (frame) around its top. [...]**

**“You shall make a mercy seat (cover) of pure gold, [...] You shall make two cherubim (winged angelic figures) of [solid] hammered gold at the two ends of the mercy seat.**

[...] **“You shall make a table of acacia [...] You shall overlay it with pure gold and make a border of gold around the top of it. [...] You shall make the poles of acacia wood and overlay them with gold, so that the table may be carried with them.**

**You shall make its plates [for the showbread] and its cups [for incense] and its pitchers and bowls for sacrificial drink offerings; you shall make them of pure gold.**

[...] **“You shall make a lampstand of pure gold. The lampstand and its base and its shaft shall be made of hammered work [...]**

**Its snuffers and their trays shall be of pure gold”.** [Exodus 25 verses 10-11, 17-18, 23-24, 28-29, 31, 38, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

To continue, we will always stay in the symbol of gold, and we will focus on the gold cup. In this text we have just discovered that several of them were part of the temple utensils, so they are an integral part of the house of God. And we understand that as such the gold cups are also the utensils that the priests use.

Their Holiness is well represented in the following text:

**"And I separated twelve of the chief of the priests, Sarabias, and Hasabias, and with them ten of their brethren [...]**

*And I weighed to their hands six hundred and fifty talents of silver, and a hundred vessels of silver, and a hundred talents of gold, and twenty cups of gold, of a thousand solids, and two vessels of the best shining brass, beautiful as gold. And I said to them:*

**You are the holy ones of the Lord, and the vessels are holy, and the silver and gold, that is freely offered to the Lord the God of our fathers".** [Ezra 8 verses 24, 26-28, Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition Bible (DRA)].

To finish, I would say to you that the symbol of the pearl does not contradict everything that we have just seen, because its *raison d'être* is at the same time attached to the house of God and to the servant of God. To give us an idea, I invite you to read this: **"And I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, made ready as a bride adorned for her husband. [...]**

*Having a wall great and high; having twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels; and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: [...]*

**And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; each one of the several gates was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass".** [Revelation 21 verses 2, 12, 21, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

As you can see, all of these things that are in the possession of Babylon are of divine essence. In doing so, the symbols that Babylon wears qualify her as a woman who is consecrated to the Lord, but who has become perverted.

To fully understand the literal reason for his fall, which while professing to serve the Lord is iniquitous, we must be interested in the reality of his fornications which brings about his downfall.

This term relating to the fact that she is presented as being the great harlot can be confusing, if one considers them literally and might suggest that Babylon fell because of these perverted sexual appetites, because generally it is such acts which qualify fornication and prostitution.

Nevertheless, we must not forget that the symbols which represent it are prophetic. Regarding the term prostitute here is what we can read in the Holy Book: '

*'Do not make a treaty with the inhabitants of the land, or else when they prostitute themselves with their gods and sacrifice to their gods, they will invite you, and you will eat their sacrifices.*

**Then you will take some of their daughters as brides for your sons. Their daughters will prostitute themselves with their gods and cause your sons to prostitute themselves with their gods".** [*Exodus 34 verses 15-16, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

Let's complete our study with this: "**[...] But you have acted like a prostitute with many lovers, and now you want to come back to me?"** says the Lord [Hos. 2:7]; **[...] But your face still looks like the face [you have the forehead] of a prostitute [unembarrassed].**

*You refuse even to be ashamed of what you did. [...] And she didn't care that she was acting like a prostitute.*

*So she made her country unclean [defiled; polluted; in a ritual sense] and was guilty of adultery with stone and wood [by worshiping idols made of these materials]. [...] 'Come back [Return], unfaithful [apostate] people of Israel,' says the Lord. [...]*

*All you have to do is admit your sin — [Acknowledge your guilt] that you turned [rebelled; transgressed] against the Lord your God and worshiped gods [scattered your ways to strangers] under every green tree [2:20] and didn't obey me [listen to my voice],"* says the Lord". [*Jeremiah 3 verses 1, 3, 9, 12-13, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

Let's finish with this last text: "*The vision about Judah and Jerusalem that Isaiah, Amoz's son, saw in the days of Judah's kings Uzziyah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah. [...]*

**This faithful town has become a prostitute! She was full of justice; righteousness lived in her — but now murderers. [...]**

*Your princes are rebels, companions of thieves. Everyone loves a bribe and pursues gifts. They don't defend the orphan, and the widow's cause never reaches them".* [*Isaiah 1 verse 1, 21, 23, Common English Bible (CEB)*].

By synthesizing these texts we learn that when a people or a place which is consecrated to the Lord is unfaithful to him, the Lord considers him to be a prostitute.

The nature of prostitution is characterized by the abandonment of the ways of the Lord in order to practice the precepts of man which the Holy Scriptures condemn.

Babylon, we saw her wearing the symbols of a place consecrated to the Lord, and her fornications therefore consisted in the fact that she abandoned the Lord to practice iniquitous doctrines.

To understand the reality of the acts of Babylon which made it lose its dominant position, we must read what the following text tells us:

*"After this I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great authority; and the earth was made bright with his splendor.*

**He called out with a mighty voice, "Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great! It has become a dwelling place of demons, a haunt of every foul spirit, a haunt of every foul bird, a haunt of every foul and hateful beast. For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have grown rich from the power of her luxury."**

**Then I heard another voice from heaven saying, "Come out of her, my people, so that you do not take part in her sins, and so that you do not share in her plagues; for her sins are heaped high as heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.**

*Render to her as she herself has rendered, and repay her double for her deeds; mix a double draught for her in the cup she mixed. As she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, so give her a like measure of torment and grief. Since in her heart she says, 'I rule as a queen;*

*I am no widow, and I will never see grief,' therefore her plagues will come in a single day — pestilence and mourning and famine — and she will be burned with fire;*

**For mighty is the Lord God who judges her." [...] And in you was found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all who have been slaughtered on earth". [Revelation 18 verses 1-8, 24, New Revised Standard Version Bible (NRSV)].**

Here we learn about Babylon's attacks on law and prophecy.

What we find here is most interesting, but you have to be able to understand it. At least for prophecy things are unambiguous, for the fact that Babylon is a prophet slayer, established that she is working against prophecy.

On the other hand, the anti-law of God works that she practices are not clearly presented, but by interpreting the symbols presenting her, we discover this reality. To understand it, we must return to the context presented by this text.

Namely, that we are dealing with the end of Babylon! One of the factors which led to its demise concerns the sins and iniquities it practised.

Even if God's law does not appear in an obvious way in this text or in the second angel's message, it is nevertheless central, for it is He who establishes the reasons why Babylon fell.

For iniquity is sin and sin is brought about by the transgression of God's law. Here is what we can read about it: **"All iniquity is a sin, and there is such sin that does not lead to death"**. [1 John 5 vers 17, *Bible Louis Second (translated into English from the original text)*].

Let's complete with this: **"Whoever commits sin, also transgresses the Law. For sin is the transgression of the Law"**. [1 John 3 verses 4, *Revised Geneva Translation Bible (RGT)*].

Iniquity therefore being sin and this being is the transgression of the law of God, this therefore means that Babylon does not revere the law of God and that is why she has fallen.

Otherwise another observation that I make by reading the last biblical text speaking of Babylon is that she is not a person in flesh and blood, but it is of a place, that it is. To understand this another clue of weight is given to us allowing us to unmask this iniquitous woman.

The Lord calls his faithful people out of this place, which is symbolized as Babylon. Which implies that until then the faithful children of the Lord were there.

This information is important to me, because many suggest Babylon is America whilst others symbolise it as being Europe.

For me, these theories do not fit with what we have just read about Babylon, because if this were the case, it would mean that the Lord would call all His children living in Europe or the United States to migrate to other areas. I think that this thesis is unrealistic!

The mission that the Lord has given to His people until He returns shows that they cannot desert the nations where they live.

To understand this, let us discover the rules of the mission that Jesus Christ has entrusted to us as his people in the following lines:

*"And Jesus came to them and spake unto them, saying, All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth.*

**Go ye therefore, and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit:**

**Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you: and lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.** [Matthew 28 verses 18-20, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

Here, the Lord asks that until his return his people remain among the nations of the world in order to bring the Gospel to them.

By doing so God cannot ask that His people leave the nations where they live before that time.

In addition, here is what God's Word says about the place of His children in the world, that is, among the nations:

**"I have manifested Thy name unto the men whom Thou gavest Me out of the world. Thine they were, and Thou gavest them to Me, and they have kept Thy Word. [...]**

**And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to Thee.**

*Holy Father, keep through Thine own name those whom Thou hast given Me, that they may be one, as We are. [...] I have given them Thy Word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.*



**I pray not that Thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that Thou shouldest keep them from the evil. *They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through Thy truth:***

*Thy Word is truth. As Thou hast sent Me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. 'Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also who shall believe in Me through their word' [John 17 verses 6, 11, 14-20, 21 st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

In this text, we discover that the Lord says that He will not remove His children from the world or from the life of the Earth's nations, but that although they live in His bosom they are not of the world.

And it was Jesus Himself who sent His children into the world and we have seen that the purpose is for them to preach the Gospel.

The Lord's call to His people to quit Babylon cannot therefore be a call to leave a country or a political system. So, in order not to make a plan about the comet and in order to discover who Babylon is, we must refer to the the Bible which is the only sure guide.

Generally speaking, as is the case for Babylon, when the Lord calls upon His children to separate themselves from iniquitous people, He does not speak of those who populate the world, but of those who, while claiming to be members of His people, perform reprehensible acts. Here is what we can read about this :

**"When I wrote to you before I said not to mix with evil people. *But when I said that I wasn't talking about unbelievers who live in sexual sin or are greedy cheats and thieves and idol worshipers.***

*For you can't live in this world without being with people like that.* **What I meant was that you are not to keep company with anyone who claims to be a brother Christian but indulges in sexual sins, or is greedy, or is a swindler, or worships idols, or is a drunkard, or abusive. Don't even eat lunch with such a person.**

**It isn't our job to judge outsiders. But it certainly is our job to judge and deal strongly with those who are members of the church and who are sinning in these ways. God alone is the Judge of those on the outside.**

**But you yourselves must deal with this man and put him out of your church".** [*1 Corinthians 5 verses 9-13, Living Bible (TLB)*].

Otherwise, I admit that to present to you this reality which is that Babylon cannot be a nation, I took the stairs to reach the thirtieth floor while an elevator was available, because in the text of [*Revelation 18 verses 1-8*], this sentence removes any doubt on this subject:

**"[...] For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication [...]"**.

Here it refers to all the nations, therefore all the inhabitants of the earth, who have become perverted with Babylon, so this place cannot be a country.

Now, this point establishes, let us return to the prophetic reality that presents Babylon as being a place, or cohabits at the same time the faithful children of the Lord and of persons who practice iniquity.

The following text corroborates what I have just presented to you and gives us new indications about the type of place that Babylon is. We find in these lines the same type of appeal that the Lord makes to His people, where He calls upon them to leave this iniquitous place of Babylon : **"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers:**

**For what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infide? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols?**

*For ye are the temple of the living God; As God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; And I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing;*

**And I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty".** [*2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-18, King James Bible*].

This text brings us new and pertinent clues! Here, as with Babylon, God is speaking to His faithful children and He calls upon them to leave a place where iniquitous acts are being committed (*thereby transgressing His law*).

This is what makes those who are in these places unfaithful and with whom neither the Lord nor His faithful people can have fellowship.

Now that we have recorded these points, we will be able to do some leaf stripping, just as we would for an endive, stripping apart leaf by leaf the mystery that hides Babylon's identity.

The very appeal that the Lord addresses to his people, asking them to quit Babylon, determines for me what kind of place it is. If they must leave, they are already there! This implies that Babylon represents a religious place where God's people, made up of His faithful children as well as those who have rejected Him, can be found.

To understand how this heterogeneous mixture can exist among God's people, we must consider this: *"Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.*

*But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field?*

*From whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; Lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest:*

**And in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: But gather the wheat into my barn. [...]** *Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house : and his disciples came unto him, saying, declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.*

*He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; The good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil;*

**The harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire;**

*So shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.*

*Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear". [Matthew 13 verses 24-30, 36-43, King James Bible].*

This text teaches us that the Lord has established that the *wheat* and *tares* must grow together until the time of the harvest. This point symbolises the fact that God's children and the devil's children will have to live together, until the moment when the separation between these two peoples will be decreed. And this is also what happens with the Lord's request asking His people to leave Babylon.

Notice again, in this text, the reason why the devil's children are snatched from the kingdom of God :

*It is because they commit iniquity.*

It is therefore because they transgress God's law that they are rejected by Him. We realise that the sealing of God's faithful people is intrinsically linked to the observance of His holy law. We will go into this reality in more depth in the chapter entitled "*The modalities of the sealing of the two peoples (that of God and that of the beast)*".

We certainly have nothing to do to be saved, except to accept Jesus Christ as our personal saviour.

However, to enter eternal life we must be faithful to the Lord and not violate His law! To continue, I would like to tell you that it is important to understand that, in the parable of the wheat and the tares, the devil's children are not necessarily people who have chosen to live a life of lust. Here is what biblically characterises the devil's children who dwell among God's people:

*"Whoever commits sin, also transgresses the Law. For sin is the transgression of the Law. [...] Whoever commits sin is of the devil. For the devil sins from the beginning. The Son of God was revealed for this purpose: that He might destroy the works of the devil". [1 John 3 verses 4 and 8, Revised Geneva Translation Bible (RGT)].*

Let's finish with this text : **"You belong to [are from] your father the devil, and you want to do what he wants. He was a murderer from the beginning [Gen. 3; Rom. 5:12] and was against the truth [does not uphold the truth], because there is no truth in him.**

**When he tells a lie, he shows what he is really like [he reveals his own nature; or he speaks his own language; he speaks from his own], because he is a liar and the father of lies".** [*John 8 verses 44, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

All those who deliberately choose to transgress God's Word (*especially his holy law*) and who do not repent as soon as possible automatically become the devil's children.

Just as in the parable of the wheat and the tares, we have now established that Babylon was a symbol representing the duality between the two peoples who make up God's people. In doing so, it is now certainly evident to you that this place symbolises a religion.

And, you may think that since it cannot be yours, then it can only be one of the other religions populating Christianity.

In order to understand that Babylon cannot be a specific religion, we must not lose sight of the fact that the Lord's appeal asking His people to leave Babylon is addressed to all of God's children, whatever the nature of their faith or doctrine. God's people, in Jesus, are made up of various nations, races, etc. [*John 1 verses 12-13*], [*Revelation 5 verses 9-10*], but also religions [*Acts 23 verses 1-9*], so the call to come out of Babylon cannot be to any one in particular religion.

Thus the two groups in Babylon, consisting of the faithful children of God and the children of the devil, are all from different *nations, tribes, religions, etc.* Furthermore, since the people of God are called to form an indivisible body in Christ Jesus [*1 Corinthians 12 verses 12-27*], until the call to come out of Babylon the faithful children of the Lord and those of the devil abide in one place. Then from the call of the Lord to come out of Babylon, this group splits into two:

*As it is with the case of the harvest that separates the wheat from the chaff, on the one hand, we will have the faithful people of God, and on the other hand, the children of the devil and this will be the case for all religions and for all peoples existing on the face of the earth.*

*Sorry to shock you, but this will also be the case for your religion as well !*

The call to come out of Babylon is for us who live in the last days, yet the Lord asks us not to act in haste, for He has a plan for this.

To learn about the modalities of the exit from Babylon, established in the Bible, read the *volume V* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Biblical modalities of the exit of the faithful people of God from Babylon*". We have already discovered many realities about Babylon, but the subject is very broad, so we will not stop there.

In doing so, to learn more about this iniquitous place we will now look for the etymological meaning of its name.

**Babylon** is taken from the Hebrew word "baw-bel" (Babel) which means "Confusion".

The word "Babel" itself comes from another Hebrew word "baw-lal" ("Balal") which gives, among other things, as a definition "to confuse", "to confuse", "to mingle (with others)".

Thus Babylon symbolizes the fact of mixing with the doctrines, or way of life of others, to the point of ending up being in confusion, the finality is that we come to confuse reality with error.

The meaning of Babylon's name tells us a lot about who she is.

If we remain on the etymological reality which qualifies it, it is more than a place, it is a system of thinking, a philosophy, which is based on confusion in its most absolute state. What I just said is important!

Babylon is not a place but a spiritual reality, which represents any system of thought that advocates error, and therefore confusion.

This is evident in the various texts of the book of Revelation, presenting the final fate of the wicked, for at no time is Babylon thrown into the lake of fire.

Yes, the devil, the beast, the false prophet, the unrepentant who receive the mark of the beast cast his in this place, of the hottest, death and the place of the dead, themselves, are cast there, but not Babylon [Revelation 14 verses 8-11], [Revelation 20 verse 10-15], [Revelation 21 verse 8].

To deepen what I have just presented to you, I invite you to read the chapter entitled *"The reality of the false prophet who is at the service of the apocalyptic beast, servant of the demon"*.

Further noticed that after the second angel's message [Revelation 14 verses 8-13], there is no more mention of Babylon, but the third angel proclaims the reality of the mark of the beast. The call to leave Babylon therefore represents a solemn message from the Lord calling to abandon any doctrine that contravenes his Holy Word.

All who refuse to obey will be confused, and their end will be the lake of fire and brimstone. This system of thought which leads to confusion is also presented to us in this text: **"For the mystery of iniquity is already working, except that he who dominates now will dominate until he is taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked one be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of his mouth and remove with the clarity of his coming:**

**That wicked one, who shall come by the working of Satan with great power and signs and lying miracles, and with all deception of iniquity working in those that perish because they did not receive the charity of the truth, to be saved. Therefore, for this cause, God shall send the operation of error in them, that they should believe the lie; that they all might be condemned who did not believe the truth, but consented to the iniquity".** [2 Thessalonians 2 verses 7-12, Jubilee Bible 2000 Bible (JUB)].

By reading this text the first thing I want to highlight is what this *"operation of error"*, that God sends to those who are not faithful, that they should believe the lie.

To understand what it is, we must study study this portion of this text that we have just read in this other version: **"Because of this God will send upon them a misleading influence, [an activity of error and deception] so they will believe the lie".** [2 Thessalonians 2 verse 11, Amplified Bible (AMP)].

Reinforcing our study by discovering this text in this other version too: **"And so God sends the power of error to work in them so that they believe what is false".** [2 Thessalonians 2 verse 11, Good News Translation (GNT)].

By synthesizing these two texts, we therefore find ourselves faced with a power of error and deception which work in those who are rebellious to the Lord so they will believe the lie.

*The central point that I want to highlight from these texts is this notion of "power of error and deception".*

A power is generally a force or energy that has a certain power. However, in this case it is something else, because here this thing has a spiritual power strong enough to force human beings to practice lies.

The thing goes even further, because this "*power of error and deception*" has such a bearing that those who reject the word of God in order to practice the precepts of this iniquitous being, here called the ungodly, are condemned. Their finality will therefore be to be destroyed in the lake of fire and brimstone.

Let us come back to this "*power of error and deception*", it is not therefore a question of a force which is not endowed with intelligence as would be the waves which surround us, like those of the microwave or those which activate our audio-visual stations. To reinforce this thesis we must take into account the etymological meaning of these words *error* and *deception* which have been presented to us.

*The words **error** and **deception** are both derived from the Greek word "Plane (plan'-ay)" which etymologically is interpreted as "error, seduction, imposture (in the sense of deception), being led astray".*

*Generally, this term "Plane (plan'-ay)" presents the action of deliberately trying to seduce a person by an imposture (deception) in order to mislead him.*

This term also refers to mental being led astray and furthermore to the mistakes one makes by adhering to a false system of thought that leads one to act in confusion.

Armed with all that we have just seen, we understand that this "*power of error and deception*" has the capacity for thought by itself and is therefore a thinking and autonomous being who works for evil. In the following text, we can identify such an entity:



*"We are of God: he that knoweth God beareth us; he that is not of God beareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the **spirit of error**". [1 Jojn 4 verse 6, King James Bible].*

Here, as in the text seen above, we find the word "error", the difference is that here, it is not a question of a power but of a spirit of "error". Nevertheless, in order to become fully aware of what this term "*spirit of error*" represents, we must consider this text, in this other version: *"We, on the contrary, belong to God. Whoever knows God listens to us, whoever does not belong to God does not listen to us.*

*That is how we recognize the Spirit of God, which is true, and the **spirit of evil, which is liar**". [1 John 4 verse 6, Bible Parole de vie (translated into English from the original text)].*

We are presented here with two terms that we must study in order to master our subject and who are "*The spirit of evil*" and "*which is liar*". In order to understand what it is let's read this:

*"Put on the armor of God so that you will be able to stand firm against the deceit **of the devil**. For we are not struggling against flesh and blood, but against the principalities, the powers, and the cosmic rulers of this present darkness, and against **the spirits of evil in the heavens**". [Ephesians 6 verses 11-12, New Catholic Bible (NCB)].*

Let's complete our study with this: **"Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do.**

*He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it". [John 8 verse 44, King James Bible].*

By synthesizing these texts, we understand that the devil is a spirit, he is the father of lies and the master of deception, so he is "*the spirit of evil, which is liar*". In doing so, in the text of [2 Thessalonians 2 verses 7-12], this "*power (spirit) of deception*" which leads those who have rejected the Lord to believe in lies, therefore to take the truth for error and vice versa, is none other than a demonic power.

He will come and possess those who reject the Lord and blind them spiritually. This text therefore presents the reality of a place or various people who know the truth, rejects it to adopt the iniquitous beliefs of an individual.

The repercussion is that they end up losing their identity (*their values*) and their benchmarks and their future is therefore to live in confusion. Here we find the basis which qualifies Babylon.

Anyone who adheres to this system of thinking that rejects the Lord will be confused.

To continue, it is important to note that in this biblical chapter of [2 *Thessalonians 2*], verses [3-6], which I have not joined to you, prophesy, the coming of the enemy of God who is in these verses to call the man of sin as well as the son of perdition, who will have to sit in the temple of God and to declare himself "*god*".

The rest of this chapter, which we have considered above, continues to present the works of this iniquitous being and also qualifies him as being the wicked (*other version of the Bible calls him the ungodly*).

It is specified to us that, this wicked (*this ungodly*) acts under cover of the power of Satan and works with the seductions of iniquity and that his coming itself, carries out a work which is call the mystery of iniquity. We have seen that the term iniquity represents sin, which itself is the transgression of the law of God.

This prophetic text of [2 *Thessalonians 2 verses 3-12*] qualifies the papacy enthroned at the head of the Catholic Church, as being that ungodly who works against the law of God.

I bring you the proofs of this in the chapter "*The obscure plans of the dominator of nations*".

Before continuing, it is important to understand that although the active hand of the devil which distills antibiblical doctrines which leads to confusion is the Catholic Church, this religion is not Babylon.

To understand this reality we must not lose sight of the fact that in [Revelation 17 verses 1-8 (*especially verse 3*)], we discover that Babylon is seated on the beast with seven heads and ten horns.

We find here two very distinct entities, which are united for the same work.

This beast with ten horns and seven texts carries Babylon, which implies, that the two are therefore in adequacy and practice the same type of precept.

This reality is verified when we read [*Revelation 18 verses 1-5 (especially verse 5)*], where we learn that it is because of these iniquities, therefore the transgression of the law of God, that Babylon has fallen.

To take the scope of who or what Babylon is, one must consider the prophetic image attributed to her by reading this: "*And he cried with a mighty voice, saying, Fallen, fallen is **Babylon the great, and is become a habitation of demons, and a hold of every unclean spirit, and a hold of every unclean and hateful bird***". [*Revelation 18 verses 2, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Here Babylon is presented as having become a habitation of demons. Noted that it is not said that Babylon "*is*", as if to signify that it is what she always has been, but we are told, "*she has become*", which demonstrates a change.

In doing so, Babylon cannot be a place which was originally intended to glorify the devil, and the very fact that the children of God are in Babylon demonstrates this.

It is precisely because of his new state of perversity that the Lord asked his faithful people to come out of it.

In order to understand how a spiritual place consecrated to the Lord little by little ends up becoming the devil's den, we must read this: "*And to the angel of the church in Pergamum write: These things saith he that hath the sharp two-edged sword: **I know where thou dwellest, even where Satan's throne is;***

*And thou holdest fast my name, and didst not deny my faith, even in the days of Antipas my witness, my faithful one, who was killed among you, where Satan dwelleth.*

**But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there some that hold the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols, and to commit fornication.**

*So hast thou also some that hold the teaching of the Nicolaitans in like manner.*

*Repent therefore; or else I come to thee quickly, and I will make war against them with the sword of my mouth". [Revelation 2 verses 12-16, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Notice that we have in this text the same antinomy as that which exists in Babylon, because we find here two peoples being in the same place but who have diametrically opposed doctrines.

On the one hand we have those who are faithful to the Lord and on the other the servants of Satan. What qualifies them, the latter, as such is that they practice doctrines which contravene the word of God.

The repercussion of such an act is the establishment of the realities contained in [1 John 5 verses 19], which presents to us the devil as being the ruler of the world (*those living without the Lord*), as well as of those who are unfaithful to the Lord.

Thus, any spiritual place, which while being consecrated to the Lord, practices doctrines which contravene his word becomes the home of the devil.

Furthermore, here is how this type of doctrine is described: "**Now the Spirit manifestly saith, that in the last times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to spirits of error, and doctrines of devils, Speaking lies in hypocrisy, and having their conscience seared [...]**

*These things proposing to the brethren, thou shalt be a good minister of Christ Jesus, nourished up in the words of faith, and of the good doctrine which thou hast attained unto. But avoid foolish and old wives' fables: and exercise thyself unto godliness". [1 Timothy 4 verse 1-2, 6-7, Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition Bible (DRA)].*

First of all, it is important to position this text in time:

*What is happening here must do this in the last times (days), therefore in the same period of the fall of Babylon.*

Otherwise, the work which is presented here, and which is done under the guise of the devil, is that so-called spiritual teachers – therefore people who teach the people of God – will begin to teach pernicious, therefore anti-biblical doctrines.

What is emphasized here is not the place where the religion or these things are practiced, but the type of teaching that is carried.

Noted that in opposition to this type of adulterating doctrine, the Lord exhorts us to reject this type of foolish fables and to walk according to all the precept received from Jesus.

Thus any system of thought which transgresses the word of God and especially the holy law of the Lord, proclaims a message destined to lead to confusion. In doing so, those who bring this message, as well as those who receive it, become part of Babylon.

To understand the character of Babylon, as a spiritual philosophy and not as a place, we need to consider, in opposition to these values, what the worship we are to bring to the Lord represents. To do this let's read this: *““Sir,” the woman replied, “I see that you are a prophet. Our fathers worshipped on this mountain, but you Jews insist that the place where we must worship is in Jerusalem.”*

Jesus said to her, **“Believe me, woman, a time is coming when you will not worship the Father on this mountain or in Jerusalem. You Samaritans worship what you do not know.**

*We worship what we do know, because salvation is from the Jews.*

**But a time is coming and now is here when the real worshippers will worship the Father in spirit and in truth, for those are the kind of worshippers the Father seeks.**

**God is spirit, and those who worship him must worship in spirit and in truth.”** [*John 4 verses 19-24, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Let's complete with this: *“Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father who is in heaven.*

**For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them”.** [*Matthew 18 verses 19-20, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Here we find of most important realities, we discover among other things, that the Lord no longer recognizes an earthly place as having to be the place where he is to be worshiped. So your temple, your church, your synagogue, is not the place where the Lord is.

Each child of God is his temple, where the Holy Spirit lives [1 *Corinthians 3 verses 16-17*], and is also a stone of the house of the Lord, once all the faithful gathered he forms the house of the Lord [1 *Peter 2 verses 3-10*].

So that as soon as two or three are gathered together, the house of God is in place and the Lord is in the midst of them both and grants them what he asks in unity. This symbol of the spiritual unity of God's people forming the Lord's temple in spirit and not made of bricks and concrete represents those who will come out of Babylon!

The faithful children of the Lord who will come out of this iniquitous place will not be members of any religion, or of a literal place, but they are a people who worship the Lord in spirit and in truth. They will have chosen to walk according to all His Holy Word.

Conversely, the same pattern is also true of Babylon, but there instead of the doctrines of God and the worship of Him, those who remain in Babylon agree to adhere to a spiritual philosophy that rejects both the Lord and His word. Thus, Babylon is not a place but a system of thought, a vision adulterated with rules of life, which are in opposition to what the word of God has established.

So whoever walks according to these bases, will receive a "*power (spirit) of deception*" and will have the mark of the beast which will lead him to eternal destruction.

Now with these bases established, we can continue to reveal other facets of Babylon. To do this we are going to look again at part of a text that I presented to you at the beginning of this chapter, it is [1 *Revelation 17 verses 5-7*] that it is about.

I believe that what is presented here, if it does not remain in the prophetic framework which is the basis of this text, can disturb more than one and lead them to think that all that I have just presented is not based.

Here Babylon is presented as a murderer, worse as a serial Killer, because it is presented as being drunk with the blood of God's faithful children. Thus, this seems to present Babylon as a literal place and not a philosophy. To understand what it really is, we must first reread the following text, in this new version:

*"And he cried with a loud voice, saying: She is fallen, she is fallen, Babylon the great! [...]"*

**And in her was found the blood of the prophets, and of the saints, and of all who were slain on the earth".** [*Revelation 18 verse 2 and 24, Bible Darby (translated into English from the original text)*].

We find here that in Babylon was found the blood of the prophets, the saints and all those who were immolated – thus sacrificed in the name of God – on earth. Notice that here in presenting the death of these servants of the Lord we are told "*all those*". Which implies, all who died, from the beginning of creation until the day Babylon fell.

This notion of the slayer of prophets and servants of God, which runs from generation to generation on those who reject the Lord, is presented in this text: **"Woe to you, [self-righteous] scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you build tombs for the prophets and decorate and adorn the monuments of the righteous, and you say, 'If we had been living in the days of our fathers, we would not have joined them in shedding the blood of the prophets.'**

*So you testify against yourselves that you are the descendants of those who murdered the prophets. Fill up, then, the [allotted] measure of the guilt of your fathers' sins. You serpents, you spawn of vipers, how can you escape the penalty of hell?*

**"Therefore, take notice, I am sending you prophets and wise men [interpreters, teachers] and scribes [men educated in the Mosaic Law and the writings of the prophets];**

**Some of them you will kill and even crucify, and some you will flog in your synagogues, and pursue and persecute from city to city, so that on you will come the guilt of all the blood of the righteous shed on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah [the priest], the son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar.**

**I assure you and most solemnly say to you, [the judgment for] all these things [these vile and murderous deeds] will come on this generation.**

**"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, who murders the prophets and stones [to death] those [messengers] who are sent to her [by God]!**

**How often I wanted to gather your children together [around Me], as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you were unwilling. Listen carefully:**

**Your house is being left to you desolate [completely abandoned by God and destitute of His protection]!"** [*Matthew 23 verses 29-38, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

This text highlights the sins of the scribes and Pharisees, who were then the leaders of God's people. The Pharisees, while condemning the works of their ancestors, practised similar sins. Because of the iniquitous deeds of the scribes and Pharisees, we see that God is calling to account all of Jerusalem by subjecting it to the curse.

Since the body of Christ is one, because of the acts of its rulers, God's people are deprived of the Lord's presence, which implies that it is the devil that reigns in these places (*temples and churches*).

It is important to note that here the people of God, because of the iniquitous works of their high leaders, inherit all the sins and iniquitous acts that have been practiced since the first fratricidal crime that Cain perpetrated on his brother Abel.

This reality is that which is manifested in this text where Babylon is presented as being drunk on the blood of the saints and the blood of the servants of God.

By reading this text, we understand well that in a literal way the scribes and the Pharisees did not participate, alongside Cain in the murder of his brother Abel.

What lost Cain was that he wanted to offer the Eternal God what he wanted and not what the Lord asked for.

He did not act ignoring the divine directives, because the offering of his brother, being conformed before the Lord, we understand that the two brothers had knowledge of what the Lord expected of them [*Genesis 4 verses 2-11*].

The more so as the concept of sacrifice of an animal, in order to compensate for the sin of the man were not foreign to them, because in [*Genesis 3 verse 21*], we learn that God made garments of skins for Adam and Eve, which implies that the sacrifice of an animal was necessarily made.



Cain, having preferred to listen to his heart, brought an offering which was rejected, while that of his brother was accepted by the Lord, the repercussion was, that he killed, out of jealousy and frustration, the latter. Thus, all those who aim to transgress the word of God under the guise of wanting to substitute their own conviction for it, join, willy-nilly, in this movement of confusion which began with Cain.

In doing so, they inherit the crimes of all those who, since this first fratricidal murderer who have practiced this type of work.

It is this same reality which is attached to the crime of Babylon, which is not a literal place or people, but a system of thought established to transgress the word of God and which aims to bring it to those who believe it practice confusion.

In doing so, Babylon cannot literally be the perpetrator of the murder of the Lord's faithful children.

Babylon being the set of doctrines of demon that profess, through the ages, those who reject the Lord, in doing so, this philosophy is charged with the blood of all the martyrs that this world has known, starting with that of Abel that cain poured out.

As we have seen, all those who will reject the Lord, to practice pernicious doctrines, doctrine of demon, will become members of Babylon.

In doing so, like the Scribes and the Pharisees will be guilty of the blood of all the faithful servants of God which has been and will be shed on the earth and that since that of Abel. To continue it is important to make a most productive stop.

To do this I would tell you that in the text of [*Revelation 17 verses 5-7*], which presents Babylon, what struck me the most was the astonishment of the apostle John.

He was seized with great astonishment and was deeply moved, so unexpected is the one presented as Babylon. He was one of the last living apostles and was already old when he received this revelation on the island of Patmos.

When he sees Babylon, he is stunned by what he sees, even though he had already endured many vicissitudes in his life and had witnessed the most extraordinary things. In reality John had seen Jesus walking on the waters, casting out demons, dying crucified, rising from the dead. He had also seen many martyrs die, etc.

In a vision he had seen Jesus in his glory, to the point where he fainted and could not stand on his feet [*Revelation 1 verses 9-18*].

In these visions he saw things, such as Jesus glorified or strange beasts [*Revelation 5 verses 9-14*], [*Revelation 13 verses 1-2, 11-14*].

He could also see the war that took place in heaven and which Satan and those angels led against God and those holy angels.

He saw, with those eyes, the fury of the mighty red dragon of anger which hurls with its tail, on earth, a third of the stars of the sky.

He also saw him seeking to eat the newborn child, etc. He saw mighty angels striking the earth with their plagues.

He saw the beast with seven heads and ten horns, which was going to martyr and kill the people of God, and the beastly lamb with two horns that would set up a genocide against all those who did not have the mark of the beast. The apostle John also saw terrible plagues to befall the earth etc., all of this he could face. However, at the sight of Babylon riding this scarlet beast, he is in perplexity.

The state of the great apostle came, in my opinion, from the fact that what he saw seemed to be out of sense and abnormal. Otherwise, what I think must have challenged John in what he saw were the symbols with which Babylon was clothed and the golden cup she held, for these are those which were established in the house of God.

Thus John's astonishment at seeing Babylon came, in my opinion, from the fact that this woman, perverted and bloodthirsty, bore and possessed the attributes normally reserved for the house of the Lord.

In order to understand her astonishment, I am going to give you a strong image of the feeling that can be experienced in such a case.

Imagine that you are a married man and that you have, according to you, married a virgin, and that she is in those eyes the image of the virtuous woman described in [*Proverbs 31 verses 10-31*].

Therefore you live in happy days with your beautiful princess in an enchanting house in a valley where "*milk*" and "*honey*" flow.

Your days are lulled by the sound of waterfalls and by the song of birds that twirling in your house. Your wife is your joy, she is prude and pure, in everything she does she shows nobility etc.

She is like a fairy-tale princess. In order to do good, she has to travel once every six months and stay for a month in a foreign country.

She told you that she works in a humanitarian organisation. At each of these departures you are certainly sad but so proud to have married this pearl of perfection. At this very moment, for almost three weeks now, she has been in China for her work.

To make up for this, you are stuffing your face with cake and watching the videos you have shot featuring her. While you have become a soft marshmallow of love, doesn't he see that one of your childhood friends is coming to visit you. You're amazed to see it!

Yes, he, the joker who burns his life like a candle lit at both ends, he, the cheerful luron, he, the monster of unconsciousness, is white as a sheet, and wears a most serious and most solemn air.

Yet he is of the African type ! Seeing him, you assume the worst, because he tells you he to come back from China, your tears are already falling, you are making a movie, your wife must have had an accident! Worse, your beautiful is certainly no longer of this world! But you are amazed at the response of your friend who tells you:

*Some things are worse than death!*

At that moment he releases a DVD and asks you to play it. At the sight of the scene that follows, you are struck by lightning in your heart, as you see your dear and tender beloved playing the main role as the star of a film for "*adults*", which has just been shot in China.

Moreover, there can be no doubt about it because these images show her unique birth sign placed in a part of her intimacy. Which leaves no room for doubt! Here you are, therefore, in immeasurable astonishment.

*From then on, with a broken heart, you ask yourself ten thousand questions.*

This was, in my opinion, the type of stupor that John had when he saw Babylon. After this interlude, which I believe was most instructive, let us return to our study.

My feeling is that what traumatized the apostle John was the nonsense of what he was seeing.

Before these eyes scrolled the symbols intrinsically representing everything for what, these brothers in Christ, who was among others the other apostles and all these beloved, as well as himself fought and for whom many of them gave. their lives.

What traumatized the apostle John, in my opinion, was to see what would become of the teachings that they (*the apostles and other servants of God*) carried at the risk of their lives.

He saw this work become perverted, even worse than what the scribes and Pharisees had done.

How could he not be in shock as he was exiled to the island of Patmos for the work of God, as he saw the people of God, these children of light becoming the worst thing than the world spiritual will never wear?

To continue, we will now come back to the fall of Babylon [*Revelation 14 verses 8*], [*Revelation 18 verse 2*].

Generally, in order to fall literally and figuratively, one is supposed to be in a dominant position first, because a fall always brings one downwards.

In a figurative way, the one who has a position of prestige and who loses it is presented as having fallen, therefore as having fallen. The fact that Babylon falls already presents us with a loss of power. This reality is well represented in the rest of the text [*Revelation 18*] which presents its downfall.

Apart from all this, it is interesting to note that in this text the word fallen is presented twice.

This fact is not trivial, for the Lord who is the magnified wisdom, does not speak just for the sake of speaking. Here each time this word is used presents a given period.

The first "*is fallen*" represents the moment when the message asking to come out Babylon will be spoken. At this precise moment the works of Babylon are on display for all to see.

It is from this moment that the people of God become aware of who she is and dissociate themselves from her.

Which is a considerable loss of power for this philosophy. The second "*is fallen*" the end of Babylon and the destruction of all who continued to practice these precepts. Once the Babylonian exit message is proclaimed, then its end begins.

In this context, a very interesting element is to be noted, and to do this I invite you to read the text of [*Revelation 18 verses 4, 6, 8, 20-21, 24, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Here, it is God himself who judges Babylon and pronounces his sentence, which is intended to bring justice to all these children (*those of Gods*), who were murdered by Babylon.

What is happening here, comes out of the framework of the last judgment, where the angels (*therefore the demons*), and the men are judged by the people of God, who will assist the Lord Jesus Christ in this task.

To discover this reality, I invite you to read the chapter entitled "*The reality of the judges of the last judgment and the subtle plans of the demon by which he seeks to make these judges ineligible*".

When it is necessary that the judgment of the Lord be pronounced on a thinking being, angel, demon, or human beings there is a judgment, which must be made in a court, so that the sentence is just and equitable.

That is why, among other things, that the Lord grants his people the great privilege of being the substitute judges of the Last Judgment. In addition, we discover in this text, that once Babylon is precipitated, it will not be found again.

This point is important, and to understand it we need to juxtapose it with the apocalyptic three angels message, which we find in [*Revelation 14 verses 6-13*].

Here it is the message of the second angel who proclaims the fall of Babylon, and is complementary with what we have just studied.

Then by the time the third angel's message begins Babylon is no longer quoted, so that she is not cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, for she is already destroyed at that time, for the prophecy has declared that we will not find her again.

This same reality presenting Babylon as not being cast in the same place as the iniquitous beings is also presented in this text: "*After these things I heard as it were a great voice of a great multitude in heaven, saying, Hallelujah;*

**Salvation, and glory, and power, belong to our God: For true and righteous are his judgments;**

**For he hath judged the great harlot, her that corrupted the earth with her fornication, and he hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.**

[...] *And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought the signs in his sight, wherewith he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast and them that worshipped his image:*

**They two were cast alive into the lake of fire that burneth with brimstone"** [*Revelation 19 verses 1-2, 20, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

The first observation which I make while reading this text, is that in these lines, we have the confirmation that Babylon is not an entity of flesh and blood but is a philosophy.

Notice that at the beginning of this biblical text there is mention of the judgment of "*the great harlot, her that corrupted the earth with her fornication*", this woman is presented as having shed the blood of the servants of God, so it is Babylon that it is about.

Yet despite these abominations, when the time arrives when the wicked, here the beast and the false prophet, will be cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, Babylon is not one of them.

Whereas on the contrary, in addition to the beast and the false prophet, the death, hell and all the unrepentant who received the mark of the beast, them, are entitled to this most scorching of baths [*Revelation 20 verses 11-15*].

So, Babylon cannot go into this fire because she is a philosophy. Let us return now to this sentence that the Lord proclaims on Babylon in [*Revelation 18 verses 4, 6, 8, 20-21, 24*].

The Lord declares that Babylon will be consumed by fire, and as it is he who judged him and did justice to these children that this scoundrel killed, it is therefore the fire of God that will destroy her.

Nevertheless although it is the fire of the Lord that will do this work, the people of God will have an active part to play in it. To understand it, we have to go over the course of the fall of Babylon:

*First, the Lord calls his faithful people to come out of Babylon. Then he asks them to return to Babylon all the evil that she has done and this doubly. So that those who will apply the sentence of the Lord, having to strike Babylon, it is the faithful children of the Lord, who came out of this place.*

*In order to understand what this is about, we must not lose sight of the fact that we are dealing with a prophetic text, which must be interpreted as allegorie and not textually.*

In order to understand what this fire is, which represents the sentences of the Lord and which he gives into the hands of these servants, we must read [*Deuteronomics 32 verses 21-22, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*], [*Jeremiah 23 verse 29, American Standard Version (ASV)*], [*Jeremiah 5 verse 11-14, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

By synthesizing these texts, we understand that when a spiritual place practices doctrines that transgress the word of God, the Lord destroys it with the fire of his wrath.

The latter is manifested by his word which is a fire and it is to these servants that the Lord entrusts the task of consuming this place by the fire which comes out of their mouths.

This symbol of fire coming out of the mouths of the servants of God, not being able to be literal, it therefore represents representing the word of God that he speaks.

This symbol represents the Gospel that is preached to destroy the doctrines of the devil taught by iniquitous people who, while claiming to be of the Lord, profess iniquitous doctrines, which are inconsistent with the word of God [*Titus 1 verses 10-16*], [*1 Timothy 4 verses 1-11*], [*Acts 13 verses 6-12*].

What causes the fall of Babylon and its destruction is the message that God presents and which concerns her, through this powerful angel and which we find in [*Revelation 18*].

Once this message has been proclaimed, the faithful people of God who come out of Babylon, now knowing who this iniquitous woman is, so this doctrine or movement of thought which transgresses the word of God, will make sure to destroy it by the Gospel.

We cannot physically kill a doctrine by burning it on a stake or by throwing it into the lake of fire and getting sulfur, but we can annihilate it by the fire of the word of God.

*This book and its first volume are among the weapons that the Lord gives you in order to annihilate Babylon.*

## 12 Prophetic realities presenting the identity of the beastly lamb of Revelation 13

**7**o begin this chapter I will tell you that there are some of the most powerful entities that while being iniquitous have in their hands the future of humanity.

While reading me, one could believe in the script of a science-fiction film, however, these are real facts to come.

We will discover in these lines some of the most important facts, because it is the identity of the one who gives the mark of the beast that it is. Prophecy presents it to us as a beast that has two horns like that of a lamb. Here is what the Holy Book tells us about it:

**"Then I saw another beast rising up out of the earth; he had two horns like a lamb and he spoke like a dragon.**

**He exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence [when the two are together].**

**And he makes the earth and those who inhabit it worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. *He performs great signs (awe-inspiring acts), even making fire fall from the sky to the earth, right before peoples' eyes.***

*And he deceives those [unconverted ones] who inhabit the earth [into believing him] because of the signs which he is given [by Satan] to perform in the presence of the [first] beast, telling those who inhabit the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded [fatally] by the sword and has come back to life.*

**And he is given power to give breath to the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast will even [appear to] speak, and cause those who do not bow down and worship the image of the beast to be put to death.**



**Also he compels all, the small and the great, and the rich and the poor, and the free men and the slaves, to be given a mark on their right hand or on their forehead [signifying allegiance to the beast], and that no one will be able to buy or sell, except the one who has the mark, either the name of the beast or the number of his name".** [*Revelation 13 verses 11-17, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

When we consider a lamb, it is difficult for us to see him as a bloodthirsty beast, because the image we have of him is that of a ball of sweetness that makes us crack and makes us want to hug him and give her all our love. Great harm, would take you to want to act with this lamb that we find in this text.

This beast, although having the attributes of a lamb, is bloodthirsty, for it is a murderer, which causes all those who do not worship the beast with *10 horns and 7 heads to be killed*. Before starting to decipher the symbols that qualify this beast of the most bizard, it was important that we can make a stop, an interlude, the most beneficial.

Not to enjoy the cupcakes and other sweets, but to take the time to prepare yourself psychologically, for what you are going to discover in this part. What I am about to present to you now will certainly surprise and deeply shake many of you, for we are going to start a very big piece. The thing is such, that while the prophecy shows us this bestial lamb as being a bloodthirsty murderer who causes all those who do not have the mark of the beast to be killed, she herself does not know who she is, nor that it is the scope of his demonic works.

For my part, when through the prophetic symbols I could Bible in hand establish what (*or who*) this beast symbolizes, I was surprised, because in the reality, I would never have lent him such a work... Otherwise, to fully understand what this beast is experiencing and its vision of its work here below, I will give you an example of the type of reality it is experiencing.

*In order to understand the personality and the foundations of the demonic work that this beast that has two horns like that of a lamb does, you need to picture it as a sleepwalker.*

*Imagine that our subject is the CEO of a large multinational corporation.*

*During these sleepwalking crises, he has developed the perfidious habit of emptying the accounts of his clients, thanks to orders that he places on the internet at their expense.*

*As he acts in a second state, in the early morning no trace of these works remains in his memory. This has the effect of making these misdeeds last for months without the clever thief being unmasked. Above all, in everyday life he is a rich and honest man, and a good Christian.*

*Because of his good testimony, no one has ever, even for a moment, suspected him, because in view of his good testimony, his exemplary life and his reputation it would be nonsense.*

*It was a change in his life that would reveal the truth, because from the hardened bachelor that he has always been, he ends up getting married. On his wedding night, for the first time in his adult life, he shares his home with someone opposite.*

*Thus, once the wedding night is over, the two spouses fall into a sweet sleep in each other's arms. Then in the dampness of the night, as usual, our sleepwalking thief wakes up to take action. From then on, like Mister Hyde working in Dr. Jenkins' body, our thief wakes up, without his knowledge.*

*His new half, who knows about sleepwalking syndromes, knowing that he must not be woken up during his crisis, follows him and starts filming him. She discovers, stunned, the hard and sordid truth. What a shock these revelations will be for our sleepwalking thief when he wakes up.*

*What a great astonishment it will be for him and his clients when they learn of his secret works. Especially since they placed him above all suspicion, he the man with the appearance so policed by honor!*

In this book I would show you that, like our sleepwalker, that the group of individuals symbolized by this beast which has two horns similar to the horns of a lamb, is not fully aware of the repercussions of their actions.

Nevertheless their works qualify them as being bestial and bloodthirsty. Because she herself does not know who she is, over the centuries the mystery of our beast's identity has been thick and murky.

This gave rise to some bizarre situations, as this entity established theories about what it thought was the identity of this beast, but of course without ever realising that it was the beast it was talking about.

Among these theories, she established among other things that this beast represented America, Europe or another nation etc. but Bible in hand I'll prove you wrong. You will certainly be amazed at how a lamb always remains a lamb even if it speaks like a dragon.

You will also see how when a lamb indulges in the works of darkness, while still giving the world the image of meekness, he can be as demonic as the devil. This is how this beast with the two horns of lamb, without realizing it, came to establish the dominion of the demon, working even worse than he would not have done himself.

To unravel the secret identity of this bestial lamb, we must forget all that human wisdom has been able to instill in us about him.

The most important basis, in order to work is not to seek to interpret this text of [*Revelation 13 verses 11-17*], according to human symbols since it is prophetic in nature.

The only safe guard in order not to wander in this quest is to interpret the symbols of this biblical text thanks to the prophetic bases that the Lord has established in his word. Now that these basics have been laid, we can get to the heart of the matter. To do this, the first symbol that we will decipher is that of the beast.

This symbol is most important because it intrinsically represents what this entity is and allows us to better understand what are the iniquitous works that it practices. To understand what the symbol of the beast represents, we are going to read this: **"Why are we regarded as beasts, as if [we are] stupid (senseless) in your eyes?"** [*Job 18 verse 3, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Let's complete with this text: *"But a man does not abide in honor;*

**Mankind is like the beasts that come to ruin. This is their way, it is their folly; yet their posterity approve their sayings. Selah"** [*Psalm 49 verses 12-13, Modern English Version Bible (MEV)*].

Let's end with this this: **"So brutish was I, and ignorant; I was as a beast before thee"**. [*Psalm 73 verse 22, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

This symbol of the beast therefore represents foolish people and brutes without intelligence, this image is also that of worldly people who walk according to their heart.

All this presents the beast as an individual who does not revere the Lord, but works according to his wisdom. This image of the fool and the brute who is not reverent the Eternal God and who is symbolized as a beast is also presented to us in the following text:

**"Turn your footsteps [quickly] toward the perpetual ruins; The enemy has damaged everything within the sanctuary. In the midst of Your meeting place Your enemies have roared [with their battle cry]; They have set up their own emblems for signs [of victory]. [...] They have burned Your sanctuary to the ground; They have profaned the dwelling place of Your name.**

*They said in their heart, "Let us completely subdue them." They have burned all the meeting places of God in the land. We do not see our symbols; There is no longer any prophet [to guide us], Nor does any among us know for how long. O God, how long will the adversary scoff? Is the enemy to revile Your name forever? [...]*

**Remember this, O Lord, the enemy has scoffed, And a foolish and impious people has spurned Your name. Oh, do not hand over the soul of your turtledove to the wild beast; Do not forget the life of Your afflicted forever. Consider the covenant [You made with Abraham], For the dark places of the land are full of the habitations of violence. [...] Arise, O God, plead Your own cause;**

**Remember how the foolish man scoffs at You all day long. Do not forget the [clamoring] voices of Your adversaries, The uproar of those who rise against You, which ascends continually [to Your ears]"**. [*Psalm 74 verses 3-4, 7-10, 18-20, 22-23, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

In this text the image of the beast qualifies those who reject the Lord and who undertake to attack his people.

Here, those symbolized as being beasts are without intelligence because they are foolish, and it is this lack of discernment that makes them martyr the people of God, having of joy in their hearts.

In reality, the people of God the real enemies of the people of God are not these bestial and foolish people, but they are the demons, for it is Satan and his engeance who rule the world (*those living without God*) and as he did it for Cain he urges human beings to persecute and kill their neighbors who serve the Lord: [*Ephesians 6 verses 10-12*], [*1 John 5 verse 19*], [*Genesis 4 verses 1-10*], [*1 John 3 verses 7-15*], [*John 8 verse 39-47*], [*John 15 verses 18 -25*].

Otherwise, by synthesizing all the texts that we have just seen on this theme, we learn that the symbol of the beast more precisely represents those who live without revering the true God. In the following text a distinction is made between the people of God who are presented as a lion and a lion cub and the peoples (*the nations*) who are presented as beasts:

**"The remnant of Jacob Shall be among the nations, In the midst of many peoples Like a lion among the beasts of the forest, Like a young lion [suddenly appearing] among the flocks of sheep Which, if he passes through, Tramples down and tears into pieces [the nations in judgment], And there is no one to rescue".** [*Micah 5 verse 8, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

To understand the difference between God's people and a pagan people living without the Lord, we need to study the purpose of the word beast. This is what it stands for: "*And so the again-rising of dead men. It is sown in corruption, it shall rise in uncorruption; It is sown in unnobleness [it is sown in unnobility], it shall rise in glory;*

*it is sown in infirmity, it shall rise in virtue; it is sown a beastly body, it shall rise a spiritual body. If there is a beastly body, there is also a spiritual body; As it is written, The first man Adam was made into a soul living, the last Adam into a spirit quickening. But the first is not that that is spiritual [...], but that that is beast-like, afterward that that is spiritual.*

**The first man of earth is earthly; the second man of heaven is heavenly [...]**". [*1 Corinthians 15 verses 42-47, Wycliffe Bible (WYC)*].

When we are born we are all born as an animal man or woman (*a bestial being*), this reality we inherit in Adam. So he who lives without having made a covenant with Christ is before God like a beast (*an animal being*). It is the same with anyone who transgresses the Word of God, when he had already made a covenant with Jesus.

Here is how those who do so are presented: *"For there are many unruly men, vain talkers and deceivers, specially they of the circumcision, whose mouths must be stopped;*

**Men who overthrow whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake. One of themselves, a prophet of their own, said, Cretans are always liars, evil beasts, idle gluttons.**

*This testimony is true. For which cause reprove them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith, not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men who turn away from the truth. [...]*

**They profess that they know God; but by their works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate"**. [*Titus 1 verses 10-14, 16, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Whoever, while knowing the Lord, rebels against him and transgresses his Holy Word is (*by these acts*) becomes like an animal, a stupid beast who practices abominable doctrines.

This reality makes him a person who is not able to understand or receive the teachings of the Holy Spirit, because the Spirit of God cannot live in the infidels.

So although being of the people of God, whoever transgresses his Word remains, in the first state of his birth, a beastly man (*an animal man*). Here is how the difference between a child of God walking by the Spirit of God and a person living without the Lord is presented:

*"But as it is written, That eye saw not, nor ear heard, neither it ascended into the heart of man, what things God arrayed to them that love him [...]; But God showed to us by his Spirit. For why the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.*

And who of men knoweth, what things be of man, but the spirit of man that is in him? So [and] what things be of God, no man knoweth, but the Spirit of God. *And we have not received the spirit of this world, but the Spirit that is of God, that we know what things be given to us of God. Which things we speak also, not in wise words of man's wisdom, but in the doctrine of the Spirit, and make a likeness of spiritual things to ghostly men.*

[...] For a beastly man perceiveth not those things that be of the Spirit of God; For it is folly to him, and he may not understand, for it is examined ghostly [...].

But a spiritual man deemeth all things, and he is deemed of no man. *As it is written, And who knew the wit of the Lord, or who taught him? And we have the wit of Christ". [1 Corinthians 2 verses 9-16, Wycliffe Bible (WYC)].*

All who make a covenant with Jesus Christ and remain faithful to him become spiritual beings, children of light, who are guided and instructed in everything by the Holy Spirit.

Whoever is not thus bound to the Lord, or who while having made a covenant with him is unfaithful to his Word, does not have or no longer has the capacity to discern what is good from what is bad.

This type of person is presented as being spiritually blind. Here's what we find out about them: **"The disciples came and said to him, "Why do you speak to them in parables?" He answered them, "To you it has been given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but it has not been given to them.**

*For whoever has will be given even more, and he will have an abundance. But whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. This is why I speak to them in parables, because even though they see, they do not see; and even though they hear, they do not hear or understand.*

In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled which says, **You will hear clearly, but you will never understand.**

**You will see clearly, but you will never perceive. Because this people's heart has grown callous, their ears are hard of hearing. They have closed their eyes.**

**Otherwise they would see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their heart, turn, and I would heal them.**

**“But blessed are your eyes because they see and your ears because they hear”.** [*Matthew 13 verses 10-16, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Thus the Lord reserves his knowledge, these mysteries for those who have made a covenant with him and remain faithful to him.

In addition to those who while claiming his name are unfaithful to him He makes them spiritual deaf and blind, they hear and see divine things but do not understand them.

This reality is due to the fact that those who while claiming the name of the Lord transgress his Holy Word receive a “*power (spirit) of deception*” which leads them to believe that the lie is the truth and vice versa [*2 Thessalonians 2 verses 9-12*].

We have in the Bible glaring examples of this reality in the person of the high dignitaries of the people of God contemporary with Jesus, who were among others the Pharisees [*Matthew 23*], [*Matthew 27 verses 22-26*], [*Acts 5 verses 17-30*].

They were so blinded by the demon that they came to excite the Jewish people to ask the Romans to crucify the Son of God who is himself God. And these spiritual leaders at the head of the Jewish people went so far as to ask that the blood of Christ fall on them as well as on their children (*thus like a curse*).

Yet they were the appointed rulers of the people of God, on whom the holy anointing rested [*Matthew 23 verses 1-3*].

We also find this reality in Saul, who was also a Pharisee – before he became Paul the servant of God – he persecuted the followers of Christ to death. So much so that it was Jesus himself who had to appear to him in his glory in order to arrest him in these iniquitous works [*Acts 9 verses 1-9*], [*Acts 22 verses 3-16*].

Such a person works for the devil while thinking of serving the Lord [*John 8 verse 44*]. To understand how far a person who is blinded by the devil can go, we must read this: ***“They shall put you out of the synagogues : Yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.***



*And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me". [John 16 verses 2-3, King James Bible].*

Those who are thus blinded will come to kill the faithful children of God by thinking, by their bloody acts, glorified the Lord.

This reality is evident in the works of the Catholic Church which is prophetically symbolized as the first beast of prophecy of [Revelation 13] that rises from the sea and has seven heads and ten horns.

This religion has plundered, tortured and murdered, without pity, a multitude of martyrs, under cover of faith and having the intimate conviction of serving the Lord by such acts. I brought you proof of such acts in the chapter entitled "*The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*".

I also invite you to read volume II of this book in the chapter entitled "*The bloodthirsty legislative legacy*". To come back to the symbol of the beast, it therefore represents either the works of a people who do not know the Lord, or of a people who bear his name while dishonoring him. Now that we have elucidated the symbol of the beast, we will look at another one that is also present in our basic text.

We are told that the bestial two-horned lamb comes out of the earth. To find out what this symbol hides, I invite you to read this: "**For the [whole] earth is the Lord's and everything that is in it**". [1 Corinthians 10 verse 26, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].

The symbol of the earth in the prophetic language represents what belongs to the Lord. Nevertheless, it does not belong to Him just as an object would, because the relationship is more intimate, stronger, as would be the bonds that unite a husband and wife. See for yourself :

**"One will no longer name you Forsaken, one will no longer name your Earth, desolation; But one shall be called you my pleasure in she, and the one will call your Earth, spouse; For the Eternal puts his pleasure in you, and your land will have a spouse. As a young man is joined to a virgin, so your sons will unite with you; and as the bride makes the joy of her betrothed, so you will bring joy to your God"**. [Isaiah 62 verses 4-5, Bible Louis Segond (translated into English from the original text)].

Ôté, The earth is the symbol of the bride of God who is herself the symbol of the people of God. Let's read this other text to strengthen our study: **"And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God".** [*Revelation 21 verses 2-3, King James Bible*].

Just as a fertile wife gives children to her husband, so also the earth gives birth for the Lord. Here is how this happens:

**"Just as the rain and the snow come down from the sky and do not return there unless they first water the earth, make it give birth, and cause it to sprout, so that it gives seed to the sower and bread to the eater, in the same way my word that goes out from my mouth will not return to me empty.**

*Rather, it will accomplish whatever I please, and it will succeed in the purpose for which I sent it".* [*Isaiah 55 verses 10-11, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

This text is also very interesting for our subject: **"The farmer plants God's message in people [The sower sows the word]. [...] Others are like the seed planted [sown] in the good ground.**

*They hear the teaching [word; message] and accept it. Then they grow and produce fruit [a crop] — sometimes thirty times more, sometimes sixty times more, and sometimes a hundred times more."* [*Mark 4 verses 14 and 20, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

It will be most judicious for us to add this to our reflection: **"Then He said, "The kingdom of God is like a man who throws seed on the ground; and he goes to bed at night and gets up every day, and [in the meantime] the seed sprouts and grows;**

**How [it does this], he does not know. The earth produces crops by itself; first the blade, then the head [of grain], then the mature grain in the head. But when the crop ripens, he immediately puts in the sickle [to reap], because [the time for] the harvest has come."** [*Mark 4 verses 26-29, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Just as a seed that is sown in the earth is transformed into a splendid plant, so it is with the Gospel which once heard grows in the heart (*therefore in the spirit*) of the one who received it.

This reality is the basis of the new birth in Jesus Christ, for it is the word of God that fecundates and gives life to a people for the Lord. Here is what we can read about it again:

**"In fact, even if you had 10,000 masters in Christ, you still do not have however fathers, since it is I who gave you life in Jesus Christ through the Gospel".** [*1 Corinthians 4 verse 15, Bible Segond 21 (translated into English from the original text)*].

Like a earth in which good seeds are sown, he who receives the Gospel in his heart has been sown, the goal being a renewal, a new spiritual birth. Here is how this spiritual reality is presented: **"Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except one be born anew, he cannot see the kingdom of God.**

*Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb, and be born?*

*Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except one be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.*

**That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit".** [*John 3 verses 3-6, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

The new birth is as real as the one in which we came out of the womb, except that it is spiritual and the seed that allows us to be begotten is the Gospel and not a sperm.

To sum up what we have just seen, I would say to you that the place where this new birth takes place is both our heart and the people of God. It is in our heart that the seed is sown and contained, but it is within the people of God that it will grow.

Hence the unity of the members of the people of God who form one body, of which Christ is the head [*1 Corinthians 12 verses 12-27*], [*Romans 11 verses 16-27*], [*Colossians 1 verses 13-18*].

The earth being the symbol of the people of God, that which comes forth from it or sprouts from it represents that which is sanctified. Here is what we read about it:

*"Let fall in showers, you heavens, from above, and let the skies rain down righteousness [the pure, spiritual, heaven-born possibilities that have their foundation in the holy being of God];*

**Let the earth open, and let them [skies and earth] sprout forth salvation, and let righteousness germinate and spring up [as plants do] together; I the Lord have created it".** [Isaiah 45 verse 8, *Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)*].

Let us also take this text into consideration: **"He grew up like a small plant [young plant; tender shoot; 11:1] before the Lord [him], like a root growing in a dry land [parched soil].**

*He had no special beauty or form [majesty] to make us notice him; there was nothing in his appearance to make us desire him".* [Isaiah 53 verse 2, *Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

Let's end with this other text: **"Then a Shoot (the Messiah) will spring from the stock of Jesse [David's father], And a Branch from his roots will bear fruit.**

*And the Spirit of the Lord will rest on Him — The Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and strength, The Spirit of knowledge and of the [reverential and obedient] fear of the Lord — And He will delight in the fear of the Lord, And He will not judge by what His eyes see, Nor make decisions by what His ears hear;*

**But with righteousness and justice He will judge the poor, And decide with fairness for the downtrodden of the earth;**

**And He shall strike the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips He shall slay the wicked".** [Isaiah 11 verses 1-4, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

All those things that come out of the earth are symbols that represent Christ. He is presented as coming out of the earth as a plant would. It is he who came to bring the Word of God and his salvation to his people and to humanity. The symbol of that which sprouts from the earth also represents the people of God.

Here is what we can read about it:

*"Thus saith the Lord that made and formed thee, thy helper from the womb: Fear not, O my servant Jacob, and thou most righteous whom I have chosen. For I will pour out waters upon the thirsty ground, and streams upon the dry land: I will pour out my spirit upon thy seed, and my blessing upon thy stock.*

*And they shall spring up among the herbs, as willows beside the running waters". [Isaiah 44 verses 2-4, Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition Bible (DRA)].*

Thus what comes out of the earth (*so, what grows or germinates*), represents a thing or a person that the Lord has consecrated.

This reality is reinforced by the symbol of the lamb's horns that this beast carries, because in reality only a lamb can carry lamb's horns. To understand these facts it is necessary to read this:

*"But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot" [1 Peter 1 verse 19, King James Bible].*

Here is a second text presenting this reality: *"The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world". [John 1 verse 29, King James Bible].*

The symbol of the lamb represents above all Jesus who had to give his life for us and acted as a docile lamb would. Here is what we can read about it: **"He was painfully abused, but he did not complain.**

*He was silent like a lamb being led to the butcher, as quiet as a sheep having its wool cut off. He was condemned to death without a fair trial. Who could have imagined what would happen to him? His life was taken away because of the sinful things my people had done". [Isaiah 53 verses 7-8, Contemporary English Version (CEV)].*

What is presented in this verse, as well as in this entire chapter of the prophet Isaiah, is a prophecy that foreshadowed the future sufferings of Jesus, him the son of God, the Christ.

To realize this we must read what we find in *[Acts 8 verses 26-40]*, and which speaks of this text of the prophet Isaiah.

Thus we see it, generally in the Bible the Symbol of the lamb is the one which symbolizes Jesus.

Nevertheless, it is important to note that the same symbols that represent Jesus are also those that are lent to his people. All those who make a covenant with him become one with him [*Hebrews 3 verse 14*], and inherit the same attributes and symbols as him.

Thus the symbol of the Lamb, which represents Jesus his people, also inherits it from him ? Here is what we can read about it: "*After this, the Lord appointed 70 other disciples [...] Get going! See, I am sending you out like lambs among wolves*". [*Luke 10 verses 1 and 3, International Standard Version Bible (ISV)*].

Let's complete with this other text: "**So when they had dined, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou Me more than these?" He said unto Him, "Yea, Lord;**

**Thou knowest that I love Thee."** **He said unto him, "Feed My lambs."** [*John 21 verse 15, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

This beast intrinsically carrying the symbol of the lamb and emerging from the earth thus symbolises a consecrated place.

Otherwise, my feeling is that we have made good, even very good progress on this theme of the bestial lamb.

We have already discovered several symbols of this most bizarre doomsday beast, but we won't stop there.

We will therefore immediately discover another symbol that qualifies this bestial lamb, it is that of the horn.

Here is what the Holy Book tells us about it: "*The shaggy male goat represents the king of Greece, and the large horn between his eyes represents the first king of the Greek Empire.*

**The four prominent horns that replaced the one large horn show that the Greek Empire will break into four kingdoms, but none as great as the first**". [*Daniel 8 verses 21-22, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

Let's complete with this text: "*And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne and the four living beings, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth*". [Revelation 5 verse 6, (21st Century King James Version Bible "KJ21")].

Let's finish with this text: "**Then I looked up, and saw four horns (powers)! So I asked the angel who was speaking with me, "What are these?" And he answered me, "These are the horns [the powerful Gentile nations] that have scattered Judah (the Southern Kingdom), Israel (the Northern Kingdom), and Jerusalem (capital city of Judah)."**

*Then the LORD showed me four craftsmen. I asked, "What are these [horns and craftsmen] coming to do?"*

*And he said, "These are the horns (powers) that have scattered Judah so that no man raised up his head [because of the suffering inflicted by the Gentile nations]."*

**But these craftsmen have come to terrify them *and* make them panic, and throw down the horns of the nations who have lifted up their horns against the land of Judah in order to scatter it."** [Zechariah 2 verses 1-4, Amplified Bible (AMP)].

The horn represents the power possessed by a kingdom or a person. Jesus is symbolised as a sacrificial lamb who has seven horns, which represents the almighty power he received through his divine sacrifice. God's people fully adhere to this definition of a horn representing a kingdom or nation, for Christ has made us His people a holy nation, a royal priesthood, a kingdom of priests.

The following text attests to this: "**But ye are an elect race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, that ye may show forth the excellencies of him who called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:**

**Who in time past were no people, but now are the people of God: who had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy".** [1 Peter 2 verses 9-10, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

Consider this other text as well: "[...] *For You were slain (sacrificed), and with Your blood You purchased people for God from every tribe and language and people and nation.*

**"You have made them to be a kingdom [of royal subjects] and priests to our God; and they will reign on the earth."** [Revelation 5 verses 9-10, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

Thus, a horn is a kingdom and a beast which carries several of them represents a union between several peoples.

Thus the bestial lamb, having two horns, therefore symbolizes a place where two very distinct peoples cohabit.

The various symbols that we have just discovered and which are attached to the bestial lamb with two horns which comes out of the earth therefore qualify it as being the people of God.

Nevertheless, cannot represent the faithful children of the Lord, it is therefore a spiritual movement which although being consecrated to the Lord is unfaithful to him as were the Pharisees.

Moreover, as this apocalyptic beast has two horns like that of a lamb, it is the symbol of two peoples living together in it. Although God's people is formed in Jesus Christ from the union of the Jewish people and Christians, here it cannot be the Jewish people involved Because in [Romans 11 verses 7-36] we find that God has reserved the reunification of the Jews with the Christians only as a last resort.

For a time the Jews were plunged by God into the "*hardening*", which enabled the selection process of a certain number of the Christians to be completed. They were still anointed, but for a time they were left in abeyance by God.

The Jews are already chosen and once the number of those conscripted from the Gentiles is complete, the hardening of the Jews will end and God's people will be united in Jesus Christ.

Since the reunification of Jews and Christians will only take place when all of the Christians from paganism have entered the Lord's sheep pen, the second people who form the second horn of the beast cannot therefore be the Jewish people!

So what we are left with is Christianity. This apocalyptic lamb has two horns and is therefore a symbol of two independent peoples, two Christian powers.



They are united to practice the same work, but are quite distinct in what they profess. It is true that once these bases have been laid, one might think that we just have to look at the structure of Christendom to find these two peoples who are united for the same work, while being very distinct entities professing doctrines who often oppose.

One of the links which represents such a unity in this century is ecumenism which unites the two great poles of Christianity, the Protestant religions and the Catholic Church.

But before we continue, it is important to note that as a Christian religion, the Catholic Church, although part of the ecumenical movement, cannot be the two-horned lamb, for it is *the beast that rises from the sea and has 10 horns and 7 heads* and it is these works that the two-horned lamb-like beast perpetuates.

I will not develop this reality, because I have already done it well in depth in chapter "*The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*". Now that this point has been made, let us return to our *sheep, um... to our lamb-like beast*.

As I told you, this two-horned beast is therefore made up of two peoples or very distinct philosophy, and since the Catholic Church is not one of the two, it is therefore a question of two Protestant philosophies. Their primary basis of unity is therefore not ecumenism, but Protestantism. This base intrinsically represents what they are.

Since Martin Luther created secession with the Catholic Church and became the father of Protestantism, from this initial movement there has been the emergence of two very distinct spiritual currents:

*Those who keep the Sabbath and those who reject it.*

Each of these movements has come, as we will see later, to transgress the word of God and has become one of the horns of the bestial lamb. Now these bases established, we will reinforce all that we have just seen by returning to two symbols of this text of [Revelation 13] which presents the origin of the beast with seven heads and ten horns, as well as that of the lamb bestial.

These are the symbols of the sea and that of the earth that it is about! These two beasts being both spiritual, nevertheless the symbols of the places which see them born (*appear*) allow us to understand the difference which exists between these two entities.

Let's start with the symbol of the sea. In the chapter entitled "*The indivisible unity of the deeds of the ten-horned and seven-headed leopard and the little horn*", we discovered that it is from this the place where the beast with seven heads and ten horns goes out.

We have also seen, Bible in hand, that the symbol of the sea is the one that represents the nations and is given as part of this prophecy to present the Roman people from which the Catholic Church was born.

*The land, from which the bestial lamb emerges, allows us to better understand its nature.*

*The land, from which emerges the bestial lamb, for its part, allows us to better understand its nature.*

As we have just seen, the earth is the symbol which represents the people of God, and not being able to symbolize the Jewish people, it is thus of Christendom that this entity had to come out.

In addition, the bestial lamb with two horns, appearing after the first beast – which I recall symbolizes the Catholic Church – and since there are only two branches in Christendom, the bestial lamb can therefore only be, as we have just seen, than Protestantism.

What makes this two-horned beast like a lamb what it is, is the earth from which it springs.

In *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of "the Eternal God" or of the "sun god"*", Catholicism was declared to be the only religion of the Roman Empire, then the domination was given to the Catholic Church over all of Christendom.

In doing so, as no other Christian religion had the right to quote the Catholic Church was thus the only one to fulfil the criterion of prophetic land that symbolises the people of God within Christianity.

Thus the earth from which the bestial lamb emerges was already iniquitous, and this is what contributed to perverting it from its birth (*creation*).

What I say is corroborated by historical facts, for the father of Protestantism, *Martin Luther* the great reformer, had Catholicism as his first basis of faith.

And it wasn't just a little, because he had come to the stage of a theologian professing Catholic doctrines. It should also be noted that it is thanks to Catholic laws that Protestants were able to acquire the right to exist and to teach their doctrine.

I present this reality to you in my book entitled *'Inquisitiô (The three angels' message), tome II. The reality of the attack of the little horn of Daniel 7 against the Law of God and the times of prophecy. Historical part'* in the chapter *"The muzzling of the faithful witness in order to establish the infamy of the mystery of iniquity"*.

Moreover, from the very beginnings of Protestantism, the great Protestant reformers agreed to continue to perpetuate the works of the Catholic religion, such as those consisting in rejecting the Sabbath.

I bring you the proofs of what I put forward, still in *volume II* of this book which I have just mentioned to you this time in the chapter entitled *"The vague dominical inheritance bequeathed to Christianity"*.

These points being recorded, we will be interested in another symbol which qualifies the bestial lamb, this one is sound, because it is a beast of the most bizarre and bloodthirsty and which speaks like a dragon. Have you ever wondered how can such a gentle animal as a lamb speak like a dragon?

To understand it, we must not lose sight of this old adage:

*"Tell me who your friends are and I'll tell you who you are!"*

*First of all it is important to note, if need be, that the dragon is a symbol of the devil [Revelation 12 verse 9].*

*Thus, given his most dubious company, this bestial lamb, therefore, practices the works of the devil, which makes him his servant.*

Let us return to this symbol of *"speaking like a dragon"*. What is presented here is important, because he who speaks as another person does the same actions as him, or works for him. Here is what we can read about this: **"But, as for me, my feet had almost stumbled;**

**My steps had nearly slipped, Because I was envious of the arrogant when I saw the prosperity of the wicked.**

*For they suffer no pain; their bodies are healthy and sleek. They are free of the burdens of life; they are not afflicted like others.*

*Thus pride adorns them as a necklace; violence clothes them as a robe. Out of such blindness comes sin; evil thoughts flood their hearts.*

*They scoff and spout their malice; from on high they utter threats. They set their mouths against the heavens, their tongues roam the earth.*

**[...] Had I thought, "I will speak as they do," I would have betrayed this generation of your children. [...] But those who are far from you perish; you destroy those unfaithful to you".** [*Psalm 73 verses 2-9, 15, 27, New American Bible (Revised Edition) (NABRE)*].

Let's complete with this second text: **"And thou shalt speak unto him and put words in his mouth; and I will be with thy mouth and with his mouth, and will teach you what ye shall do.**

**And he shall be thy spokesman unto the people; and he shall be, even he shall be to thee instead of a mouth, and thou shalt be to him instead of God".** [*Exodus 4 verses 15-16, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

The first text presents us with the one who speaks like a villain, being in reality a person who practices the same bad works as the latter. The second text, meanwhile, tells us that the one who speaks as if he were another person as doing the work of the latter, it is his representative.

This reality is what qualifies the bestial lamb, he speaks like the dragon and leads humanity to worship the first beast, which is the servant of the dragon. It is she who causes all those who adhere to the doctrine that this beast with seven heads and ten horns professes can receive the mark of the beast.

Thus, what it promulgates does not come from it, because it perpetuates the works of this other beast, which itself serves the dragon (*the demon*) and which gives it its power.

*The mark of the beast is therefore that given by the devil.*

The work that this bestial lamb must do teaches us a lot about who she is. To better imbue us with it, I invite you to reread this portion of our basic text, [*Revelation 13 verses 11-17*], which we have already read above:

**"[...] He exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence [when the two are together]. And he makes the earth and those who inhabit it worship the first beast [...]**

*And he deceives those [unconverted ones] who inhabit the earth [...]*  
**Telling those who inhabit the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded [fatally] by the sword and has come back to life".**

Before developing this portion of the text I would tell you that it is really very important to always interpret a prophetic text with the right tools, in this case through biblical prophetic symbols.

Here the term image which is used is the key. Nevertheless, it must be interpreted well.

First of all, by meeting this word, we immediately see a drawing, a photo or any representation of something.

Unfortunately, those who interpret this symbol in this way will err, for the symbol in the image here represents precepts of the teachings.

To deepen this prophetic reality I invite you to read the chapter entitled "*The modalities of the sealing of the two peoples (that of God and that of the beast)*".

Thus, the apocalyptic beast with two lambs horns is presented prophetically as having to distill the precepts and teaching of the beast with seven heads and ten horns, which itself derives from the devil.

The beast with seven heads and ten horns being the symbol which represents the papacy enthroned at the head of the Catholic Church, this message can therefore only be the one broadcast by Babylon, which we have seen is the symbol of all false doctrine leading to confusion.

This type of doctrine has as its center and reason for being the transgression of the word of God.

So, it was the doctrines of the first beast (*the Catholic Church*) that the bestial lamb (*Protestantism*) was to practice. We will immediately find out if this prophecy has also been realized.

To do this we must come back to the reality of the works that Catholicism should practice and to do this, we must reread this prophecy presenting it as the little horn:

*"And he shall speak words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High;*

**And he shall think to change the times and the law;** *And they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and half a time". [Daniel 7 verse 25, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

The purpose of the little horn is to change times and the law, this entity also being symbolized as the beast with seven heads and ten horns and being images representing the Catholic Church, so it is this same work as the bestial lamb also had to practice.

We are now going to check whether Protestantism has achieved this part of the prophecy. To do this we must first of all come back to the identity of the two horns of the bestial lamb.

I have already presented to you the situation relating to this lamb which is made up of two very distinct Christian entities, and which have very different premises of faith, one of the horns of this beast keeps the Sabbath and the other one rejects it.

The first stream of thought represents those who observe God's Holy Law and observe the Sabbath. Unfortunately, they have become unfaithful to the Lord by having established men's doctrines that contravene God's Word.

This is the case of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, which certainly keeps God's commandments, but violates His Word by its iniquitous doctrines. What we have already studied so far, as well as what we will study, demonstrate what I am saying.

There is also another Christian group, the Church of the living God, which keeps God's law, but continues to practise the paragraphs of the ceremonial law that Jesus abolished by his divine sacrifice.

By doing so they operate according to the same works presented in [Colossians 2 verses 16-23] so they cannot be accepted by the Lord.

In the chapter entitled "*The nonsense of the observance by modern-day Christians of the ancient Jewish holidays*", I demonstrate, Bible in hand, the nonsense of some of their doctrines.

The other stream of thought representing the other horn of this lamb are those who reject God's law and especially the Sabbath and who generally have Sunday as their day of worship.

Remember, it's the day of worship that the Catholic Church instituted to the detriment of God's Word.

This second horn is represented among others by Jehovah's Witnesses and the Evangelical Church etc.

In the chapters entitled "*The Sabbath and jet lag*" and "*Can the Sabbath day be swapped with another day?*" I have brought you the evidence that these two Christian religions reject the Sabbath.

The evangelical church, as we have seen, is also part of this horn which has established Catholic doctrines aimed at perverting the biblical reality of dreams, thus the basis of prophecy.

We have already seen what are the realities of the iniquitous works that Protestantism, under the prophetic guise of the bestial lamb with two horns, has to carry, but there is a crucial point to consider, in this matter, that is the positioning of Protestants, of all religions, in front of their acts.

To present this reality to you, I would say that the most appalling thing in life, in my opinion, is to act badly towards others and towards oneself without knowing it, as our sleepwalker did.

In the Bible we have a beautiful example of this reality in the person of the Pharisees. We find in [*Mark 7 verses 5-13*], that these men had come to tamper with the Word of God in order to make their religion more functional.

This type of iniquitous work which they practiced made of them children and servants of the devil [*John 8 verses 30-59*].

This reality, although obvious to us in their works, was not audible to them, because seeing their reactions when Jesus presented them as being children and servants of the devil who seeks to do his will. They were deeply shocked and outraged by what they had just heard.

With all that I have just presented, you understand, then, that no one needs to make the deliberate choice to serve the devil in order to become his servant or his child, who bears his mark.

To do so, you just have to reject the Lord (*his Word*). By doing so, reactions will follow actions!

For in this world there are only two masters who rule over mankind, God or Satan, by not taking a stand for God one becomes the property of the devil.

### 13 Literal materialization of the iniquitous union of the bestial lamb and the beast with seven heads and ten horns

In the previous chapter we were able to unravel, Bible in hand, the mystery of the identity of the apocalyptic beast which has two horns like that of a lamb, which I like to call the bestial lamb. Certainly many of you were surprised to discover that behind this symbol was the Protestantism that was hidden there.

We are now going to highlight facts that will allow us to better understand how Christianity came to become this abominable beast with two lamb's horns. To understand it, we must never lose sight of the reality that, however sanctified we may be, if we frequent of perverted people, idolaters or even infidels, they will inexorably end up making us lose our steadfastness.

The repercussion will be that we will gradually come to adhere to their iniquities [*1 Corinthian 15 verses 33*].

This is what happened to the wisest of men King Solomon [*1 Kings 3 verses 5-15*], who under the influence of foreign women ended up creating a temple to the glory of idols in front of Jerusalem the city saint of the Lord [*1 Kings 11 verses 1-9*].

As was the case with Solomon, what definitively perverts Protestantism and which made him this bestial lamb is his union with Catholicism through ecumenism.

First of all, it is important to understand what the term “*ecumenical*” means, in order to understand the scope of ecumenism.

*The word ecumenical is derived from the Latin “ecumenicus” which etymologically means “universal” in the sense of “the whole inhabited Earth”. The aim of the ecumenical movement in this century is to unite all Christian religions to form the “visible unity of Christians”.*



*The primary basis for this union of all religions and Christian streams of thought is to set aside differences of faith, in order to nurture love and unity for the flourishing of the greatest number.*

Before continuing I would like to make it clear that what ecumenism is basically advocating has biblical foundations. For this is how God's people was established in the time of Christ's Apostles.

This is what we discover in this text: **"Paul realized that some members of the high council were Sadducees and some were Pharisees, so he shouted, "Brothers, I am a Pharisee, as were my ancestors!**

*And I am on trial because my hope is in the resurrection of the dead!"* **This divided the council — the Pharisees against the Sadducees — for the Sadducees say there is no resurrection or angels or spirits, but the Pharisees believe in all of these.**

*So there was a great uproar. Some of the teachers of religious law who were Pharisees jumped up and began to argue forcefully.*

*"We see nothing wrong with him," they shouted. "Perhaps a spirit or an angel spoke to him". [Acts 23 verses 6-9, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)].*

Here we have a beautiful example of ecumenism where Jewish religions sat down together, despite their differences of faith and creed, in order to be able to deal with godly matters.

By doing so in itself ecumenism is not something that the Lord disapproves of. What the Lord forbids His people to do is to ally themselves with the infidels. His command is this:

**"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial?**

*Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of the living God; As God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; And I will be their God, and they shall be my people.*

**Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty". [2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-18, King James Bible].**

The Lord does not want His people to put themselves under foreign domination by allying themselves with the infidels. In the history of Christianity, the worst of the infidels has been presented under various names:

*The little horn, the unholy one, the enemy of God, the beast with ten horns and seven heads.*

*Throughout history one entity has endorsed all of these titles and that is the Catholic Church. I have already brought you the proof of what I have just put forward.*

The Lord forbids His people to unite with the infidels and by doing so, because of the works of iniquity that the Papacy has practised and is still practising, God's faithful people must not unite with the Catholic religion. However, this is what happened with the ecumenical movement, which in 1964 finally incorporated the Catholic Church into its ranks. Here is what we can read about it:

**"The word ecumenism refers to the effort of Christians to achieve institutional unity among the different churches and communities that make up the ecumenical movement today. [..]**

**Born at the turn of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries from the combination of several streams of thought, which the Catholic Church did not officially join until the Second Vatican Council (1964)". [From <https://eglise.catholique.fr/> à la partie: *Qu'est-ce que l'œcuménisme ?* (translated into English from the original text)].**

As far as the ecumenical movement is concerned, what has turned it into a lamb-like beast with two horns is the arrival of the Catholic Church, its newest and most iniquitous member. It is important to understand why the union of the various Protestant religions with the Catholic Church has transformed them into a creature that has the appearance of a lamb-like beast with two horns.

To do this, we have to revert to the text of [2 *Corinthians 6 verses 14-18*] which we've seen earlier and which forbids God's faithful people to unite themselves with infidels.

Above all it is important to note that there can be an exception to this prohibition, if the unbeliever repents, abandons his bad deeds, returns the goods or property of others that he had plundered and from now on chooses to walk a righteous path [*Ezekiel 33 verses 11, 14-16*], [*Proverbs 28 verse 13*].

Unfortunately, what we have just seen cannot be applied to the Catholic Church in this century, because it has never returned the property of the martyrs, especially those of the Jews and Christians observing the Sabbath, which it plundered over the centuries.

Nor has it repented of the evil it has done to them with impunity. I bring you more information in *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*The bloodthirsty legislative legacy*". Furthermore, this religion continues to violate God's Word by practising iniquitous doctrines, such as the worship of statues and it keeps Sunday in place of the Sabbath to the detriment of what God's Word has established.

See also *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of 'the Eternal God' or of the 'sun god'*".

Moreover, not long ago this religion has ratified that its dogma is above God's Word. I present this fact to you in the chapter entitled "*The obscure plans of the dominator of nations*".

Within the framework of ecumenism, in order for there to be a union between the Catholic Church and the Protestant religions, the Papacy would first have to show true repentance. In order to do so it must publicly acknowledge the crimes and the plundering that the Catholic Church has perpetrated with impunity over the centuries.

But this is not enough, because it is also necessary that the property of the martyrs, which has been plundered by the popes over the centuries, be restored to them. Especially in the case of the Jews and the Sabbath observers. Finally this religion must return to the doctrinal foundations which are centred around the Bible.

In order to do this Sunday as the day of divine worship must be rejected by the current pope and the latter must henceforth choose the Sabbath as the day of worship for all Catholics. And finally all statues and icons must be removed from all Catholic churches.

This is how the Catholic religion will be able to obtain the Lord's mercy for all of the abominations it has practised.

But you and I are aware that the changes that the Papacy would have to make, so that the Catholic Church could become a pure and zealous servant of the Lord, would mean this religion changing everything that makes it what it is. Moreover this repentance would empty the Vatican's coffers, causing the pope to lose all of the power conferred on him by these priceless riches, which are largely the fruits of the plundering of the martyrs.

But the Catholic Church is not undergoing a process of repentance. On the contrary, it continues to perpetrate the same iniquitous actions in new forms. I presented this reality to you in the chapter entitled "*New type of action from the iniquitous falsifier*". To continue, I would like to say to you that, to understand the nonsense of the union of Protestants with the Catholic Church, we must go back to the history and foundations of Protestantism instituted by Martin Luther.

It is important to understand that when we forget our history and our past, we are condemned to relive it and to suffer the setbacks. Doing so will inevitably lead us to commit the mistakes of our forefathers. In order to understand who Protestants are, we must never lose sight of who Martin Luther was and what he did.

This great reformer was not only a priest, but also a great Catholic theologian, who deserted the ranks of the papacy because of the abominations and violations of God's Word practised by that religion.

Through him and the reformers, a breach was created between the the Catholic Church, which was the dominant religion and God's faithful children. This gave rise to Protestantism. In order that our faith as Protestants might come into being and flourish, there were a multitude of martyrs who succumbed to the bloody sword of the papacy and its henchmen.

By allying themselves once again in this century with the Catholic Church, while this religion still has the blood of a multitude of martyrs on its hands and their iniquitously plundered possessions in its coffers, the Protestants are dishonouring all of their past martyrs, who gave their lives so that we can freely practise our faith.

Do you realise that if the Lord used the great reformers of the past to free us from the yoke of the iniquitous beast that is the Catholic Church it was with good reason?

During this century, through its deeds, past and present, the Catholic Church has certainly changed, but not in the sense of repentance. It has simply mutated to become another kind of beast.

But it always remains the same iniquitous entity and an infidel who, of its own free will, violates God's Word to establish its doctrines. How can you "Protestant" Christian people ally yourselves with this hideous beast that is the Catholic Church, forgetting that God delivered you from it at the price of the blood of the first Protestant Martyrs? Here is how the Lord presents those who return to things already proscribed and rejected:

*"For if, after they have escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein and overcome, the last state is become worse with them than the first. For it were better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after knowing it, to turn back from the holy commandment delivered unto them.*

**It has happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog turning to his own vomit again, and the sow that had washed to wallowing in the mire.** [2 Peter 2 verses 20-22, *American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

It is important to understand that by associating ourselves with a person or by keeping silent about the abominations we know to be practised, we become guilty before God just as much as that person. Here is what the Holy Book teaches us about this: **"But to the wicked God says: "What right have you to recite My statutes Or to take My covenant on your lips? "For you hate instruction and discipline and cast My words behind you [discarding them].**

**"When you see a thief, you are pleased with him and condone his behavior, and you associate with adulterers.**

*"You give your mouth to evil and your tongue frames deceit. "You sit and speak against your brother; You slander your own mother's son.*

*"These things you have done and I kept silent; You thought that I was just like you. Now I will reprimand and denounce you and state the case in order before your eyes". "Now consider this, you who forget God, Or I will tear you in pieces, and there will be no one to rescue [you]". [Psalms 50 verses 16-22, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].*

Let us finish with this: **“Is it then by being silent that you do justice? Is this how you judge, the son of man, with righteousness?”**. [*Psalms 58 verse 2, Bible Louis Segond (translated from French to English)*].

We cannot, under the pretext of brotherly unity, ally ourselves with the ungodly who violate God's Word, because by doing so we are guilty before God and He will strike us down for that. Since every action calls for a reaction, thus, in the text that follows the Lord leaves us instructions so that we know how to deal with those who offer us another gospel or who embellish the Gospel that the Lord has left us:

*"I marvel that ye are so quickly removing from him that called you in the grace of Christ unto a different gospel; Which is not another gospel: Only there are some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. But though we, or an angel from heaven, should preach unto you any gospel other than that which we preached unto you, let him be anathema.*

**As we have said before, so say I now again, If any man preacheth unto you any gospel other than that which ye received, let him be anathema. For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God ? Or am I striving to please men ? if I were still pleasing men, I should not be a servant of Christ".** [*Galatians 1 verses 6-9, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

The Catholic Church fits well within the framework of those who must be subjected to anathema, because it has established another gospel, which it presents, moreover, as being superior to God's Word.

In so doing, by its deeds, it must be anathemised and therefore set aside by the other Christian religions, here it is about the Protestants.

Christian streams of thought which, within the framework of ecumenism, have united with the Catholic Church to work hand in hand with it have placed themselves under a foreign yoke with this infidel, whose great master is the papacy. The repercussion is that by allying themselves with this unholy entity, these religions participate in its bad deeds. Here is how how this fact is presented in this text: *"Watch yourselves, so that you do not lose what we have accomplished together, but that you may receive a full and perfect reward [when He grants rewards to faithful believers]*.

**Anyone who runs on ahead and does not remain in the doctrine of Christ [that is, one who is not content with what He taught], does not have God ;**

*But the one who continues to remain in the teaching [of Christ does have God], he has both the Father and the Son. If anyone comes to you and does not bring this teaching [but diminishes or adds to the doctrine of Christ], do not receive or welcome him into your house, and do not give him a greeting or any encouragement ;*

**For the one who gives him a greeting [who encourages him or wishes him success, unwittingly] participates in his evil deeds".** [2 John verses 8-11, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

A first important point to note here is the following:

*In order to participate in the bad deeds of those who do not respect God's Word, there is no need to make a pact with them, or to subscribe to a written agreement where our signature would validate this union. In the spiritual world, it is enough to say "Hail" to participate in an individual's deeds.*

Before continuing it is important to understand what is presented here, because this text could lead to confusion, since in these lines the Lord does not say that we must not say "Hail" (*good morning, good afternoon, good evening*) to those who perform iniquitous acts.

If that were the case, it would mean that the Bible contradicts itself, because here is what God's Word asks of us: "**And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others ? do not even the publicans so ? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect**". [Matthew 5 verse 47-48, *King James Bible*].

To understand what this is all about, we need to consider the word "**Hail**" in its etymologically Greek form, which is spelled "**Chairo**". This word describes the extreme joy of meeting each other.

By using it we tell the person we are addressing that we want him to prosper and that we rejoice with him in this sense. The Lord wants us to say hello, even to brothers and sisters who perform iniquitous acts, as one would do to a pagan, but He does not want us to be able to fraternise with them.

To better understand the scope of what we have just seen, let us read this: "**When I wrote to you before I said not to mix with evil people.** *But when I said that I wasn't talking about unbelievers who live in sexual sin or are greedy cheats and thieves and idol worshipers.*

*For you can't live in this world without being with people like that.*

**What I meant was that you are not to keep company with anyone who claims to be a brother Christian but indulges in sexual sins, or is greedy, or is a swindler, or worships idols, or is a drunkard, or abusive. Don't even eat lunch with such a person.**

*It isn't our job to judge outsiders. But it certainly is our job to judge and deal strongly with those who are members of the church and who are sinning in these ways.*

**God alone is the Judge of those on the outside. But you yourselves must deal with this man and put him out of your church".** [1 Corinthians 5 verses 9-13, Living Bible (TLB)].

In the light of this text, we better understand the text of [2 John 1 verses 8-11] for what the Lord asks of us is not to fraternise with those of His people who are immoral and therefore ungodly, because their deeds are not in accordance with His Word.

The basis of the ecumenism that is established in this century in which Protestant religions are united by decree or participate without juridical ties in common works with the Catholic Church makes those who act in this way unfaithful before God.

As we have seen, to do this within the framework of ecumenism, it is not necessary to have signed a decree or a document that confirms one's alliance with the Catholic Church. The simple fact of agreeing to fraternise and work alongside the Papacy is enough for us to be able to participate in its iniquitous works. It is vital to understand that in the spiritual world our actions are as far-reaching as our writings, because there is no need to sign a contract on paper to ratify an agreement with the devil. This is what we discover in [Luke 4 verses 5-8].

Here all the devil asked of Jesus was that he would bow down to worship him and in return he would give him dominion over all earthly kingdoms. He did not ask him to confirm this action by a formal contract that he had to sign, because our mere act of disobedience to God is enough to give access to the devil inside us.



When we know that something is not good and we put it into practice, then we are an infidel before God, and the devil can possess us. This is what he did for Judas and we see in *[John 13 verses 21-30]* that as soon as he accepted the soaked bread, he confirmed his betrayal and the devil possessed him. This is what happens to those who prefer to practise their deeds to the detriment of the Lord's commandments and precepts. Here is what we can read about it:

*"The coming [of the lawless one, the antichrist] is through the activity and working of Satan and will be attended by great power and with all sorts of [pretended] miracles and signs and delusive marvels — [all of them] lying wonders — And by unlimited seduction to evil and with all wicked deception for those who are perishing (going to perdition) because they did not welcome the Truth but refused to love it that they might be saved.*

**Therefore God sends upon them a misleading influence, a working of error and a strong delusion to make them believe what is false, In order that all may be judged and condemned who did not believe in [who refused to adhere to, trust in, and rely on] the Truth, but [instead] took pleasure in unrighteousness".** *[2 Thessalonians 2 verses 9-12, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC) ]*.

The unholy entity mentioned here, who is supported by the power of the devil, is none other than the Papacy sitting at the head of the Catholic religion. I have given you my assessment that corroborates my statements in several chapters of this book.

Therefore, all those within the framework of ecumenism who have united or who are going to unite with the Catholic Church, that is to say with the pope, either through writings or just by signing any agreement prior to any implementation, will be considered by the Lord as not loving the truth.

Thenceforth, as we have already seen, will receive a **“power (spirit) of deception”** that causing them to consider error as being the truth.

Thus, those whose deeds do not comply with what the Lord asks are in communion with **the beast with 10 horns and 7 heads (the Catholic Church)** and will inherit all of its sins and iniquitous deeds. We do not always have a clear vision of how the sins of others with whom we unite can affect us.

To understand this, it is important to consider the text of [*Matthew 23 verses 29-39*], which teaches us, that as was the case of the scribes and the Pharisees whoever abandons the divine precepts, to practice the doctrines of man, so the doctrines of demon, become guilty of the blood of all the martyrs that the earth to bear.

Likewise, all religions that unite with the Catholic Church to work alongside it, despite the fact that it has not repented of these crimes and violations of God's Word, will inherit all of the crimes and abominations that it has perpetrated since its creation.

In addition to all that we have just seen, in order to understand how well the ecumenical unity of Christians, in this century, has fulfilled the prophecy that predicted the coming of this apocalyptic beast, it is important to consider what the lamb-like beast with two horns had to do [*Revelation 13 verses 11-12, 15*].

This work that the apocalyptic lamb-like beast with two horns was supposed to accomplish was brought about by Christianity and especially the Protestants as a result of their participation in ecumenism. Before discussing the truth of what lies behind these lines, which highlight the work of the Protestants who, through their commitment to ecumenism, came to glorify the Papacy, let us pause, because I am going to tell you a little story:

*We are going to go to a small French village in the Middle Ages where, for some time an incomprehensible wind of fear had been blowing, ever since sheep and people had been discovered there with their throats cut!*

*The beast that carried out these horrific attacks slit its victims' throats, but did not eat them. The investigators had no real leads, as this beast must have had relatively powerful jaws to be able to wreak such carnage.*

*But one day one of the villagers having got lost in the forest ended up completely by chance next to an isolated hut on the edge of a wood and he saw with a perplexed eye that the hut's owner had a hyena which he kept in a cage. Upon closer inspection, he realised that the shape and size of the hyena's jaw were the same as that of the dreaded beast.*

*He left thinking that he was not seen by the owner and he mobilised the entire town so that the beast could be killed on the spot. But what he did not know was that, from inside his thatched hut, the master of the house had noiselessly watched his visitor's tête-à-tête with his hyena.*

*So the whole village arrived, torches and pitchforks in hand, to celebrate putting the BEAST to death. They presented all of the grievances they had against the owner of the place and his monster. But they were all disconcerted, not by the monster's fury, but by something the owner said.*

*He said to them, "Why do you want to condemn an innocent beast just because of its features? My beast may be ugly, but it is as gentle as a lamb".*

*He said to them again : "This is what I propose to you. Do him no harm, and tonight lock a young lamb in its cage and tomorrow morning you will find that this mass of muscles is nothing but a big teddy bear. And if it touches the lamb I will take full responsibility for its crimes!"*

*So it was done, just as agreed! So the lamb was introduced as a room mate into the beast's den and the whole village was ready to skin the beast alive and hang its master from the highest tree in the forest. But in the early morning, to everyone's surprise they all saw that the lamb was not only alive, but that it was sleeping peacefully huddled in the warmth of the beast's paws.*

*The villagers went away ashamed and confused that they had almost committed a terrible injustice. But the reality was far more frightening than everyone had assumed, because a wild beast that kills does so out of an instinct for survival or for food. Whereas a beast trained to kill is far more dangerous, because it does not kill for itself but on command.*

*The truth was that in order to get rid of his enemies, this man sent his beast either to kill them or to ruin them by killing their flocks. As long as the formal order to kill was not given the beast was as gentle as a lamb, but once conditioned it killed accurately and mercilessly.*

*So, without knowing it, these people had just given this bloodthirsty killer's deeds (here I am talking about the master and not the beast) durability and tranquility.*

*The Papacy represents the master of the beast, for it was under its orders that the inquisitors and crusaders tortured and killed countless Christians, whose only crime was choosing to be entirely faithful to God's Word while rejecting Catholic dogma.*

*Due to its past as a bloodthirsty killer, the Catholic Church alone could not restore its reputation as a bloodthirsty she-wolf.*

*Thus, just as it was with the beast in our story, this religion used the naivety of those who condemned it and incriminated its works (its beast), to sneakily acquire a new fame.*

*It was by agreeing to unite with the Papacy through ecumenism that Protestant Christians helped to animate the image of the beast and give it life. For their fame as descendants of Martin Luther and the great reformers, some of whom like Hus and Jerome paid for their faith with their lives, had until then given the Protestants the image of the last bulwark against the iniquitous deeds of the Papacy.*

*By agreeing to unite with the Catholic Church, the Protestants gave it a second wind and permanence. By doing so and by uniting with the Papacy, the Protestants projected a strong image to the world and presented the Catholic Church as now worthy of praise. While like the beast the blood of the innocent victims is still crying out against it from their graves.*

*For under the cover of faith it continues to practise these abominations by transgressing God's Word. Thus like the lamb-like with two horns, thanks to ecumenism the Protestants lead the world in worshipping the Pope.*

*So as had been prophesied, the mortal wounds of the 10-headed, 7-horned beast were to heal and the world (those living without God) were to worship him. This is exactly what is happening to the which papacy now seems to have been healed and is now more powerful than ever, and has the world at these feet!*

Now that these points have been noted, let us continue our study by looking now at the deeds of the horns of the lamb-like apocalyptic beast. Above all, it is important to understand that for each of the horns of the bestial lamb the reason for its existence is different. For the horn that observes the Sabbath, the most powerful representative is the Seventh-day Adventist Church. It has not signed the covenant of ecumenism, but works for this entity as a spiritual consultant.

Nevertheless because of its position even though it is not legally bound to the Papacy this religion works alongside it.

Therefore, the repercussions are that it participates in the sins of the Papacy and its henchmen. *This religion works within ecumenism in a devious way, because it wants to have its cake and eat it.* Through one of its representatives, Pastor Daniel Milard, the Adventist Church has revealed its objectives regarding its affiliation with ecumenism.

In the video "*Adventism and Ecumenism, right of reply*", which was put online on the *10th of July, 2020* on the *YouTube channel "Espérance TV Martinique"*, this pastor acknowledges that some of the precepts of ecumenism are not good and that is why the Adventist religion did not sign the ecumenical charter. It also recognises that its denomination uses ecumenism to forge powerful alliances and to ensure its continued existence as a Christian religion.

This allows the Adventist dogma to no longer be seen as a sect, which gives it more power with the governing authorities managing nations.

In order to join the ecumenical movement, Pastor *Daniel Milard* says that the Adventist Church agreed to change its logo which represented three angels, thus the message of the three angels of the apocalypse. And we understand this gesture, because in part this message denounces the iniquitous works of the Catholic Church.

By doing so the Adventist Church could not afford to bite the hand of its master, the Papacy, which feeds it. This pastor goes so far as to establish that all Adventists are in fact Catholics.

All this inspired me: *“Well... the virgin finally dropped her panties for the powerful dominator...”*.

It should be noted that Pastor Daniel Milard describes the position of the Adventist Church as that of an occasional member of the ecumenical movement, but that it retains the right to withdraw from this organisation, in the case where... But, unfortunately for the Adventists, every action generates a reaction.

Based on the Adventist church's deeds that I have just discussed, we must never lose sight of the fact that Satan always claims his due for every service rendered, because he continues to act just as he attempted to do unsuccessfully with Jesus.

First of all, the devil proposes to give more power to the consecrated men of God's people.

In the case of the Adventist Church, it acts through its human agents, in this case, the Catholic Church. And he has the power to do so, because the whole world is under his dominion [*1 John 5 verse 19*].

However, there is always a fatal price to pay for this for those who subscribe to such an offer willingly or unwillingly become the devil's servants and children. This was the case for the Pharisees, who, in order to be more brilliant, violated God's Word and by their actions became the devil's children and servants.

Such acts will always end in bewilderment and no longer being considered as one of God's faithful servants. In Saul's case, his disobedience to divine guidance prevented him from being anointed as king and exposed him to being possessed by an unclean spirit (*a demon*) [*1 Samuel 15*], [*1 Samuel 16 verse 14*].

As for the Adventist Church, here is the image I have of it:

*Imagine a dam designed to hold back the waters of a great river and that for a certain period of time a tree, which had been uprooted and fallen into the water ended up pounding the dam at several points.*

*By the time the authorities realised this, the dam had developed minute cracks which, little by little, eventually led to leaks. So one "beautiful day" the power of the water overcame the dam. The end result was that in an instant and in the blink of an eye the valley that the dam overlooked was flooded, leading to the death of all of the inhabitants in the area, both animals and human beings.*

By choosing to work hand in hand and alongside the infidel, that is the Catholic Church, the Adventist Church allowed breaches in its faith to occur. The repercussions are that its flock have become bewildered leading to practices which are not in accordance with God's Word. I show you the fruits of this religion's errant ways in the *volume IV* of this book.

By choosing to work alongside the Papacy, the Adventist religion has lost its soul and sold itself to the devil and like the dam, the end result will be the eternal death of a multitude of its members.

The only safeguard left for this religion is to reform its ways, and to do so, I invite all Seventh-day Adventists to read my book which I have just quoted.

There you are, we are finished with the first horn of the bestial lamb. As for its other horn, in order to fully understand the reason for its existence, we must return to the practices that the first beast (*the Catholic Church*) put in place and that the two-horned lamb continues to perpetrate for a certain period of time.

Therefore these iniquitous deeds don't begin at the end of time, since we are told that the bestial lamb will perform the same deeds as the first beast (*the Catholic Church*). This implies that it will also reject God's law and lead men to do the same.

The best known of the Christian religions that work in this way is the Evangelical Church. To tell you about them, I would like to mention that I had the opportunity of meeting them and I was struck by their devotion to God. In their services of worship, like David, they dance fervently for the Lord.

While I was in their temple, I was amazed to see that many of the women are convinced that one should be veiled during prayer according to what is written in [1 Corinthians 11 verses 3-16].

Within their walls, I have seen many things that glorify God and one of the things I particularly like is that they usually fast once a week. According to what is written in [Matthew 17 verse 21] [Daniel 10] this is a token of great victory. In other evangelical churches, I have seen that the ministry of the prophets has been restored and that dreams have a primordial place within these assemblies.

Unfortunately, the basis that this church has established for interpreting their dreams as well as the modalities instituted for handling the ministry of the prophets is generally anti-biblical.

To find out, read the chapter *"The reality of the false prophet who is at the service of the apocalyptic beast, servant of the demon"*.

I also attended a ceremony where Evangelical Pentecostal Christians were summoning the Holy Spirit to come down amongst them as at Pentecost and for this they practise the laying on of hands.

I met young evangelical women who were so pure and chaste that for them kissing a man is as bad as stealing. They are saving themselves for marriage. This is true both for those who have been virgins since birth and for those who were brought up in the world, before knowing Christ and had experienced sexuality:

*They have regained their virginity of heart by deciding to live a life of sexual abstinence helped by the Spirit of God and the Gospel. Of all the Christian women I have met, the sisters of the Evangelical Church are the ones who, in my opinion, best represent the image of the bride described in [Proverbs 31 verses 10-31].*

In other evangelical assemblies, healings were done in the name of Jesus Christ and this is normal since they apply the two precepts allowing it and which we find in [James 5 verses 14-15], [Matthew 17 verses 21].

Some claim to be able to perform miracles in the name of Jesus Christ and some cast out devils in His name. Many consider themselves to be prophets, etc.



I love being in these evangelical temples, as well as being with the brothers and sisters who are there. However, concerning them, I was saddened by a disastrous thought that bothered me.

I realised that, in spite of all that the evangelical brothers and sisters were doing, in the end, they were like those described in the text of [*Matthew 7 verses 21-23*], for they were committing the iniquity which is sin and which is the transgression of God's law.

By rejecting the law and especially the Sabbath all of these evangelicals have made themselves unfit for salvation. But know this, my beloved evangelical brothers and sisters, if you do not repent and take a stand for the Lord and for His holy law and especially for the Sabbath, you will be rejected on the great day when Jesus returns.

And this in spite of the fact that you have worked mightily for God, through the Holy Spirit, in the name of our Lord Jesus.

To all of you, evangelical Christians and Christians of other denominations, who have so far violated the Lord's holy Sabbath, repent and change your ways before it is too late.

As we already know, we are called to freedom in Christ, which means that we are free from Sunday to Friday to choose the day of worship we want, but we must also observe the Sabbath.

As God's law is inside us, through the work of the Holy Spirit, we are called upon to be faithful to the Lord's commandments, not to be justified or saved by the law, but because of the fact that we must give allegiance to God and be obedient to Him. You cannot claim to love God and reject His Word in order to observe the doctrines of men. It is time to choose to serve the Lord, not according to our intelligence or the wisdom of the world, but according to His Word.

Today the Lord God wants those who say they love Him and desire to serve Him to be obedient.

To you who do not observe the Sabbath, because you believe that you are no longer under the law and that all days are equal, do not let the great conjurer, the devil, deceive you any longer. Like Pinocchio, free yourself from the strings by which the devil, the great puppeteer, is controlling you because of your violations of God's Word.

It is time for a true awakening amongst those who claim the name of the great shepherd of Nazareth whilst violating the Sabbath.

By having encouraged these Christians to reject the Sabbath, Satan is ensuring that they disqualify themselves from being a holy people.

We must never lose sight of the fact that the chosen ones whom Jesus Christ will come to seek have God's law [*Revelation 12 verse 17*] with which they will have to judge men and angels (*especially the fallen, including Satan and his seed*) [*1 Corinthians 6 verses 2-3*].

Finally, I would like to tell you that the good deeds we do are not intended to save us, neither are God's precepts and His law that we put into practice, because we are saved by grace in Jesus Christ.

Nevertheless we are called upon by faith to do good works [*Ephesians 2 verses 8-10*], [*James 2 verses 14-26*] and to keep God's commandments because we love Him. To do otherwise would be to act like a liar [*1 John 2 verses 3-4*], [*John 15 verses 10-12*], [*1 John 3 verses 24*].

On the other hand, those who do not do good deeds show that their faith is in vain and that God's love does not dwell in them [*1 John 3 verses 11-19*].

Those who violate God's Word dishonour Him and are separated from Him [*Isaiah 59 verses 1-3*].

On this day, while the door of God's grace is still open to you, the Lord presents you with a choice between two solutions:

*Serve him faithfully, keeping the precepts of his law of love and observe his holy Sabbath in order to restore to him the honour due to him as the creator of all things, or continue your little daily routine by rejecting God's law and especially His holy Sabbath and receive the mark of the beast on your forehead or on your hand.*

For those of you who have strayed so far, you need to do two things so that the spirit of bewilderment that impelled you and made you believe the lie may disappear. The first step is to submit to God and resist the devil so that you may have victory over all of the powers of darkness [*James 4 verses 7-10*].

Thus, the first step to being victorious is to take a stand for the Lord against all odds.

Then we must become aware of the nothingness of our life away from him. The next step is to resist the devil, but not passively, for we must resist to the point of blood [*Hebrews 12 verse 4*], so go beyond our impulses, accept to be in need of those things that have become our masters and that the devil uses to hold us captive.

For victory to be obtained against the devil, it would be desirable, if health permits, to fast, for some demons are only defeated by this means [*Matthew 17 verse 21*].

The second step consists of repenting for all of the time that you strayed far from the Lord by thinking of serving Him and by asking Him, in the name of His son Jesus, for forgiveness for the wrong path that you have followed [*1 John 1 verse 7 to 1 John 2 verse 2*].

Finally, I would like to tell you that the first blueprint for the reform of God's people, regardless of the religion concerned, is to withdraw from any covenant where transgressors of God's Word are found.

For as we have seen, by binding ourselves to the infidels, we inherit their sins! Since, as we have seen, the most iniquitous of those who do this is the Catholic Church, you must disassociate yourselves from every covenant in which this religion is present.

The ecumenical union having allied itself with the Papacy, as the Lord's faithful people, you must withdraw from its ranks.

From now on we must no longer associate ourselves with those who commit the iniquity which, as we have seen, is the sin which is the violation of God's Law.

Now the time has come where you must choose to serve the Lord or the devil and no longer veer to the left or the right like a bell in a church steeple. You must take a stand for the Lord, not only by rejecting every doctrine that transgresses His Word, but also every place that, while claiming God's name, flouts the truth.

In order for you to be able, in an efficient way, to leave any place which will have chosen to continue to transgress the word of God, the Holy Spirit has inspired me to bring you the bases of reflection going in this direction, in the *volume V* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Biblical modalities of the exit of the faithful people of God from Babylon*".

## 14 The reality of the false prophet who is at the service of the apocalyptic beast, servant of the demon

To begin with, I would say to you that this chapter is an extension of the studies that I have already presented to you in the preceding chapters as well as in the *volume III* of this book.

In his first chapters of this book which you have in hand, as well as in this other work which I have just notified you of, I have particularly presented to you the literal realization of the attacks which the demon to carry, through the centuries, against the prophecy and to do this, he powerfully used his iniquitous servant, the little horn (*the Catholic Church*) to achieve this work. Then the bestial lamb (*Protestantism*) took over the Catholic doctrines, this reality we have just discovered.

In this chapter we will discover another entity that works on this same basis. To do this let's read this: "*After these things I heard as it were a great voice of a great multitude in heaven, saying, Hallelujah;*

**Salvation, and glory, and power, belong to our God: For true and righteous are his judgments; for he hath judged the great harlot, her that corrupted the earth with her fornication, and he hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.**

[...] *And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunders, saying, Hallelujah: for the Lord our God, the Almighty, reigneth. Let us rejoice and be exceeding glad, and let us give the glory unto him:*

**For the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready. And it was given unto her that she should array herself in fine linen, bright and pure: for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints. And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they that are bidden to the marriage supper of the Lamb.**

*And he saith unto me, These are true words of God.*

*And I fell down before his feet to worship him. And he saith unto me, See thou do it not: I am a fellow-servant with thee and with thy brethren that hold the testimony of Jesus: **Worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.** And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought the signs in his sight, wherewith he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast and them that worshipped his image:*

**They two were cast alive into the lake of fire that burneth with brimstone"** [Revelation 19 verses 1-2, 6-10, 20, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

First of all, I would tell you that by taking the time to analyze this text, my first observation is that we find there the bases of the messages of the three apocalyptic angels [Revelation 14 verses 6-13].

There are presented, among other things, the glory and the reign of the Lord which are materialized in the message presented by the first angel. Regarding the second angel, here it is the message about the fall of Babylon that is brought. In addition we discover additional elements, such as the presence of the Lamb (*Jesus Christ*) and at his side his bride who symbolizes the people of God.

In this text we also learn that the glory to be given to the Lord is linked to the testimony of Jesus proclaimed by the people of God. Now with these basics laid we can look at the symbol of the false prophet that is presented in this text. To begin with, I would say that what qualifies a person as such is very misunderstood by most people.

The objective of this chapter is to bring you some light on this subject, and the first base that we are going to study is the one that qualifies the prophets, because then we will be able to better understand what a false prophet is or at least what makes him recognized. The first point that we are going to study is one of those that our basic text presents to us and that we are going to review.

Nevertheless, for a more efficient study, we will discover it in different versions. Here is the first one: "*And I fell down before his feet to worship him. And he saith unto me, See thou do it not: I am a fellow-servant with thee and with thy brethren that hold the testimony of Jesus: worship God:*

**"For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy".** [Revelation 19 verse 10, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

Let's complete with this second version: **"[...] For the truth that Jesus revealed is what inspires the prophets".** [Revelation 19 verse 10, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)].

Let's finish with this third version: *"So I get on my knees at the feet of the angel to worship him. But he said to me: "Be careful, don't do that! I am a servant like you and like your brothers and your sisters who are the witnesses of Jesus. It is God that you must worship".*

**Yes, to be a witness of Jesus is to announce that the prophets have spoken the truth".** [Revelation 19 verse 10, Bible Parole de Vie (translated into English from the original text)].

In this text of the apocalypse, seen in various versions, we see that just as Jesus did during his earthly life, here again his testimony is linked to the glory which must be brought to God, and to him alone.

Further, we have found that it is the servants of God – here presented as the brothers of the apostle Paul – who have (*in other words, observe*) the testimony of Jesus. In order to understand who the angel is talking about, I invite you to read this text:

*"And he saith unto me, See thou do it not: I am a fellow-servant with thee and with thy brethren the prophets, and with them that keep the words of this book: worship God".* [Revelation 22 verse 9, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

It is therefore of prophets that are mentioned in the text above, they are the ones in charge of the testimony of Jesus. Thus, by making the synthesis of what all that we have just discovered we understand that the *"testimony of Jesus"*, which is also to call *"the Spirit of prophecy"* materializes by the fact that Christ gives to the prophet of the revelations. Furthermore, the term *"Spirit of Prophecy"* presents the work of the Holy Spirit taking new revelations from the Lord to reveal them to God's people, more precisely to His prophets.

Here is what we can read about it: **"For no prophecy recorded in Scripture was ever thought up by the prophet himself.**

**It was the Holy Spirit within these godly men who gave them true messages from God".** [2 Peter 1 verses 20-21, *Living Bible (TLB)*].

We discover here that it is the Holy Spirit who inspires men with prophetic messages. As these men are those appointed by the Holy Spirit to bring prophecies, they are therefore prophets (*or prophetesses*).

Apart from that, for a better understanding of the bases of the prophecy, which is managed by the Spirit of God, it is advisable to also read this most important text: **"I [still] have many more things to say to you, but they are too much for you [you cannot bear them] now. But when the Spirit of truth [the Helper; see 16:7] comes, he will lead [guide] you into all truth. He will not speak his own words [from his own authority;**

**From himself], but he will speak only what he hears [from the Father], and he will tell [announce/declare to] you what is to come.** *The Spirit of truth will bring glory to [glorify; honor] me, because he will take what I have to say [is mine] and tell [announce; declare] it to you. All that the Father has is mine.*

*That is why I said that the Spirit will take what I have to say [what is mine] and tell [announce; declare] it to you".* [John 16 verses 12-15, *Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

Here the foundations of the testimony of Jesus were laid. Before developing what is in this text, we must not lose sight of the fact that during his pilgrimage on this earth, bringing the Word of his Father to men, more precisely to his elect, was the very essence of his testimony.

Although the term testimony is not clearly presented in these verses, we understand that we are in the same context and it is the Holy Spirit who takes over the mission which was that of Jesus, when he was on earth, consisting to present the word of the Lord to the people of God. Nevertheless, although these words are from God the Father and the Spirit of God is their repository, they are nevertheless presented as being from Jesus, so it is his testimony that is involved.

In order to fully understand the scope of this testimony which comes to us from Jesus and especially how it manifests and is formed, we have precious clues in this text.

We are told that since the people of God – to whom Jesus is speaking at this point in time – were not able to master (*bear them*) his words, it was entrusted to the Holy Spirit to reveal them later. His mission in this matter was therefore to take the new revelations of Jesus – present here as what is his – in order to bring them to us.

These Revelations Jesus himself holds them from his Father, but he is their guarantor. In speaking of the testimony of Jesus, therefore, we are referring to the new revelations that God makes, in Jesus and through the Holy Spirit, to his people. Now that we have mastered what the “*testimony of Jesus*” is also called “*the Spirit of prophecy*”, we are going to discover how it materializes concretely.

To do this let's read this: "***And he said, Hear now my words: If there be a prophet among you, I the LORD will make myself known unto him in a vision, and will speak unto him in a dream***". [*Numbers 12 verse 6, King James Bible*].

The basis of the gift of prophecy are dreams and visions, they are the means by which the Lord has established that he speaks to his prophets, but also to humanity. This reality is clearly presented in this text: "**God does speak, sometimes one way, sometimes another, but people do not pay attention to it.**

**In a dream, in a vision in the night, when people are falling into a deep sleep, while they slumber on their beds, he whispers a revelation into people's ears, and he confirms his warnings to them, in order to turn a man from his course of action and to suppress a person's pride. He spares his life from the pit. He spares his life from crossing the stream of death**". [*Job 33 verses 14-18, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

The Lord establishes a dialogue with human beings, through dreams and visions, the objective being to guide us, to give us new directives, he also uses them to divert us from our bad ways and through them he preserves our lives. Apart from that, the Lord has a privileged relationship with the prophets, therefore those who have the gift of prophecy, to whom he reveals in a very special way. To find out, let's read this: "**Surely the Lord God will do nothing, unless He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets**". [*Amos 3 verse 7, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].



What we have just read is important! Are you aware of the power that the Lord has placed in the hands of the prophets? He, the Almighty, he the Alfa and the Omega, he before whom no one can stand, has subordinated his capacity to act to the message he addresses to his prophets. *It sounds incredible! He doesn't do anything until he has presented them with his plans.*

Have you taken the scope of this text? Certainly, have you read it before, but without having analyzed what it really covers. Here we learn that the Almighty who can by thought create or destroy all things, imposed on himself a constraint, that of revealing, before acting, to mortal human beings, born in sin, therefore fallible, his plans. By doing so, he allows his people, through the prophets, to participate in his work or in his decision.

He thereby gives them the possibility of interceding for the unrepentant. What power! Unfortunately, we are not really aware of it. The destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah is however a convincing example [*Genesis 18 verses 16-33*], [*Genesis 19 verses 1-29*].

Here, while by the abominable action of their inhabitants these cities were to be destroyed and although having no master above him – for He is the Almighty – the Lord restricts himself and subordinates his action to what 'Abraham asks him.

It is the same for the story of the golden calf [*Exodus 32*].

This people had become so abominable in the eyes of the Lord that when he addresses Moses he presents them not as his own people, to him the Lord, but as Moses'.

While he the Almighty had made the decision to destroy them all, he presents his plans to Moses before acting and the latter intercedes for the people and the Lord listens to his voice.

He will strike them, of course, but they were not totally wiped out. The prophets are therefore the lightning rods between God and men and what enables them to act are the revelations they receive from the Lord. These revelations are also intended to protect us from our enemies, this is what we discover in [*2 Kings 6 verses 8-23*].

Here, the king of Syria aimed to destroy the people of God. To do this, he had made plans to surprise and annihilate them.

However, this was in vain, for the Lord had revealed this monarch's battle plans to the Prophet Elysee before he could carry them out.

We also discover in [1 Corinthians 14 verses 24-25], that thanks to the revelations that the prophets receive the people of God are victorious over the enemies who have come surreptitiously to harm them. It is an enormous power that the Lord gives to his prophets, thanks to these directives intended to present the plans of the enemies of the people of God and to anticipate them he brings the victory to the children of God and that in the name of the Lord and by the power of his Spirit.

Going back to the basis of prophecy, I would tell you that generally when we read the prophecies that the Bible prophets have left us, there is seldom mention of dreams and visions as the mode of dialogue through which the Lord speaks to them.

Nevertheless as we know that the Lord does not lie and that there is not the slightest change in him [Numbers 23 verse 19], [Malachi 3 verse 6], [James 1 verse 17], we therefore have the assurance that in accordance with [Numbers 12 verse 6], that it is in dreams and visions that he speaks to these prophets and prophetess.

Often, in order to make the connection between either the dreams or the visions that the Lord gives to one of these prophets as the basis of the prophetic message intended for his people, we must be attentive. Here is a concrete example of this reality:

**"Then the word of the Lord came to me, saying, "Son of man, what is this proverb that you have in the land of Israel, saying, 'The days are long and every vision fails'? Therefore tell them, 'Thus says the Lord God, "I will put an end to this proverb, and they will no longer use it as a proverb in Israel." But say to them, "The days draw near as well as the fulfillment of every vision.**

**For there will no longer be any false and empty vision or flattering divination within the house of Israel. For I the Lord will speak, and whatever word I speak will be accomplished.**

*It will no longer be delayed, for in your days, O rebellious house, I will speak the word and I will fulfill it," says the Lord God."*

**Again the word of the Lord came to me, saying, "Son of man, behold, the house of Israel is saying, 'The vision that Ezekiel sees is for many years from now, and he prophesies of the times that are far off.'**

*Therefore say to them, 'Thus says the Lord God, "None of My words will be delayed any longer. Whatever word I speak will be fulfilled completely,"' says the Lord God". [Ezekiel 12 verses 21-28, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

In this text the Lord uses Ezekiel to restore their place to the visions he gave to his people, who had come to despise them.

At the beginning of the text the Lord specifies that henceforth He will realize every vision that He has given, and to reaffirm this reality, he says that He will carry out the word that He has spoken. In doing so, God presents here the visions that He gives as being His Word.

Furthermore, later in this text the parallel is drawn between what Ezekiel saw and the word of God which will have to be carried out.

Thus, when in these writings he says that God spoke to him and that he presents in images what he has received, it is among other things in vision that he has them. This reality is corroborated by the text of [Numbers 12 verses 6-8], which teaches us that it is in a dream or in a vision that the Lord speaks to these prophets.

However, it is only with the fulfillment of the prophet's proclamation that it can be noted that the Lord has spoken to him. Let's review how this reality is presented:

*"And if thou say in thine heart, How shall we know the word which the LORD hath not spoken? When a prophet speaketh in the name of the LORD, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the LORD hath not spoken, but the prophet hath spoken it presumptuously [...]" [Deuteronomy 18 verses 21-22, King James Bible].*

Thus, for a prophet to be anointed as such, the revelation received, either in a dream or in a vision, must have been fulfilled. Now that we have discovered what qualifies a prophet, let's tackle what makes a false prophet recognized and to do this let's continue our study by going back to our basic text of [Revelation 19 verses 1-2, 6-10, 20].

In this text, we must note an important point, which is symbolized by the fact that it is the false prophet who works wonders and seduces those who receive the mark of the beast.

This same work is also set up by the beast which has horns like that of a lamb (*the bestial lamb*) [Revelation 13 verses 11-17].

These two entities being presented as having the same role with regard to the mark of the beast, so we have here two prophetic images to present the same thing. Now with these basics in place, let's take a look at what qualifies this apocalyptic entity as a false prophet.

To do this we need to go back to the basics of the ministry of the prophets. In [Numbers 12 verse 6], we noted that the ministry of the prophets is manifested by the fact that the Lord gives them dreams and visions. And, it is only with the fulfillment of the prophet's proclamation that it can be noted that the Lord has spoken to him [Deuteronomy 18 verses 21-22].

Thus, for a prophet to be anointed as such, the revelation received, either in a dream or in a vision, must have been fulfilled. Another possibility is to learn it from another prophet who has received revelation through the Spirit of God.

It was this scenario that presented itself to Elisha. Indeed, it was to the prophet Elijah that the Lord showed that Elisha was one of his prophets and that it was up to him to train him. Here is what we can read about it: "[...] **Pour oil on Elisha son of Shaphat from Abel Meholah. He will be a prophet in your place.**

*[...] So Elijah left there and found Elisha son of Shaphat. He was plowing a field with a team of oxen. There were teams ahead of him.*

*Elisha was plowing with the twelfth team of oxen. Elijah came up to Elisha. Elijah took off his coat and put it on Elisha.*

*Then Elisha left his oxen and ran to follow Elijah. Elisha said, "Let me kiss my father and my mother good-bye. Then I will go with you." Elijah answered, "That is fine. Go back.*

**I won't stop you."** [...] **Then Elisha went and followed Elijah and became his helper".** [1 Kings 19 verses 16, 19-21, *International Children's Bible (ICB)*].

Now that these different verses have taught us the biblical basis inherent in the ministry of the prophets, let us now discover, always with the Bible in hand, what qualifies a false prophet.

To do this, let's read this:

**"They went across the whole island to the city of Paphos. There they met a Jewish man named Barjesus who did magic.**

**He was a false prophet. He always stayed close to Sergius Paulus, who was the governor and a very smart man. He invited Barnabas and Saul to come visit him, because he wanted to hear the message of God. But the magician Elymas (as Barjesus was called in Greek) spoke against them, trying to stop the governor from believing in Jesus.**

*But Saul (also known as Paul), filled with the Holy Spirit, looked hard at Elymas and said, "You son of the devil, full of lies and all kinds of evil tricks! You are an enemy of everything that is right.*

**Will you never stop trying to change the Lord's truths into lies?"** [*Acts 13 verses 6-10, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

This text from the New Testament is very explicit, it presents the false prophet as a person who, while having given himself this title, is doing the work of the devil. The objective of this iniquitous being is to turn men away from the faith, therefore from the word of God, he works by trickery and uses fraud, etc. he is therefore a manipulator, who gives an image of holiness but works for evil.

Here is how we recognize them: **"Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves. [...] Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them".** [*Matthew 7 verses 15 and 20, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Thus, we recognize those who proclaim themselves prophets, therefore as having the gift of prophecy, by the fruits they bear.

The false prophet is therefore one who does not act in accordance with what the Bible says about this ministry. However, things are not that simple. I have a feeling that in reality the false prophet is being referred to as such for bad and misleading reasons.

Generally, we associate the adulterated fruits that it bears, as being evil works practiced according to the flesh. In doing so, a prophet who is a treacherous being may be perceived as a false prophet and therefore will not be credible. Thus, the revelations he bears will often be regarded as not coming from the Lord.

This definition of a false prophet is not biblical!

To understand it we must refer to the life of Balaam who is one of the best known prophets, in my opinion, for his iniquity.

In [Numbers 22 verse 1 to numbers 23 verse 13], we discover that the king of Moab, had a great fear of the people of God because of the victories that the Lord had granted them over the other nations.

Knowing that Israel was blessed and therefore untouchable, he hatched a plan to bring the curse on the Israelites. To do this, he hires Balaam the prophet, so that he can curse them. This step by this pagan king was justified by what he knew about this man.

Indeed, he was known to "*succeed his neck*".

*To win him over to his cause, the king sent him a bribe...*

*Hmm, Sorry... presents. However, the Lord spoke to Balaam and forbade him to proceed in this way.*

The king, having been refused, proposed to elevate Balaam by covering him with honours, and in spite of the disapproval of the Lord, the latter set out to meet this pagan monarch. The Lord had to make Balaam's donkey speak to bring him to his senses. Despite this, he did not comply and repeatedly tried to curse Israel, but to no avail, for it was the blessing that came out of his mouth each time.

Here then is the very archetype of a being who, while being a prophet of the Lord, bears "*crooked fruit*". *And yet!*

This does not mean that he should be called a false prophet. To understand this, let's read the following text, but especially to focus on what happened to Balaam's consecration as a prophet after he tried to curse God's people for money: **"And Balak's anger was kindled against Balaam, and he smote his hands together:**

**And Balak said unto Balaam, I called thee to curse mine enemies, and, behold, thou hast altogether blessed them these three times. Therefore now flee thou to thy place: I thought to promote thee unto great honour; but, lo, the LORD hath kept thee back from honour.**

*And Balaam said unto Balak, Spake I not also to thy messengers which thou sentest unto me, saying, If Balak would give me his house full of silver and gold, I cannot go beyond the commandment of the LORD, to do either good or bad of mine own mind; but what the LORD saith, that will I speak?*

*And now, behold, I go unto my people: come therefore, and I will advertise thee what this people shall do to thy people in the latter days.*

*And he took up his parable, and said, Balaam the son of Beor hath said, and the man whose eyes are open hath said: He hath said, which heard the words of God, and knew the knowledge of the most High, which saw the vision of the Almighty, falling into a trance, but having his eyes open: I shall see him, but not now:*

**I shall behold him, but not nigh: There shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth.**

**And Edom shall be a possession, Seir also shall be a possession for his enemies; and Israel shall do valiantly.**

**Out of Jacob shall come he that shall have dominion, and shall destroy him that remaineth of the city".** [*Numbers 24 verses 10-19, King James Bible*].

First of all, it should be noted that the Lord revealed himself to Balaam in a vision. Apart from that we see here the independence of the revelations he received from the Lord in comparison to his life choices. He chooses to curse Israel for money, but he does not choose when and where he will receive a prophecy from the Lord.

What is happening here is important, because it shows us that the prophet has no control over the revelations he receives from the Spirit of God. It is the Lord who chooses when to give a prophet a revelation either in dreams or in visions, and the latter's righteousness or not is irrelevant.

If this was the case, you understand that Balaam could never have received that day one of the most important prophecies for humanity, namely the coming of Jesus, him the radiant star, the divine specter. [*Revelation 22 verse 16*], [*Hebrews 1 verses 8-14*].

So what qualifies the false prophet is not the iniquities he practices in his life. We could also think that the false prophet is the one who announces an event that does not come true. Again, the Holy Scriptures belie this thesis, as the following demonstrates to us:

**“Then the Lord spoke to Jonah again and said, “Go to that big city Nineveh, and say what I tell you.” So Jonah obeyed the Lord and went to Nineveh. It was a very large city.**

**A person had to walk for three days to travel through it. Jonah went to the center of the city and began speaking to the people. He said, “After 40 days, Nineveh will be destroyed!”** *The people of Nineveh believed God. They decided to stop eating for a time to think about their sins. They put on special clothes to show they were sorry.*

*All the people in the city did this, from the most important to the least important. When the king of Nineveh heard about this, he left his throne, removed his robe, put on special clothes to show that he was sorry, and sat in ashes. [...] God saw what the people did.*

**He saw that they stopped doing evil. So God changed his mind and did not do what he planned. He did not punish the people”.** [*Jonah 3 verses 1-6, 10, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Here we see the prophet Jonah announcing that Nineveh would be destroyed in forty days, yet this is not what happened, because the inhabitants of the city repented.

Although the qualification of a prophet comes through the fulfillment of his revelations, however, he cannot receive the *“title”* of a false prophet if his proclamation does not occur as communicated.

We just saw it with Jonas. One could also think that a prophet or someone who defines himself as such, who cannot decipher the revelations of the Lord, is a perverted prophet whom God has blinded and therefore, can only be a false prophet.

It is not, the story of Abraham shows us the opposite. To discover this reality, I invite you to read the following: “[...] *The word of the Lord came unto Abram in a vision [...] And Abram said, “Lord God, what wilt Thou give me, seeing I go childless and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus?” And Abram said, “Behold, to me Thou hast given no seed;*

**And lo, one born in my house is mine heir.” And behold, the word of the Lord came unto him, saying, “This shall not be thine heir, but he that shall come forth out of thine own loins shall be thine heir.”**

*And He brought him forth outdoors and said, “Look now toward heaven and count the stars, if thou be able to number them.” And He said unto him, “So shall thy seed be.”*



**And he believed in the Lord; and He accounted it to him for righteousness**". [*Genesis 15 verses 1-6, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

Let's complete with this other text: "*Sarai was Abram's wife, but she did not have any children. She had an Egyptian slave named Hagar. Sarai told Abram, "The Lord has not allowed me to have children, so sleep with my slave. Maybe she can have a son, and I will accept him as my own."* Abram did what Sarai said.

**So after living ten years in the land of Canaan, Sarai gave her Egyptian slave to Abram as a second wife. Abram slept with Hagar, and she became pregnant. [...]**". [*Genesis 16 verses 1-4, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Let's end with this: "*And Jehovah visited Sarah as he had said, and Jehovah did unto Sarah as he had spoken. And Sarah conceived, and bare Abraham a son in his old age, at the set time of which God had spoken to him. And Abraham called the name of his son that was born unto him, whom Sarah bare to him, Isaac*". [*Genesis 21 verses 1-3, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Before presenting the realities of these texts, it is important to note that Abraham was a prophet of God [*Genesis 20 verses 1-7*].

Yet he misinterpreted the prophecy the Lord had given him by promising him abundant offspring, so much so that he listened to his wife's voice and bore Ishmael with Hagar. He did not understand until much later that this offspring would come to him from his wife Sarai (*Sara*). Although Abraham was wrong, here is his fate:

« **Indeed, the promise that he would be the heir of the world was not given to Abraham or his descendants through the law, but through the righteousness that is by faith. [...]** *As it is written: "I have made you a father of many nations."* [...]

*He did not waver in unbelief with respect to God's promise, but he grew strong in faith, giving glory to God and being fully convinced that God was able to do what he had promised.*

**This is why “it was credited to him as righteousness.”** [*Romans 4 verses 13, 17, 20-22, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Let's add this to our study: **“In the same way as Abraham “believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness”?** *Understand, then, that those who believe are the children of Abraham.*

**And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s descendants and heirs according to the promise”.** [*Galatians 3 verses 6-7, 29, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Adding up all that we have already seen, we understand that although Abraham did not understand the prophecy that the Lord addressed to him and listened to the voice of his wife and went to Hagar who bore him a son, he did not act out of unbelief, but firmly believed in the promise that the Lord had given him.

Thus, despite the fact that Abraham interpreted the prophecy that the Lord had given him according to human criteria, to the detriment of what really needed to be, God did not present him as a false prophet, but blessed him and granted him the grace that he had promised. Thus, it is through this same promise that the Eternal God made to him and that he misinterpreted, that we are saved in Jesus.

It is important to keep in mind that the prophetic messages that God gives are riddles and parables [*Numbers 12 verses 6-7*], [*Hosea 12 verse 10*], in doing so, as they are encrypted messages, there is always a possibility that one can be mistaken in trying to interpret them, as was the case with Abraham.

In doing so, we can see clearly that being wrong or not understanding the revelations God gives him does not qualify a person as a false prophet. Now that we know what does not make an individual a false prophet, let's find out what biblically qualifies him as such. To do this let's read this: **“[...] All false prophets and fortune-tellers will be wiped out, and if anyone begins false prophecy again, his own father and mother will slay him!** ‘

*You must die,’ they will tell him, ‘for you are prophesying lies in the name of the Lord.’ “No one will be boasting then of his prophetic gift! No one will wear prophet’s clothes to try to fool the people then”.* [*Zechariah 13 verses 2-4, Living Bible (TLB)*].

Let's complete with this other text: **"Thus says the Lord concerning the [false] prophets who lead my people astray; When they have something good to bite with their teeth, They call out, "Peace," But against the one who gives them nothing to eat, They declare a holy war"**. [*Micah 3 verses 5, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

By synthesizing these two texts, we understand that the false prophet is the one who says he makes revelations in the name of the Lord when God has not revealed anything to him and has not sent him to prophesy. This type of individual works to enrich themselves to the detriment of the gullible. The false prophet establishes his words as coming from the Lord when they are not.

*The best definition I take from these two texts is that the false prophet is the one who tells lies – therefore establishes false teachings – and presents them as coming from the Lord.*

By remaining on this definition, we understand that the work of the false prophet consists in perverting at the same time, the ministry of the prophets and its base which is the prophecy and by extension the knowledge of dreams and visions, base of the latter.

It is clear that this work of the false prophet is perfectly suited to Protestantism, because its two movements symbolized by the two horns of the lamb – those who keep the Sabbath and those who reject it – practice the works of falsification of prophecy.

The first horn of the beastly lamb that I would present to you, has as its most important base (*dominant religion*) the Evangelical Church, in all its diversity of faith. In their ranks, I have seen that many have self-proclaimed prophets, while the bases for them to be recognized as such, have never been acted upon.

We have seen that when there is a prophet among the people of God, it is in dream (s) or in vision (s) that the Lord speaks to him.

In addition, God must have fulfilled what the prophet presented to establish that he was divinely instructed. So that a prophet of whom at least one prediction has not come true cannot be consecrated as such.

Of course, as we have also seen, the Lord can also present to another prophet the consecration of his counterpart, who is then responsible for forming and consecrating him as such.

But in this case, this first prophet must have subscribed to the bases of the dreams or/and the visions received and which were realized in order to be himself consecrated a prophet. What we have just seen is not the doctrinal basis practiced by most of the evangelical religions.

None of these criteria referring to the Bible and which are necessary to qualify a prophet are generally not required to consecrate one within them. The observation I make is that in evangelical religions the prophets are established according to human doctrinal bases.

Since Renown is generally the basis of their consecration as a prophet, it is enough for a pastor or a presenter of the Gospel to have gained prominence or be successful, for him to be able to proclaim himself a prophet or to that this rank be granted to him.

This way of doing things, the Evangelical Church inherited it from the Catholic Church, which has the custom of raising its illustrious servants to the rank of saint after their death or of eminence during their lifetime. I have already presented this reality to you in the *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled “*Examples of pagan rites from Roman times that the little horn has used for his benefit*”.

Furthermore, although many of the various evangelical movements recognise the validity of dreams and visions, their doctrine on the subject is based on what the Catholic Church has established.

To realize this, I invite you to read, always, my book entitled “*Inquisitiô (The three angels' message), volume II. The reality of the attack of the little horn of Daniel 7 against the Law of God and the times of prophecy. Historical part*” in the chapter “*The unexpected pupils of the “holy” felon knight*”, of the book which I have just presented.

Let us now discover the works of the apocalyptic false prophets practiced by the other horn of the bestial lamb and which has as its most illustrious representative, the Seventh-day Adventist Church.

With regard to this religion, it does not have the same *modus operandi* as the Evangelical Church – which consecrates to all winds, and without discernment, of the prophets – but on the contrary, it has decreed an embargo in this matter.

Thus, no one, for her, is worthy of being a prophet! For the Seventh-day Adventist Church a good prophet is a dead prophet!

Thus, this religion came to idolize their late prophetess *Mrs White* by giving her, long after her death, the ability to prophesy.

In doing so, this religion has made its own the basis of Catholic doctrines which decree that great people must be brought up after their death.

*To achieve its ends, the Seventh-day Adventist Church falsified the biblical basis for recognising a prophet, namely dreams and visions, and replaced them with the writings of its late prophetess Ellen G. White.*

This is how this religion has come to reject dreams and visions and fail to recognize them as sure means by which the Lord speaks to us.

All this, while totally ignoring what the Bible says on the matter, because the Lord in his Holy Word teaches us, totally the opposite!

What I find particularly saddening about this posture is that *Ellen G. White*, on whom Seventh-day Adventist faith is based, had faith in dreams and visions.

I present to you in my book entitled "*Inquisitiô (The message of the three angels) volume IV. The situation regarding the attack of the false prophet and the apocalyptic bestial lamb against God's law and prophecy*" in the chapter "*Fallacious doctrines of the major falsifiers*", the iniquitous works that this religion practices in this matter.

By reading the additional chapters that I quoted to you above, you can see that Protestantism, in this century, has come to practice, in matters of dreams and visions, therefore in what concerns prophecy, Catholic doctrines.

In doing so, he fully fulfilled the prophecy of the false prophet and the apocalyptic bestial lamb, who were to practice, the works of the beast with seven heads and ten horns (*Catholic Church*).

Finally, I would say that by establishing these bases we will understand better the work of the false prophet.

In doing so, Protestants, all religions combined, have fully fulfilled the prophecy of the false prophet and the apocalyptic bestial lamb to practice the works of the seven-headed and ten-horned beast. In the following chapters we will see the repercussions of this.

## 15 Who has the most interest in the falsification of the Prophecy

**W**e are now going to discover the master of ceremonies who orchestrated the desacralization of dreams and visions, therefore of prophecy, through Christian religions (*Catholic and Protestant*).

To do this, I'm going to ask you several questions:

*Who benefits from the "crime"? Yes, who is the big winner when God's people reject the basis of prophecy which is dreams and visions? Who would want God's people to be always in darkness and confusion? Who seeks at all costs to seduce the people of God so that they can walk according to these precepts.*

Before we introduce you whoever has an interest in removing the sword of prophecy from the hands of God's people, let's find out the purpose of the prophetic messages that the Lord gives to his people. To do this let's read this:

**"The word of prophecy was fulfilled in our hearing! You should give that word your closest attention, for it shines like a lamp amidst all the dirt and darkness of the world, until the day dawns, and the morning star rises in your hearts. [...]"** [2 Peter 1 verse 18-19, J.B. Phillips New Testament Bible (PHILLIPS)].

First of all it is important to note, that the Symbol of the morning star which is presented here represents Jesus Christ. Here is what we can read about it:

**"I, Jesus, have sent my angel to tell you these things for the churches. I am the descendant from the family of David.**

**I am the bright morning star."** [Revelation 22 verse 16, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].

Since prophecy is the light intended to guide God's people, the goal being to keep them safe until Jesus returns, the devil therefore made plans to scramble and hinder this knowledge.

*Yes it is indeed him, Satan, who is at the helm behind this work of desacralization of the prophetic word that the Lord gives to his people.*

*The objective of the devil and his henchmen being to seduce, if they had the opportunity, even the chosen ones of God [Matthew 24 verse 24], doing so the messages that the Spirit of God gives to the people of God by the means of prophecy, are for sure a big obstacle to their plans.*

They have therefore made sure to remedy this by putting in place plans to lose God's people by acting with perfidy, in order to turn us away from the word of God.

To do this, the devil uses human servants who, while serving him, give the appearance of men and women who are in the service of the Lord. This tells us about this:

**"But I am afraid that, even as the serpent beguiled Eve by his cunning, your minds may be corrupted and led away from the simplicity of [your sincere and] pure devotion to Christ. [...]**

*For such men are counterfeit apostles, deceitful workers, masquerading as apostles of Christ.*

*And no wonder, since Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. So it is no great surprise if his servants also masquerade as servants of righteousness, but their end will correspond with their deeds". [2 Corinthians 11 verses 3, 13-15, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

Here we are presented with a concrete example of the works of the devil as a tempter who leads people astray by presenting them with counterfeits of the word of God. To achieve these ends with Eve he subtly mixed truth and error [Genesis 3 verses 1-7].

We also see that the devil has servants at his side, but he does not necessarily choose to serve him, but by their actions they become willy-nilly these servants. This is what we discover in this text:

**"Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him.**

**When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it".** [*John 8 verse 44, King James Bible*].

Let's complete with this: **"You put aside God's command and obey human teachings."** And Jesus continued, **"You have a clever way of rejecting God's law in order to uphold your own teaching.**

*For Moses commanded, 'Respect your father and your mother,' and, 'If you curse your father or your mother, you are to be put to death.'*

*But you teach that if people have something they could use to help their father or mother, but say, 'This is Corban' (which means, it belongs to God), they are excused from helping their father or mother.*

**In this way the teaching you pass on to others cancels out the word of God. [...]"** [*Mark 7 verses 8-13, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)*].

Here we have servants of the devil, who are also these children, who are of most unexpected, for the scribes and Pharisees were the rulers of the people of God and they were clothed with the consecration of the Lord [*Matthew 23 verses 1-3*].

As consecrated men of God's people, scribes and Pharisees generally did not openly practice blatant sins.

The parable presenting the two worshipers, which features a Pharisee and a tax collector, presents to us the high opinion that the Pharisees had of themselves, as well as the good works they practiced on a daily basis [*Luke 18 verses 9-14*].

Where the rub is that to make their religions functional, they did not hesitate to transgress the word of God. All who react in this way, as is the case with the Seventh-day Adventist Church among others, will become children and servants of the devil and will eventually work like him and institute adulterated doctrines.

We must be vigilant and remain faithful to the Lord in all things otherwise our end will be to be, like those who do not know him, under the domination of the devil.



This provides us with information on the matter: **"We are sure that God's children do not keep on sinning. God's own Son protects them, and the devil cannot harm them.**

**We are certain that we come from God and that the rest of the world is under the power of the devil".** [*1 John 5 verses 18-19, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

The devil is the one who has the capacity to blind those who do not walk with the Lord in order to prevent them from seeing the divine revelation manifested in Jesus Christ, which is the word of God made flesh, shining forth. Here is what we can read about it:

*"But even if our gospel is [in some sense] hidden [behind a veil], it is hidden [only] to those who are perishing;*

**Among them the god of this world [Satan] has blinded the minds of the unbelieving to prevent them from seeing the illuminating light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.**

*5 For we do not preach ourselves, but Jesus Christ as Lord, and ourselves [merely] as your bond-servants for Jesus' sake.*

**For God, who said, "Let light shine out of darkness," is the One who has shone in our hearts to give us the Light of the knowledge of the glory and majesty of God [clearly revealed] in the face of Christ.** [*2 Corinthians 4 verses 3-6, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

To understand the significance of this text with regard to the prophetic messages that we receive in Jesus Christ, we must not forget what we have already studied and that I invite you to read again:

**"I [still] have many more things to say to you, but they are too much for you [you cannot bear them] now.**

**But when the Spirit of truth [the Helper; see 16:7] comes, he will lead [guide] you into all truth. He will not speak his own words [from his own authority;**

**From himself], but he will speak only what he hears [from the Father], and he will tell [announce/declare to] you what is to come.**

*The Spirit of truth will bring glory to [glorify; honor] me, because he will take what I have to say [is mine] and tell [announce; declare] it to you. All that the Father has is mine.*

*That is why I said that the Spirit will take what I have to say [what is mine] and tell [announce; declare] it to you". [John 16 verses 12-15, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

Here we find the reality of the glory of God which shines in Christ, and which manifests itself through the word of God which the Holy Spirit brings to his people.

One of the bases of the ministry of the Holy Spirit is also to bring the new revelations that the Lord gives us, in dream(s) and in vision(s).

Coming back to the work that Satan leads, we see therefore that he is the one who blinds the intelligence of those who reject God, the objective is that he does not see shining the knowledge that the Lord gives and who is both the Gospel which has already been revealed, but also the prophetic messages.

The devil's purpose is to turn all mankind away from the Holy Scriptures, and to do this he presents men with doctrines that are often largely based on the word of God but contain enough error to lose us.

The ultimate goal of Satan being to lose all mankind and especially the chosen people of the Lord if that was possible.

To do this, he will use people, men and women, who give the appearance of godliness, but who have no qualms about transgressing the word of God.

These people, like the members of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, often act in a state of blindness, which they receive for having rejected the Lord [2 Thessalonians 2 verses 9-12].

If the devil has plans in place to pervert the knowledge of the prophetic messages that the Spirit of God gives us, it is so that the people of God are not ready and that at the second return of Jesus Christ and that we are found sleeping and the Lord rejects us when he returns.

In order not to find yourself in such a situation here is what the Holy Scriptures recommend: **"I don't need to write you about the time or date when all this will happen.**

**You surely know that the Lord's return will be as a thief coming at night.** *People will think they are safe and secure. But destruction will suddenly strike them like the pains of a woman about to give birth. And they won't escape.*

**My dear friends, you don't live in darkness, and so that day won't surprise you like a thief. You belong to the light and live in the day. We don't live in the night or belong to the dark. Others may sleep, but we should stay awake and be alert.**

*People sleep during the night, and some even get drunk. But we belong to the day. So we must stay sober and let our faith and love be like a suit of armor.*

**Our firm hope that we will be saved is our helmet.** *God doesn't intend to punish us, but wants us to be saved by our Lord Jesus Christ.*

*Christ died for us, so that we could live with him, whether we are alive or dead when he comes. That's why you must encourage and help each other, just as you are already doing. [...]*

**Don't turn away God's Spirit or ignore prophecies. Put everything to the test.**

**Accept what is good and don't have anything to do with evil''.** *[1 Thessalonians 5 verses 1-11, 19-22, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)].*

The basics that are presented in this text exhort us to be ready when the Lord Jesus Christ returns, so that we will not be surprised. In order to do this we must watch, and not be spiritually asleep.

This text also exhorts us not to despise prophecy, but to examine all things and retain what is good.

We find here the same basis that we have already discovered in *[2 Peter 1 verse 19]* and which presents the vital importance of keeping prophecy in order to know in what time we are.

Through prophecy we become able to perceive the fallacies of the devil and his spawn.

By adding up what we have just seen, we understand that Satan and his human henchmen and demons hate prophecy, because the latter gives the people of God the capacity to gain victory over them.

*The devil fears above all this.*

*Indeed, this fear of the devil in the face of the prophetic word is easily understood when we know the objective of this type of divine revelation.*

We have already studied that dreams and visions are the privileged means by which the Lord speaks to his prophets and to men.

He also uses them to give us directions, or to confirm those we have already received from him.

Through them, he also exhorts us to repentance (*preserve us from pride*). Also, God uses them to save our lives.

*All of this is "do not arrange the devil's business" and going against his plans because he wants us in chaos.*

The Holy Scriptures present the devil to us as being unleashed, because he was defeated by Jesus, and now he has little time left, his objective is therefore to make war against the faithful people of the Lord [*Revelation 12 verses 7-12*].

The revelations that the Lord makes to His people before an event that should befall them is a powerful weapon to counter the Machiavellian plans of the enemy of our souls (*Satan*).

We have a beautiful example of this reality in [*Revelation 12 verses 1-6, 9, 13-17*].

In this text we discover a dragon (*Satan*) who sought to devour a newborn child, but he does not succeed.

This baby's destiny is to graze all nations and then his finality is to be lifted up to God.

You don't have to be a theologian to understand that this newborn baby that the devil would seek to kill is Jesus.

In reality this is what happened, and King Herod was the infamous instrument the devil used in an attempt to kill, but to no avail, our newborn savior.

The text of [*Matthew 2*], tells us how several dreams of the Magi and Joseph, made it possible to thwart this satanic plan and to preserve the life of Jesus.

This ability to receive dreams and visions, God certainly gave to the Magi, to Joseph or to the ancient prophets, but today it is a gift that he has generalized to all of his people.

We will discover this reality in this text: *"And when the day of Pentecost was now come, they were all together in one place.*

*And suddenly there came from heaven a sound as of the rushing of a mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.*

*And there appeared unto them tongues parting asunder, like as of fire; and it sat upon each one of them.*

*And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. [...]*

**But this is that which hath been spoken through the prophet Joel: And it shall be in the last days, saith God, I will pour forth of my Spirit upon all flesh:**

**And your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, And your young men shall see visions, And your old men shall dream dreams:**

**Yea and on my servants and on my handmaidens in those days Will I pour forth of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy".** [Acts 2 verses 1-4, 16-18, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

We see that at Pentecost, once the Holy Spirit descended on the disciples, he realized the prophecy of the prophet Joel.

From then on under his inspiration the children of God, receive dreams and visions, and henceforth have, thanks to the Spirit of God, the capacity to prophesy.

*My feeling is that the reality that is presented in this text must give the devil "headaches"!*

*Can you imagine the thing?*

Until then, there were only a few consecrated men who had the gift of prophecy and who were able to receive and understand the dreams and visions that God gave them.

From now on, since Pentecost this gift has become accessible to all of God's people.

From then on, it was necessary for the devil to act quickly, for the expansion of prophecy was becoming detrimental to his work of leading men astray, for henceforth it was all of God's people who had just gained the capacity to prophesy.

In the following text we discover the power conferred by the gift of prophecy on the servant of God: *"But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet.*

**But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Whiles it remained, was it not thine own?**

*And after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.*

**And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost:** *And great fear came on all them that heard these things.*

*And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him. And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.*

*And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.*

**Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?**

**Behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out. Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost:**

*And the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband. And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things". [Acts 5 verses 1-11, King James Bible].*

Before developing this text, it should not be forgotten that Peter was one of the disciples who received the capacity to prophesy at Pentecost [Acts 2 verses 1-18].

In addition, we must not lose sight of the fact that prophesying is that before an event occurs the Spirit of God presents it to his servant. Let's get back to our not-so-clean transaction.

The first thing to note is that Pierre was not there during the transaction, because he asks the question and Ananias and Saphira who had reached an agreement lie to him.

Also noticed that it was to the Holy Spirit that they lied! So that if Peter heard of the story, it was because the Spirit of God revealed it to him.

The type of revelation of the Lord that presents new things being prophecy, we have here a manifestation of the gift of prophecy that happened live.

Another of the most interesting points in this case is who was pulling the strings of this iniquitous work, the text teaches us that it was Satan who put such a disloyal plan in the hearts of the two felonious spouses.

We realize that here, the devil, because of the gift of prophecy to suffer a stinging setback. Let's continue.

We also have another example in the person of the servant of the devil who was called Elymas, the magician. Let us reread this text which presents these iniquitous acts to us:

**"They went across the whole island to the city of Paphos. There they met a Jewish man named Barjesus who did magic. He was a false prophet. *He always stayed close to Sergius Paulus, who was the governor and a very smart man.***

**He invited Barnabas and Saul to come visit him, because he wanted to hear the message of God. But the magician Elymas (as Barjesus was called in Greek) spoke against them, trying to stop the governor from believing in Jesus.**

*But Saul (also known as Paul), filled with the Holy Spirit, looked hard at Elymas and said, "You son of the devil, full of lies and all kinds of evil tricks! You are an enemy of everything that is right.*

**Will you never stop trying to change the Lord's truths into lies?" Now the Lord will touch you and you will be blind.**

**For a time you will not be able to see anything—not even the light from the sun." Then everything became dark for Elymas. He walked around lost.**

**He was trying to find someone to lead him by the hand. When the governor saw this, he believed.**

**He was amazed at the teaching about the Lord".** [*Acts 13 verses 6-12, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

What is happening here is, for me, extraordinary, because without knowing this man Paul – Paul was a prophet [*Acts 13 verse 1*] – knew his heart and knew that he was serving the devil. However, it was not from him, for the text specifies that he acted under the direction of the Holy Spirit, so it was the Spirit of God who revealed to him who this man was and the dark works that were the his.

In these two biblical texts that we have just read we have discovered how Satan lost face before the servants of God who overcame these servants to him the devil. The devil could not allow such power to spread among God's people, so he made plans.

Thus, as I told you this powerful sword that is the prophecy, being from the Pentecost destined to be in the hands of every consecrated child of the Lord the devil made sure to disarm them. Dreams and visions were therefore to be carried by all, so it was necessary to withdraw this mighty sword from the hands of the people of God.

Initially it is his servant presented in the prophecy as being the little horn (*the Catholic Church*), which he used in order to make disappear the knowledge of the prophetic revelations.

To do this as the basis of prophecy is formed of dreams and visions, the devil has, through Catholicism, caused anti-dream and vision decrees and laws to be promulgated.

*Anyone who affectionate these dreams or / and these visions was decreed to be a wizard or witch and was tortured and then burned at the infamous pyre.*

To discover these realities I invite you to read the *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*The work of desacralization of dreams and visions fomented by the "holy" knight felon*".

This iniquitous plan of the devil lasted for centuries, then the Protestant Reformation saw the light of day and the Bible returned "*into the hands*" of the people while the papacy lost judicial power.



In doing so, the Catholic Church could no longer execute its opponents, so the devil's tactics changed.

No longer able to force men, and especially God's people, to ignore their dreams and visions, the devil has plans in place to pervert their *raison d'être* as prophetic messages.

This work to begin in the infancy of modern Christianity, the one that the devil to use for this was the said Saint Jerome who falsified bible texts, in the Catholic Bible the vulgate.

He added to Biblical texts the prohibition to interpret dreams and visions and presents them as part of the dark things, which the Lord disapproves of.

To discover this reality I invite you to read the *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Beginning of the falsification of the biblical knowledge of dreams and visions*".

These texts which were falsified by Saint-Jérôme, not having been discovered by the great reformers, who had for great leader Martin Luther, his remained as being the basis of faith of the Catholics but also of the Protestants.

Thus in this century, all the Protestant religions, continue to profess as a basis of faith with regard to dreams and visions, the doctrines that the Catholic Church has instituted to the detriment of the word of God.

Finally, I invite you to stop for a moment and reflect deeply on what I have presented so far. Are you now aware of the state of Christianity, especially the Protestants, in this century?

Do you understand now that Protestantism is fulfilled the prophecies of the apocalyptic false prophet as well as that of the bestial two-horned lamb.

The acts of the Protestants that we discovered in this book as well as in its *volume II*, especially those whose aim is to desecrate the prophecy, therefore the dreams and visions, pass for insignificant whereas we have seen it is an abomination that is thus perpetuated.

These people, by their works intended to make their religion more functional, lay at the feet of the devil one of the most powerful weapons that the Lord gives them in order to overcome Satan and all his spawn.

The finality is that by this act, they are in darkness and in doing so, they having to be the light of the world, have become dark lights which mislead souls and books to the devil.

In this history the greatest victory the devil could win over the Protestants was over the members of the Seventh-day Adventist Church who live in this century.

Yes, because in the time of their prophetess *Ellen G. White*, this religion was the only one that had received the new lights regarding dreams and visions as the basis of prophecy.

Unfortunate, with the death of her prophetess, the Seventh-day Adventist Church has perverted the teaching she (*Ellen G. White*) had received from God in this matter.

In doing so, this religion returned to profess the nothingness of Catholic doctrines desacralizing dreams and visions.

To discover this reality, I invite you to read my book entitled "*Inquisitiô (The message of the three angels) volume IV. The situation regarding the attack of the false prophet and the apocalyptic bestial lamb against God's law and prophecy*" in the chepter "Fallacious doctrines of the major falsifiers"

And worse, the leders of this religion have chosen in their souls and conscience to put aside the backbone of the prophecy, the message of the three angels, by disgracing the book "*The Great Controversy*" of *Ellen G. White*.

I present this reality to you in *volume IV* of this book in the chapters entitled "*Literal representation of the iniquitous union of beauty and the beast materialized by ecumenism*" and "*The works of the long-toothed wolf and who is insatiable, clothed in sheep's skin, established at the head of the Sheeps of panurge*".

*My feeling is that since the era of Jesus' apostles no entity has fulfilled all of the criteria of the apocalyptic false prophet as did the Seventh-day Adventist Church.*

*Moreover, it is not the only Seventh-day Adventist doctrine which has the purpose of winning souls for the devil, because these baptismal precepts contravene God's Word.*

To discover or the rediscover it, I invite you to read *volume IV* of this book in the chapters entitled “*The illegal practices of the corrupting temptress*”, “*The transgressions of the divine law by the corrupting temptres*” and “*Discover the churches that commit the sins of Babylon and sell you to the devil through their satanic baptisms*”.

By doing so, this Church acts like those described in [Mark 7 verses 5-13] by establishing their doctrines which have nothing biblical about them. Those who abandon God’s Word in order to observe their own traditions are reprehensible before the Lord.

In [1 Samuel 15 verses 22-23] we find that those who do this are like idolaters before God, and no idolater can inherit the kingdom of God [1 Corinthians 6 verses 9-10] nor can they be considered God’s faithful people, namely “*his remnant*”.

How proud the devil must be of the Seventh-day Adventists, who have come to lay their mighty sword of prophecy at his feet, in order to go and fight him, the devil, with wooden swords.

Armed with this facetiously of pseudo sword of prophecy, the Protestants and especially the Seventh-day Adventist Church, are defenseless against the sword of fire of the devil’s minions.

And the worst is that despite themselves, Protestantism having endorsed in their worship the doctrines desacralizing dreams and visions and falsifying the bases of prophecy, took on the mantle of the apocalyptic false prophet.

On this day, the Lord calls all those who claim his name to repent and reject those subversive doctrines which they have practiced until then and by which they have desecrated both dreams and visions and by extension prophecy.

To you who read me, what will you do on this day, will you continue to follow these precepts of man that your religion has instilled in you where will you stand up for the Lord and will you seize the powerful sword of prophecy, to confuse the devil as well as all the enemies of the lord? Your decision will determine whether you will receive the mark of the beast or not.

To discover the modalities leading to receive or not the mark of the beast I invite you to read the chapter “*The modalities of the sealing of the two peoples (that of God and that of the beast)*”.

## 16 The purpose of the message of the third angel of the apocalypse

To introduce this chapter, I would tell you that one of the inescapable realities of our world is that with every action there is a reaction. This reality is so simple that it may seem insignificant, but history teaches us to be careful about these types of things.

Remember what were the repercussions of a most innocuous gesture - which I would present to you later - which, once committed, caused a stir that upheaval and will continue to do so until the end of this system of things. where we live.

This reality once set in motion was far more nefarious than terrible things our world has had and has to face such as:

*The bomb dropped on Pearl Harbor, more bruised than the genocide of the Jews by the Nazis, more saddening than the fratricidal murder of Abel by Cain or the oil spills which exterminate an incalculable number of animals etc.*

*Yes, all of this is nothing compared to the repercussions that a mouthful of pleasure produced. Yes! what could be more banal, but nevertheless so good, than to bite into a fruit?*

*However, it is because of this that all the misfortunes of this world exist, massacre of foque babies, elephants and whales etc., murders, insects, rapes, genocides etc.*

*These things are all the results of original sin.*

We have to be very careful not to quantify spiritual things, as we would for the things of our daily life, because rules have been established by the Lord and those who transgress them will have to pay the price, which will be, to do not doubt it harmful.

One of the weapons par excellence that the demon uses in order to lose men is to try to withdraw our gaze on the reality of what awaits those who transgress the word of God, in order to make us consider what is secondary. Remember the famous words:

*Did God really say not to eat all the fruits of the garden, who was presented to Eve where the famous throw yourself downstairs, because the angels will carry you on their hands, therefore will save you – here I am fact that to paraphrase – which was proposed to Jesus.*

As in these cases which I have just presented to you, the devil will always make sure that we cannot be aware of the repercussions, which lie behind certain acts that we take, especially those which are spiritual.

The chapters that make up this part present the third doomsday angel's message. If the realities presented here are not fully understood, much of humanity, including of members of God's people will receive the mark of the beast.

The symbolism that hides behind the prophetic image of this mark is, in my opinion, one of the greatest mysteries of Christendom.

*Many theologians have written about it, in so doing, over the centuries many studies have been presented on this subject.*

*In this century the conspiracy theories, present it as being a chip that will be implanted in the hand, without which one can neither sell nor buy. But what is it really?*

*To find out, I would lead you to the only place where we can find the right answers together and which is none other than in the Bible.*

In [Revelation 14 verses 9-13], we are presented with the reality of this famous mark, which is directly linked to the powerful message that the third apocalyptic angel carries. In addition, we also find the modalities of obtaining this mark in [Revelation 13].

Moreover, reading these two texts we discover that Christendom will be divided into two parts:

*The first is represented by the followers of the beast with seven heads and ten horns, who will be guided by a beast that has horns like that of a lamb. The second is presented as being the faithful people of Lord calling the saints. We will go to meet these two very distinct peoples.*

Apart from that, in the following parts I will highlight, by the word of God, realities that many ignore and which are however directly related to the reason that many will receive the mark of the beast.

We will begin by discovering the identity of the bestial lamb with two horns, this entity is the one that manages the mark of the beast. My feeling is that many will be surprised when they discover who she is.

We have already discovered that Babylon is a philosophy and not a given place, we will now see how the bestial lamb with two horns applies this system of thought, which has the finality that those who practice it end up receiving a power of straying (*a spirit of blindness*) leading them to believe a lie.

I would present to you practical cases of this type of person and the basis of their teaching, which leads them to reject, whether they are aware of it or not the Lord.

The repercussion being that they will receive the mark of the beast and their end will be to burn in the fire of hell.

We will equally study the reality of the sealing of the two peoples. That of God and that of the devil. We will find out what the Bible in hand represents and the seal of God and the mark of the beast.

We will also go to a very special market, because in this place without the mark of the beast we can neither sell nor buy. We will study the symbolism of these two terms “*sell*” and “*buy*”.

We will moreover go to court to meet the judges of the last judgment, the objective is for you to have a clear vision of who they are. after all this, we will take the time to study the state of the dead, especially the reality of those who will be thrown into hellfire.

We will also continue to explore the place of God's law in the plan of salvation. To finish, Before getting to the heart of the matter, I cannot recommend enough that you study these chapters, even more than all the others, in a spirit of prayer.

## 16.1 The modalities of the sealing of the two peoples (that of God and that of the beast)

In this chapter as well as in the following we will proceed to an in-depth analysis, Bible in hand, of the third angel's message which I believe is one of the most important for us who live at the end of time.

The revelations made by this angel are crucial, because they will be the starting point of the separation of humanity into two very distinct peoples according to the works practiced.

On one side we have the saints who keep the Lord's commandments and have the faith in Jesus and on the other side we have those who reject these things by doing the beast's evil deeds. The fate of each one of these people will be sealed. Let's take a look at the text that presents this message:

*"And another angel, a third, followed them, saying with a great voice, If any man worshippeth the beast and his image, and receiveth a mark on his forehead, or upon his hand, he also shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared unmixed in the cup of his anger;*

**And he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:**

*And the smoke of their torment goeth up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day and night, they that worship the beast and his image, and whoso receiveth the mark of his name.*

**Here is the patience of the saints, they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.**

*And I heard a voice from heaven saying, Write, Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from henceforth:*

**Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; for their works follow with them".** [Revelation 14 verses 9-13, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

Before getting to the heart of the matter, I would like to pay homage to an angel of the Lord who serves as a typical audience.

*It's about my friend Nicole. That's right, she shared her new and relevant thoughts with me.*

*As she was re-reading this chapter to give it fluidity and the decisive scissor strokes, she challenged me on the way I had presented the notions of "image" and "name".*

*According to her, there was a lack of verses to support my thesis and facilitate understanding. However, for Nicole's sake and certainly for your pleasure, I have taken up my pen again to provide the necessary complement.*

Now that this confidence is made, we can come back to our study. We are now going to consider one aspect of the third angel's message, it is the worship that is brought to the beast or to his image. Those who do so receive *the mark of the beast*, which is presented as *the mark of his name*.

The worship of the beast's image is very significant in the third angel's message and in the final conflict, because God's people who overcome the beast had to fight against his image previously.

Here is what we can read about this: *"And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire; and them that come off victorious from the beast, and from his image, and from the number of his name, standing by the sea of glass, having harps of God". [Revelation 15 verse 2, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

To understand what the symbol of the image means prophetically, we need to read this: **"For He has rescued us and has drawn us to Himself from the dominion of darkness, and has transferred us to the kingdom of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption [because of His sacrifice, resulting in] the forgiveness of our sins [and the cancellation of sins' penalty]."**

**He is the exact living image [the essential manifestation] of the unseen God [the visible representation of the invisible] [...]"** *[Colossians 1 verses 13-15, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

Here is presented the one in whom we have the remission of sins, Jesus Christ, he the son of God and we are also told that he is the image of the invisible God.



While reading this text, although we understand **that Jesus can be the image of the living God**, we do not always have a clear vision of what it really means. To better understand this notion of the image of God given to Jesus, we need to consider another reality that is unique to him. To do this let's read this: **"In the beginning [before all time] was the Word (Christ), and the Word was with God, and the Word was God Himself.**

*He was [continually existing] in the beginning [co-eternally] with God. All things were made and came into existence through Him; and without Him not even one thing was made that has come into being. In Him was life [and the power to bestow life], and the life was the Light of men. [...] And the Word (Christ) became flesh, and lived among us; and we [actually] saw His glory, glory as belongs to the [One and] only begotten Son of the Father, [the Son who is truly unique, the only One of His kind, who is] full of grace and truth (absolutely free of deception)". [John 1 verses 1-4, 14, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

We see, Jesus is the Word of God made flesh and is also the image of God represented by the Gospel. We find this reality in this text:

*"Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty [emancipation from bondage, true freedom].*

**And we all, with unveiled face, continually seeing as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are progressively being transformed into His image from [one degree of] glory to [even more] glory, which comes from the Lord, [who is] the Spirit". [2 Corinthians 3 verses 17-18, Amplified Bible (AMP)].**

In doing so, those who contemplate the glory of the Lord – therefore who spend time studying his gospel – are transformed into the image of the Lord. The image thus represents the glory of the one whom it represents, and is embodied by the knowledge that this person provides. The same is true of the image of the beast, made to be worshiped by its followers.

It therefore represents doctrines of his own, intended to be practiced by those who make them his own. Let's see what is said about it: **"And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth;**

**And he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.**

**And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, and deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast;**

**Saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed".** [*Revelation 13 verses 11-15, BRG Bible (BRG)*].

These verses give us an important detail that of the image of the beast which is not static as a statue would be, for it speaks, it is thus about a doctrine. We thus find similarities as to the symbolism of the image, and that, whether it designates the Word of God or that of the beast. Indeed, they represent in both cases a doctrine or a precept intended to glorify its author. Here is what we can read about it:

*"But even if our gospel is [in some sense] hidden [behind a veil], it is hidden [only] to those who are perishing; among them the god of this world [Satan] has blinded the minds of the unbelieving to prevent them from seeing the illuminating light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.*

*[...] For God, who said, "Let light shine out of darkness," is the One who has shone in our hearts to give us the Light of the knowledge of the glory and majesty of God [clearly revealed] in the face of Christ".* [*2 Corinthians 4 verses 3-4, 6, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

In this text, it is state of the gospel of Christ which is the image of the glory of God. This image of God is therefore the knowledge of his word brought to men and the latter's objective is to give glory to the Lord.

In another register, as we have seen, it is the same with the image of the beast destined, also to be adored and glorified. Thus, it therefore presents anti-biblical doctrines which will be established in order to give glory to this beast and as it itself is in the service of the devil [Revelation 13 verses 2-4], its purpose is to glorify the devil.

Hearing demon doctrines, you might think that these are mostly satanic rites like *voodoo*, *black magic*, etc. Of course, these practices are part of it, but the following text shows us that there are others:

**"But the Spirit speaks expressly, that in latter times some shall apostatise from the faith, giving their mind to deceiving spirits and teachings of demons speaking lies in hypocrisy, cauterised as to their own conscience"** [1 Timothy 4 verses 1-2, Darby Translation (DARBY)].

Thus, we learn that the works of devils are not just those that we believe, presenting a gospel that transgresses the Word of God is one of them. We have here individuals who have apostatized, therefore who have rejected the Lord, while continuing to teach in his name.

This reality is the one that qualifies the *bestial lamb*, because it is this reality that sets up the cult around the image of the beast.

In doing so, the teachings of the demon and the image of the beast are of the same type, for their ultimate purpose, as we have seen, is to glorify the devil. To continue our study, I would say to you that we have also seen that the mark of the beast means receiving his name.

To understand what the name represents in prophetic language, we must not lose sight of the fact that the symbols presented to us are allegories and riddles intended to represent something else.

Now this has been clarified, let's continue. To understand what the "name" represents prophetically, let's read this: **"I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world:**

**Thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; And they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me".** [John 17 verses 6-8, King James Bible].

*The name represents knowledge.* Here Jesus says that he made his Father's name known to his disciples and that he brought all of his Father's words to them.

It should be noted that for me this text was self-explanatory, but my friend *Nicole* pointed out to me that the direct link between the name and the teachings was not clearly established.

To do this, I therefore invite you to read the following text in two different versions. Here is the first:

*“Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee”. [Hebrews 2 verse 12, King James Bible].*

Here is the second: *“He says, “God, I will tell my brothers and sisters about you. Before all your people I will sing your praises”. [Hebrews 2 verse 12, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].*

In the first version of this text Jesus promises his father that he will announce his name to his brethren and therefore he will make his teachings known to God's people. In the second version, instead of the word **“name”** we find **“speak”**. Thus, to speak of God, to present his Holy Word, is to announce his name.

This text in two versions that we have just considered presents the same fact, seen previously in [John 17 verses 6-8].

The following text, also presented in two different versions, shows us again, if it were necessary, that the name symbolises the teachings. Here is the first one: *“But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way:*

**For he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel: For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake”.** [Acts 9 verses 15-16, King James Bible].

Now let's take a look at the second version: *“But the Lord Jesus said to Ananias, “Go! I have chosen Saul for an important work.*

**I want him to tell other nations, their rulers, and the people of Israel about me. I will show him all that he must suffer for me”.** [Acts 9 verses 15-16, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].

This text is the continuation of the story presenting the significant and most astonishing meeting that Saul (*Pauł*) had with Jesus Christ.

Here we have part of the dialogue that took place between the Lord and Ananias, and in the first version the Lord says that Saul is destined to make his **“name”** (*that of the Lord*) known to the nations.

It is also said that God will show him how much he will have to suffer for his **“name”**. In the second version which uses **“who I am”** and **“for me”** replace this with the word **“name”**.

It is true that here, a direct link is not made between the term name and any teaching to be carried out.

However, this fact is implicit. To understand this, we must consider the testimony that Saul was to give before the nations to make the Lord known to them and also the cause of his sufferings which had been prophesied here. To do this let's read this:

**“For I make known to you, brethren, as touching the gospel which was preached by me, that it is not after man. For neither did I receive it from man, nor was I taught it, but it came to me through revelation of Jesus Christ.**

*For ye have heard of my manner of life in time past in the Jews' religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and made havoc of it: And I advanced in the Jews' religion beyond many of mine own age among my countrymen, being more exceedingly zealous for the traditions of my fathers.*

**But when it was the good pleasure of God, who separated me, even from my mother's womb, and called me through his grace, to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the Gentiles [...]** [*Galatians 1 verses 11-16, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Let us complete our study with these verses: **“For this gospel I was appointed a herald, apostle, and teacher of the Gentiles, and that is why I am suffering these things.**

*But I am not ashamed, because I know the one in whom I have believed, and I am convinced that he is able to guard what I have entrusted to him until that day”. [2 Timothy 1 verses 11-12, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)]*.

From these two texts, we take from them that the different terms used such as **“name”**, **“who I am”** and **“for me”**, are used to trace the work that Paul was to carry out for the Lord and the reason for his sufferings is summed up in only one word **“the Gospel”**.

Thus the fact of bearing God’s name to the nations symbolises his Holy Word to be taught to them, which confirms, once again, that the prophetic symbol **“name”** is synonymous with teachings or doctrines to be brought to others.

Let us discover another text in two different versions, which also presents to us the fact that a person's *“name”* is a symbol which represents his teachings.

Let's start with this first version: **“You see, it was their passion for the glory of the name of Christ that launched them out, and they’ve not accepted financial support from unbelievers”**. [3 John 1 verse 7, *The Passion Translation Bible (TPT)*].

Here is the second version: **“When they left to tell others about the Lord, they decided not to accept help from anyone who wasn’t a follower”**. [3 John 1 verse 7, *Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

These two texts, this time with the terms **“name”** and **“to proclaim”**, confirm that these are indeed teachings to be disseminated. Let's come back now to the third angel's message, where we have seen that he presented two very distinct peoples, the first concerning the *“candidates”* for the mark of the beast and the other, those biblically called the saints.

These, God’s faithful people, bear his name in a rather unusual place according to what is said in prophecy.

To find out, let's read this: **“And I saw, and behold, the Lamb standing on the mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty and four thousand, having his name, and the name of his Father, written on their foreheads.**

**These are they that follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were purchased from among men, to be the first-fruits unto God and unto the Lamb. And in their mouth was found no lie:**

**They are without blemish".** [*Revelation 14 verse 1, 4-5, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Before developing what we find here, I would like to highlight what we have already studied. I have deliberately chosen to present you with a large number of biblical texts using the term **"name"** so that there can be no doubt as to its meaning. In all cases, prophetically speaking, it symbolises **teachings and knowledge**.

Thus, we can immediately deduce that these are not physically the patronymics of the Lord and that of the Lamb, the symbol, as we have seen, which represents Jesus [*1 Peter 1 verse 19*], [*Isaiah 53 verses 7- 8*], [*John 1 verse 29*], which God's faithful servants wear on their foreheads.

These symbols are there to attest to the fact that these faithful servants are keeping both the word (*teachings*) of Jesus and that of the Lord. Let's look again at how within the third angel's message this reality is presented: **"Here is the patience of the saints, they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus"**. [*Revelation 14 verse 12, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

So we find that what qualifies the saints is keeping the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.

Consider the following text, it presents with a different symbolism the faithful people of God who were to live during this period, but the reality that it covers is the same. So let's read this text:

**"And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and he went to make war with the remnant of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ"**. [*Revelation 12 verses 17, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

Thus, in these two texts expressed differently, we find the characteristics presenting the faithful people of the Lord to live in the last times. In this last text, they are designated by the name of *"remnant of the posterity of the woman"*, also called *"the Church of the remnant"*. The eligibility criteria for this rank of saint or *"Remnant Church"*, two in number, can be summarized as follows:

*"Keep the commandments of God (therefore his Holy Law)" and "consider the testimony of Jesus while keeping his faith (his teachings)".*

For the remainder of our study, it is important to clarify what this notion of the teachings of Christ kept by these elect in the last times covers. To do this, we will discover a text in two biblical versions.

Here is the first: **"[...] for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy"**. [*Revelation 19 verse 10, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Let's complete with this second version: **"[...]For the truth that Jesus revealed is what inspires the prophets"**. [*Revelation 19 verse 10, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)*].

By synthesizing these two texts we understand that the testimony of Jesus, who is also called the Spirit of prophecy, materializes by the fact that Jesus inspires revelations to the prophets.

This reality features the Holy Spirit taking new revelations from the Lord to reveal them to God's people. To deepen this reality I invite you to read the chapter entitled *"The reality of the false prophet who is at the service of the apocalyptic beast, servant of the demon"*.

Now these points made, we can continue. We have seen that the elect of God, those who are blameless, therefore the saints, have the name of Jesus and that of his Father on their foreheads.

To appreciate this fact, it is necessary to understand what the mark on the forehead represents prophetically. To do so, let us read this:

***"Why doesn't God All-Powerful listen and answer ? If God has something against me, let him speak up or put it in writing ! Then I would wear his charges on my clothes and forehead.***

*And with my head held high, I would tell him everything I have ever done".* [*Job 31 verses 35-37, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)*].

Let's also consider this text: ***" For you, turn your heart to God, stretch out your hands to Him, depart from iniquity, and let not the injustice dwell in your tents.***



**Then you shall lift up thy face without spot, you shall be steadfast and shall not fear.”** [*Job 11 verses 13-15, Bible Louis Segond (translated from French to English)*].

Let's finish with this last text: **"But the house of Israel will not hearken unto thee, for none of them will hearken unto me.**

**For all the house of Israel are hard of forehead and stiff of heart. Behold, I have made thy face hard against their faces, and thy forehead hard against their foreheads.**

*As an adamant harder than flint have I made thy forehead. Fear them not, neither be dismayed at them, for they are a rebellious house.*

**And he said unto me, Son of man, all my words which I shall speak unto thee, receive in thy heart, and hear with thine ears"**

[*Ezekiel 3 verses 7-11, Darby Translation Bible.*]

The forehead is a symbol which represents our *motivations, our actions and our beliefs (our knowledge)* that we practise.

The forehead is therefore the symbol that represents our spirit and our spiritual heart. The names of God and Jesus Christ are both affixed to the foreheads of members of the Lord's faithful people to signify their voluntary adherence to the law and prophecy.

This reality corroborates what we have seen through verses which present the name of God as being his teachings. To continue, let's discover another thing that is also affixed to the foreheads of the Lord's faithful people. To do this let's read this: *"And I saw another angel coming up from the east, carrying the seal of the living God.*

*And he shouted to those four angels, who had been given power to harm land and sea, "Wait ! Don't harm the land or the sea or the trees until we have placed the seal of God on the foreheads of his servants"* [*Revelation 7 verses 2-3, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

Let's finish with this text: *"And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree ; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads".* [*Revelation 9 verse 4, King James Bible*].

Before developing it is interesting to note that those who do not have the seal of God on their forehead will be smitten. Otherwise in these texts, there is no longer mention of the name of Christ or of his Father but of the seal of God. What does this new word "*seal*" cover?

Does this imply that they will receive both the name of God and that of Christ – thus their teachings – and in addition a seal?

The following text will tell us more about the seal of God:

**“Nevertheless the firm foundation of God remains standing, with these words who serve him as a seal [..]”. [2 Timothy 2 verse 19, Bible Louis segond (translated from French to English)].**

*God's Word is his SEAL.* Jesus himself being the word of God made flesh, this is why there are not two divine seals (*one for him and one for his Father*) as there are for the name of Christ and of God who are on the forehead of God's faithful people.

In doing so, the seal of God is therefore formed of the name of God and of Jesus, therefore of the two bases that we have just studied, the commandments of the Lord and the testimony of Jesus (*which is the prophecy*).

The seal of God placed on the forehead is a sign which recognizes that one is his servant – therefore that one fully adheres to his word.

This prophetic symbol, in ancient times, existed literally because the servants of the Lord (*the priests*) had to wear it in a physical way.

Here is what was established: *"Robes were now made for Aaron and his sons from fine-twined linen thread. [...] Finally, they made the holy plate of pure gold to wear on the front of the turban, engraved with the words, "Consecrated to Jehovah." [Exodus 39 verses 27 and 30, Living Bible (TLB)].*

Let's complete, by reviewing this text in another version: *"One woven the tunics for Aaron and his sons in of the fine linen [...]"*

**They made the front plate, the sacred diadem, of pure gold and engraved on it as on a seal at stamped :**

**"Consecrated to the Eternel."** [Exodus 39 verses 27 and 30, Bible Semeur (translated into English from the original text)].

The servants of God, in the time of Moses and his brother Aaron, wore on their foreheads a seal of pure gold, on which was worn, according to the biblical version, the mention "*Consecrated to Jehovah*" or "*Consecrated to the Eternal*".

Those who receive the seal of God, and are therefore not eligible for the mark of the beast, must first have made a covenant with him in Jesus Christ, as we will see.

Small important reminder, we have seen that on the forehead of the faithful people of God will be affixed the name of God and Jesus symbolized by the commandments of God and therefore his law, on the one hand and the testimony of Jesus (*prophecy*), on the other hand.

These two things will form, as we have seen, the seal of God which will be given to his faithful people, these saints who will live in the last times, but from the Old Testament, the law and the prophecy already had a place apart because they were marked in special ways with of seals of God.

Thus, law and prophecy are seals of God.

Here is what we can read about it: "*Keep this testimony sheltered, mark the law with a seal among my disciples!*" [*Isaiah 8 verse 16, Bible Segond 21 (translated into English from the original text)*].

Let's finish with this: "*God has allowed 70 weeks for your people and your holy city, Daniel. The 70 weeks are ordered for these reasons:*

*To stop doing bad things, to stop sinning, to make people pure, to bring the goodness that continues forever, to put a seal on visions and prophets, and to dedicate a very holy place*". [*Daniel 9 verse 24, Easy-to-Read Version (ERV)*].

These two texts show us this reality and allow us to understand that the Lord has set aside his law and prophecy - here represented by the vision and the prophet.

To continue, I would say to you that it is no accident that the two poles which allow the faithful people of God not to have the mark of the beast are, the commandments of God and the testimony (*the faith of Jesus*), which is the prophecy.

To understand it, let's review this text:

**"Where there is no word from God [vision; prophecy], people are uncontrolled [*the people perish*], but those who obey what they have been taught [guard the law] are happy [*blessed*]"**. [*Proverbs 29 verse 18, Expanded Bible (EXB)*].

Thus, the two poles of the word of God intended to guide and maintain the people of God in righteousness are the law and the testimony of Jesus (*the spirit of prophecy*) – formed among other things of dreams and visions –.

Regarding prophecy, the seal of God is put on the prophets to signify that they belong to the Lord, they have a most important mission, among the people of God, because they are the direct representatives of the Lord.

They are unavoidable, because without them, a whole part of the work of God is paralyzed, without the Lord being able to do anything, and that, in spite of his omnipotence. I can easily imagine your astonishment, and even your amazement on reading the above, but the following verse will help to understand my words:

**"Surely the Lord God will do nothing, unless He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets"**. [*Amos 3 verse 7, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

The Lord cannot deny himself, what he declares he fulfils, he does not change, there is not even the shadow of a variation in him [*Numbers 23 verse 19*], [*Malachi 3 verse 6*], [*James 1 verse 17*].

So, as he has declared that he does nothing without first revealing his secret to his servants the prophets, it will be so and not otherwise.

When there is no prophet, there is little or no revelation from the Lord. The people of Israel have known this type of "*dearth*" in matters of the prophetic Word of the Lord, due to the absence of a prophet [*1 Samuel 3 verse 1, 19-21*].

Until the coming of the prophet Samuel, to whom God spoke very early (*from his childhood*), revelations from the Lord were scarce.

It was only from Samuel that things changed, because he did not leave out any of the Words he received from the Lord. What he received was of the prophetic type and was based, among other things, on dreams and visions [*1 Samuel 3 verses 1-21 (especially verse 15)*].

This dearth of prophet or prophetic revelation is no longer relevant, because since Pentecost, as soon as the Holy Spirit descended on the disciples, he opened access to prophecy to all the members of the people of God [*Acts 2 verses 1-4, 16-18*].

In doing so, since this time the Spirit of God brings us divine revelations in dreams and in dreams and gives us also the ability to prophesy.

In addition, the Lord promises us that the law and the prophets, therefore the prophecies (*which are based on dreams and visions*) will last as long as our "good old" Earth [*Matthew 5 verses 17-20*].

These two poles are of capital importance because, as we have seen, it is through them that the people of God will be sealed by this precious seal which will be affixed to their foreheads.

This is why the devil, through his servant the little horn (*the Catholic Church*), tries to confuse the issue by making God's people ignore the law and prophecy.

I have developed, Bible in hand, the aspects of this harsh reality throughout this book that you have in your hands, as well as in my book entitled "*Inquisitiô (The three angels' message), tome II. The reality of the attack of the little horn of Daniel 7 against the Law of God and the times of prophecy. Historical part*".

If you want to know more about this, I invite you to refer also to this other book. The goal of the devil is unambiguous, it is crystal clear, it is to pervert the people of God, so that they are not sealed in Jesus Christ, and thus all mankind receives the mark of the beast.

*Terrible design!* Going back to those who will receive the mark of the beast, they find themselves in this situation because they have rejected the two poles of the word of God, the law and the prophecy, or one of them.

It is not enough to do the will of God in part to be saved, but one must walk in all of his ways. Those presented in [*Matthew 7 verses 21-23*], have learned this the hard way.

Otherwise, to continue with this famous mark given by this beast and which is announced by the third apocalyptic angel, in view of the argument developed, Bible in hands, we understand that the name of the beast represents its precepts, its doctrines.

Thus, to summarize, the two peoples, that of God and that of the beast, therefore of the demon, bear the sign of the authority on which they depend and which they serve.

On the one hand we have the faithful people of the Lord who keep his law and the prophecy (*testimony of Jesus*) which form the seal of God affixed to their forehead.

On the other side, we have those who practice the doctrines of the beast, therefore who reject the word of God, they also carry on them the trace of the doctrines they have adopted and which is manifested by the mark of the beast affixed, either on their hand or on their forehead.

I dare to hope that you will be sensitive, you who seek the Lord and who wish to do his will, to this argument developed by drawing inspiration from Bible verses which make us understand the importance of remaining faithful to the Lord and to his Holy Word.

To continue our study, I would say to you that it is important to note that the first seal the Lord gave was circumcision, which was the symbol of the first covenant established with Abraham.

Here is what we can read about it: **"And he received the mark of circumcision as the seal of the righteousness by faith that was already his while he was uncircumcised. [...]"** [Romans 4 verse 11, *Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)*].

Let's complete with this: **"And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day; and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob the twelve patriarchs".** [Acts 7 verse 8, *American Standard Version Bible(ASV)*].

The purpose of the first covenant, based on circumcision, was to bring God's people to keep the Law and the ordinances of the Lord, but this reality was impossible for humans because of the sin we have inherited. in Adam. The following verses describe it perfectly [Romans 5 verses 12-21], [Romans 7 verses 7-24].

In [Romans 2 verses 25, 28-29], we find that circumcision and the law were intrinsically linked, for whoever was circumcised had to keep the law. This first covenant being marked in the flesh of the people of God, could not allow the law to be written in their hearts.

Thus, the circumcision, made in the pulpit could not be perennial because it is that of the hearts (*the spirits*) of the members of his people that the Lord wishes [*Deuteronomy 10 verses 12-16*].

In order to remedy this, the Lord gave us another type of circumcision, done it in Christ. To find out, let's read this: **"In whom ye were also circumcised with a circumcision not made with hands, in the putting off of the body of the flesh, in the circumcision of Christ;**

*Having been buried with him in baptism, wherein ye were also raised with him through faith in the working of God, who raised him from the dead".* [*Colossians 2 verses 11-12, American Standard Version Bible(ASV)*].

Let's complete with this most relevant text: *"Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, But a body didst thou prepare for me; [...]*

**By which will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.**

*And every priest indeed standeth day by day ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, the which can never take away sins: but he, when he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God [...]*

*And the Holy Spirit also beareth witness to us; for after he hath said, This is the covenant that I will make with them After those days, saith the Lord: I will put my laws on their heart,*

*And upon their mind also will I write them; then saith he, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more".* [*Hebrews 10 verses 5, 10-12, 15-18, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

This is how the Lord established a new covenant with his people which was sealed by the blood of Jesus Christ. In this context, it is no longer the flesh of the members of the people of God that must be circumcised but their hearts.

The new covenant that the Lord makes with his people consists in having his Holy Law inscribed in the heart (*spirit*) of each of them.

It is because the Word of God, his Holy Law, is engraved in the minds of his children that they are sealed by the Holy Spirit and they bear the seal of God. As you see, the law of God is omnipresent in the sealing of the people of God.

It is she who is inscribed in their minds, therefore on their foreheads. So that those who do not have the law engraved in their heart, can not be sealed, and therefore bear the seal of God.

By his first covenant the Lord had chosen a people to belong to him and had given him circumcision as a seal, it is the same for this second covenant, with the difference that this seal worn by his faithful is no longer made in the flesh.

During the first covenant, it was the patriarchs who circumcised their son [*Acts 7 verse 8*], then the custom is to perpetuate within the Jewish people. Things are different in the context of the second covenant, it is the Spirit of God himself who circumcises the hearts of the children of God, therefore seals them.

This tells us: "*And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption*". [*Ephesians 4 verse 30, King James Bible*].

Let's complete with this: "*Now it is God who establishes and confirms us [in joint fellowship] with you in Christ, and who has anointed us [empowering us with the gifts of the Spirit];*

**It is He who has also put His seal on us [that is, He has appropriated us and certified us as His] and has given us the [Holy] Spirit in our hearts as a pledge [like a security deposit to guarantee the fulfillment of His promise of eternal life]**". [*2 Corinthians 1 verses 21-22, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

We have just seen that the sealing of the people of God consists of this new covenant made in Jesus.

Furthermore, it manifests itself, as we have seen, by the fact that the law is written in our hearts and that it represents the seal of God which seals us in Christ. This reality is also true for prophecy which is inseparable from the law.



The Holy Spirit being the depository of prophecy [1 Corinthians 12 verses 1-11], [2 Peter 1 verses 20-21], [John 16 verses 12-15, 31], being sealed by him, he gives us of office, in Jesus Christ, access to prophecy.

Now that we have considered the modalities of obtaining the seal of God, let us now get down to explaining the mark of the beast.

To begin with, it seems important to me to highlight an important point that will allow us to better understand the reality that is hidden behind this brand:

*This point is directly related to the fundamental difference that exists between the seal of God and the mark of the beast.*

*We have just seen that the Lord marks the foreheads of his elect with his seal. Conversely, concerning the devil, it is a mark that those who agree to serve him receive – on the hand or on the forehead –.*

*There is no mention in the Bible of any seal given by the demon, but of the mark of the beast affublished to these servants.*

Let us return to our subject presenting Satan as having no seal. Why is the term "seal" not used for Satan? The answer to the question is that the seal can only be given to one who creates or gives life.

This tells us: *"God's voice thunders in wonderful ways. [...] He puts a seal on the hands of all men, so that all may recognise themselves as His creatures."* [Job 37 verses 5 and 7, Bible Louis Segond (translated from French to English)].

For a better understanding of this text, let's read it in another version: *"God's voice thunders in wonderful ways. [...] He thus interrupts the activity of all men so that all recognise themselves as his work."* [Job 37 verses 5 and 7, Bible Segond 21, (translated from French to English)].

Before developing this, we need to understand the meaning of the word "work" which is used in this last text. To do so let us read this: **Yet, O Lord, You are our Father; We are the clay, and You our Potter, And we all are the work of Your hand.** [Isaiah 64 verse 8, Amplified Bible (AMP)].

We discover here that the seal is also the privilege of the one who gives life. Here, the seal of the Lord is affixed on all mankind, to demonstrate that he is our creator, the one who gave us life [*Genesis 2 verses 18, 21-24*].

By virtue of his quality as a creator, the Lord also places his seal on the stars, this gesture attests that he is the author, like the signature of a great artist on his canvas.

To discover this reality I invite you to read this: "[...] *But how can a man be in the right before God?* [...] **“Wise in heart and mighty in strength [...] “It is God who removes the mountains, they know not how [...] Who commands the sun not to shine, and sets a seal upon the stars;**

*Who alone stretches out the heavens And tramples down the waves of the sea; Who makes the Bear, Orion and the Pleiades, and the chambers of the south”* [*Job 9 verses 2, 4-5, 7-9, New American Standard Bible 1995 (NASB1995)*].

To continue, it is important to note that the word of God is the creator of life, that is why it serves as a seal. This same reality is presented in this text with regard to the one who carries the Gospel and his pupil: *“Am I not an apostle? Am I not free? Have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? Are not you my work in the Lord?*

*If I am not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you. For ye are the seal of mine apostleship in the Lord”.* [*1 Corinthians 9 verses 1-2, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

Let's complete with this: **“In fact, even if you had 10,000 masters in Christ, you still do not have however fathers, since it is I who gave you life in Jesus Christ through the Gospel”.** [*1 Corinthians 4 verse 15, Bible Segond 21 (translated into English from the original text)*].

Here Paul presents those to whom he brought the Gospel as the seal of his apostolate. Indeed, they are described as being his children, having given them life in Jesus Christ, by the Gospel, but they also present them as being his work in the Lord.

Thus, to be the holder of his own seal, one must be a creator and/or have the power to give life, in the Biblical sense.

Paul, however, was able to do it, to give life, although he did not have this power as a created being. Let's see how this was possible:

**"It is the Spirit that quickeneth; *the flesh profiteth nothing. The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life*".**  
[*John 6 verse 63, (21st Century King James Version Bible "KJ21").*]

The term "*life*" is taken, we see here, in its spiritual sense. What gives life is the Gospel, who is none other than Jesus [John 1 verses 1-18], which is animated by the Spirit of God.

The Spirit of God could not live in Satan, be created by God but who rejected the Lord as his creator and wanted to become more powerful than him, but in vain.

Stronger than that, as the Spirit of God cannot live in the demon, he therefore does not have the power to give life.

The repercussion of the acts of Satan and of the fallen angels, therefore the demons, is that they no longer have life in them, because of this reality they live like parasites which suck the vital energy of their hosts [Mark 5 verses 1-17].

To learn more, read the chapter entitled "*The purpose of the plan of salvation through God's grace that was enacted by the crucifixion of Jesus Christ*" In addition, to learn more about the effects of demons on the one they possess, I invite you to read my forthcoming book entitled "*Raijô (Basis of the victory against demonic forces)*".

As the devil is neither a creator nor capable of giving life, he therefore has no seal. Note that he is not directly the author of the mark that those who will be his followers receive. Before exposing this reality, let us return to concepts already explained to better understand these prophetic teachings that have been drawn from the Bible.

We have seen that the new covenant that is made with the Lord in Jesus Christ is sealed by the Spirit of God. This reality is materialized by the fact that the Holy Spirit engraves in the hearts (*spirits*) of the children of God the law and the testimony of Jesus (*the prophecy*).

These two parts of the word of God (*law and prophecy*) which represent the name of God and Christ make up the divine seal.

What happens to the seal of God if the wearer does not remain faithful to the Lord?

Before providing an answer, taking inspiration from what is said in the Bible, we must understand the significance of the seal of God for its bearer. To do this, let us draw inspiration from these two texts already presented. Here is the first:

*"And do not make the Holy Spirit sad [grieve/bring sorrow to the Holy Spirit]. The Spirit is God's proof that you belong to him and he will make you free when the final day comes [...by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption]". [Ephesians 4 verse 30, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

Let's complete with the second text: **"He put his mark on us to show that we are his [seal on us; of ownership], and he put his Spirit in our hearts to be a guarantee for all he has promised [as a pledge/deposit/downpayment]". [2 Corinthians 1 verse 22, Expanded Bible (EXB)].**

These two texts emphasize that those who are sealed by the Holy Spirit, become the property of God, in doing so, we belong to him. So this is what happens to him who now belongs to the Lord: **"Or do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is within you, whom you have from God?**

***You are not your own, for you were bought at a price. Therefore glorify God with your body". [1 Corinthians 6 verses 19-20, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)].***

Having given the life of his only son in order to redeem us [1 Peter 1 verses 18-21], [Philippians 2 verses 5-11], in return the Lord asks us to remain faithful to him. He wants our heart to be 100% his, we must love him with all our heart, with all our soul, with all our mind, and with all our strength [Mark 12 verses 30-33]!

So, whatever we love more than God makes us unworthy of him, and that can be the love of money, the love we have for our loved ones, or the love we have for material things (*at world*) [Matthew 6 verse 24], [Matthew 10 verses 32-39].

Here's what happens when something other than the Lord becomes the center of our lives:

*"You ask and don't have because you ask with evil intentions, to waste it on your own cravings. You unfaithful people! Don't you know that friendship with the world means hostility toward God?"*

**So whoever wants to be the world's friend becomes God's enemy. Or do you suppose that scripture is meaningless? Doesn't God long for our faithfulness in the life he has given to us?"** [*James 4 verses 3-5, Common English Bible (CEB)*].

God must be our priority, nothing else in this world or no one should have the first place because in this way we would grieve the Holy Spirit, which is seen with a very evil eye by the Lord. This recommendation we have already found in [*Ephesians 4 verses 30*].

To the member of the people of God who goes astray and does not give the first place to the Lord, but favors everything else, the Holy Spirit speaks to his heart, in order to turn him away from evil and to reaffirm to him that he is a child of God [*John 16 verses 7-9*], [*Romans 8 verse 16*].

The ministry of the Holy Spirit to the people of God consists, among other things, in convincing people not to sin and above all to believe in Jesus (*therefore in the word of God*).

If the unrepentant accepts to obey, and repents, the blood of Christ covers him and redeems him [*1 John 1 verse 7 to 2 John 2 verse 2*], then there is a feast in heaven [*Luke 15*].

On the other hand, if the choice is to persevere in the ways of iniquity, there is separation between the Spirit of God and this person.

Why that? The simple answer is that the Spirit of God cannot dwell in an infidel [*Acts 5 verse 32*], [*2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-16*], for he only lives in those who are faithful to the Lord.

Here is a concrete example: **"Now the Spirit of the Lord had left Saul, and an evil spirit sent from the Lord began to torment him"** [*1 Samuel 16 verset 14, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

Before continuing, it is important to consider the nature of this *"evil spirit"* sent by the Lord and which tormented Saul.

To do this, we will first identify, Bible in hand, what an *"evil spirit"* to do, we will read the following text in two different versions.

Here is the first version: "**[...] I asked your followers to force the evil spirit out, but they couldn't.**" [*Mark 9 verses 18, New Century Version Bible (NCV)*].

Here is the second version: "**[...] So I begged your disciples to cast out the demon, but they couldn't do it.**" [*Mark 9 verses 18, Living Bible (TLB)*].

In the first text the term "**evil spirit**" is used, while in the second it is the word "**demon**" which replaces it.

So it was the devil, therefore a demon, who was persecuting Saul. Before continuing, I know that some of you may have the feeling that I take them for simple minded, because it was implied that it was a demon who tormented Saul. But to those I would retort, that I cannot say things, if they are not supported by a: He is written in the Bible... !

Now that point is done, let's move on. The text specifies that this evil spirit which tormented Saul came from the Lord.

At this point, you are probably wondering, how can God send the devil to a person. To understand it, we need to read this:

*"It is actually reported [everywhere] that there is sexual immorality among you, a kind of immorality that is condemned even among the [unbelieving] Gentiles: That someone has [an intimate relationship with] his father's wife.*

*[...] In the name of our Lord Jesus, when you are assembled, and I am with you in spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus, you are to hand over this man to Satan for the destruction of his body, so that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus".* [*1 Corinthians 5 verses 1, 4-5, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

We understand from the above that he who becomes unfaithful to the Lord must be handed over to the devil, which is the same as God withdrawing his protective hand from him, and from then on, like the wounded man in the open sea who attracts sharks, so he will become the prey to demons.

Every child of God must be delivered to the devil at one time or another in order for his faith to be strengthened. This is what happened for Job [*Job 1*], [*Job 2*], but also for Jesus.

In the text of [*Luke 4 verses 1-13*], we see that it was not the demon who came of himself to Jesus, but it was the Spirit of God who brought him to the demon in order to that the latter can tempt it.

In [*1 Peter 5 verses 8-11*], we are presented with the sufferings that we, the people of God, must endure under the wrath of the devil, who watches us like a roaring and hungry lion, the goal being that we become unshakeable.

Nevertheless, although the Lord allows the devil to sift us, like the wheat [*Luke 22 verse 31*], there is no agreement between Him and the devil, for the Lord cannot be tempted by evil or practice it [*2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-16*], [*James 1 verses 13-15*], [*Psalms 5 verse 5*].

After these many digressions interspersed with biblical verses to better understand this complex context, let's come back to our subject.

We were at the mark of the beast explanation. It thus appears that all those who persevere in their iniquitous ways will lose the honor of being the temple of the Holy Spirit. They will thereby lose the seal of the Lord which they had obtained.

Here is what we are told, prophetically speaking: *"I spoke to you when you were at peace, but you said, "I will not listen." This has been your way since your youth. You have never listened to me. [...]*

**As I live, declares the Lord, even if you, Coniah son of Jehoiakim king of Judah, were a signet ring on my right hand, I would pull you off'**. [*Jeremiah 22 verse 21 and 24, Evangelical Heritage Version (EHV)*].

When the Lord gives his seal and iniquity is found in its bearer, he tears off said seal. Here it is a ring that it is about but it is also true for the seal of God which seals the people of God, because we have seen that the Holy Spirit is taken away from the infidels.

To give you a picture of this reality, I give you a strong image:

*Imagine a people who mark the forehead of their members – at the beginning of adulthood – with a seal that represents their values.*

*To do this – beware sensitive souls – they first heat a piece of metal (which has the seal symbol in relief) until it turns red.*

*Then, he applies it to the forehead of the person concerned, which leaves him, in his flesh, various small furrows which represent the patterns of the seal. We let it all heal and heal. Then comes the last phase, consisting of filling the small furrows with molten gold. The objective being that by drying it hardens and that thus the seal is perennial.*

*This seal is never to be removed, because it is embedded in the flesh of its wearer. However, if the latter commits a reprehensible act or deviates completely from the values advocated by his people, at the end of his judgment, the precious seal is bluntly torn from him.*

*This act, which could be considered barbaric, left him with the mark of the seal's withering, testimony to his "treachery" and his unsavory behavior.*

*Even when he has served his sentence, this indelible mark will be proof of his past that he will not be able to hide.*

This story of the withering that marks vile and perverted beings finds its reality in the Bible. To do this, let us rediscover, in three different versions, this already considered text.

Here is the first version: *"The Spirit speaks clearly that in the latter times some will depart from the faith, and will give heed to spirits of error, and to devilish teaching by those who speak falsely through hypocrisy, who have their consciences marked with an hot iron"* [1 Timothy 4 verses 1-2, New Matthew Bible (NMB)].

Here is the second version: *"But the Spirit expressly says that in the last days some will forsake the faith, to cling to deceitful spirits and to the doctrines of demons, through the hypocrisy of false teachers bearing the mark of withering in their hearts. own conscience"* [1 Timothy 4 verses 1-2, Bible Louis Segond (translated into English from the original text)].

Here is the third version:



*"But the [Holy] Spirit distinctly and expressly declares that in latter times some will turn away from the faith, giving attention to deluding and seducing spirits and doctrines that demons teach, through the hypocrisy and pretensions of liars whose consciences are seared (cauterized)" [1 Timothy 4 verse 1-2, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].*

I find it very exhilarating to be able to study a text in various versions, because it gives more latitude to a study.

By synthesizing these texts we learn that:

*Any doctrine which transgresses the word of God in order to establish the teachings of Man, is a doctrine of demon.*

*Those who do this are first and foremost teachers working among the people of God, and who have rebelled against the Lord and abandoned the faith.*

*As retribution for their iniquitous works of professing and teaching the so-called demon doctrines, they receive a withering mark. The latter is like a brand made with a hot iron and which would be cauterized. This mark is on their minds, therefore on their foreheads.*

The mark of the beast is therefore a symbol which represents the fact that the seal of God will be taken away from all those who will have denied it, this mark is none other than the wilting (*stigma*) which will remain to them from then on.

We have come a long way from the start together in this difficult to grasp universe, nevertheless I hope that what you have learned so far will have a definite impact on your life. We will not stop by not so good, we will now discover another reality, which is the *raison d'être* of each of the two marks that the beast leaves:

*On the hand or on the forehead.*

To introduce this new study, I would tell you that one of the contrasts between those who have the seal of God and those who receive the mark of the beast is the number of places where they are affixed:

*We have seen that the seal of God, intended to seal his people is placed only on the forehead of those who compose it [Revelation 9 verse 4], [Revelation 7 verses 2-3].*

*As for the mark of the beast, it is placed on the forehead, but also on the hand of the unrepentant [Revelation 13 verses 16-17], [Revelation 14 verse 9].*

In order to clarify what seems to be a mystery, Bible in hand, we will first study the mark of the beast which is placed on the hand.

Our first work will consist in understanding what the hand represents in prophetic language. To find out, let's read this: *"Thou hast a mighty arm : **Strong is thy hand, and high is thy right hand**". [Psalm 89 verse 13, King James Bible].*

Complétons avec ce deuxième texte : *"**The hand of the diligent shall bear rule : but the slothful shall be under tribute**". [Proverbs 12 verse 24, King James Bible].*

And finally let's have a look at this last text: *"His coming is as brilliant as the sunrise. **Rays of light flash from his hands, where his awesome power is hidden**". [Habakuk 3 verse 4, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)].*

The symbol of the hand represents the power of its owner. But it actually represents the deeds or work in a more general way.

Here is what the Holy Book tells us about it: *"Live joyfully with the wife whom thou lovest all the days of the life of thy vanity, which he hath given thee under the sun, all the days of thy vanity:*

*For that is thy portion in this life, and in thy labour which thou takest under the sun.*

**Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might ; For there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest". [Ecclesiastes 9 verses 9-10, King James Bible].**

Let's reflect on this supplementary text:

*"He becometh poor that dealeth with a slack hand :*

**But the hand of the diligent maketh rich".** [*Proverbs 10 verse 4, King James Bible*].

So the hand is the symbol of the holder's strength, work or deeds. Now that this symbol has been elucidated, in order to understand why only some of those who have the mark of the beast receive it on the hand, it is appropriate to return to what we have studied above and which presents what symbolizes a seal on the hand of a being human.

We have studied in [*Job 37 verses 5-7, Bible Louis Segond*], that at their birth, all human beings receive the seal of God on their hand, it is a sign that we are his creatures. This seal also represents the right that God has over us as the creator. The monument that the Lord has established in order to assert his right as the creator of mankind as well as of all living things is the Sabbath.

In [*Exodus 20 verses 8-11*], the Sabbath being the sign establishing the primacy of the Lord, over all mankind, as creator, all who do not keep him, thereby reject the Lord as such.

The seal of God as creator is then taken away from them and replaced by the mark of the beast, that of their new master.

It is appalling that statement, I know, especially for those who have a firm conviction that they are serving God.

However, a consolation, remember that the times of ignorance are not numbered and that from now on, as you know the truth, you can keep the Sabbath and glorify the Lord. To continue, I will illustrate this terrible reality by giving you an example but a clarification, however, I do not compare you to of cattle:

*Imagine that you live in the days of the wild west, which one finds in the good old westerns, and that you are a big landowner and a rancher. You just bought ten thousand head of cattle from your neighbor and they still bear his seal.*

*In order to avoid possible problems if one of these animals, which you have just bought, escapes from your enclosure, you will mark them all with your seal.*

*To do this you will affix it over that of their former owner, the objective being to erase his own.*

*By analogy, those who reject the Lord as their creators, by refusing to honor Him as such by keeping the Sabbath, will lose his seal of the creator, which he had placed on their hand, and will inherit this infamous mark of the beast. The mark on the hand represents the mark left by the seal of God which is taken away from those who do not revere the Lord by recognizing and worshiping him as their creator.*

*Thus, this mark will be on the hand of all those, who have not made a spiritual choice to reject the Lord, but who have chosen to live "without God" and according to the way of this world, without recognizing that the Lord has creative right over them.*

*They have chosen to trust in their strength and in the wealth that their hands or their influence have allowed them to amass in this world to the detriment of God's Word.*

*Because of their life based on love of the world they become God's enemies and servants of the devil, who is the one who dominates over the world [James 4 verse 4], [1 John 5 verse 19].*

To continue, let's move on now to those who will receive the mark of the beast on their foreheads. To fully understand the wearing of this mark, we must first of all come back to the seal of God.

To do this, let us remember that the seal of God is materialized by his name and that of his son, which are placed on the foreheads of the faithful people of God.

For the record these two names, that of God and that of Jesus Christ, which are the foundations of the seal of God represent the commandments of the Lord and the testimony of Jesus Christ. Those who receive this seal respect these two points.

Conversely, those who adopt the teachings distilled by the beast, which is at the service of the devil, therefore who practices demon doctrines, as we have seen, receive a mark and not a seal. All those who practice the teachings of the beast therefore receive its mark.

These are primarily Satanists, those who practice voodoo, black magic, witchcraft, auguries, and astrology, those who summon the dead, and all those who deliberately choose to worship the devil by practicing the occult arts. These things the Lord forbids them because they are an abomination before him and are, among others, presented to us in [*Deuteronomy 18 verses 9-14*].

All those working in this way will receive the mark of the beast on their forehead. What is to be deplored is that it will also be the lot of cough those who think they have a personal relationship with God but do not act in accordance with his will, in particular by not observing the Sabbath which is the memorial that establishes that God is our creator.

Since the forehead is the symbol of our beliefs and actions, that is why the mark of the beast will also be placed there.

This mark placed at this place designates those who have chosen to transgress the word of God to practice pernicious doctrines of men and will, as we have already seen, be struck by a "*power (Sprit) of deception*" leading to perdition [*2 Thessalonians 2 verses 9-12*].

In the chapter "*The purpose of the message of the second angel of the apocalypse*" we saw the connection between this spirit of delusion and the philosophy of Babylon.

Thus all those who practice doctrines which are in opposition to the word of God, one set up doctrines of demon and are part of Babylon which is not a place but a system of thought.

Those who reject the Lord in order to be able to practice their religious customs and traditions, are part of Babylon and will receive a mark on their forehead, confirming their choice, the mark of the beast.

So, when we take the time to consider the three angels message, we realize that in fact it is one message in three branches.

In doing so, those who accept the second angel's message and come out of Babylon will be safe from the mark of the beast.

On the other hand, all those who will continue to practice iniquitous doctrines and precepts which transgress the word of God, will be branded with a hot iron by the mark of rebellion against God, that of the beast.

To continue I would say to you that it is important not to lose sight of the fact that the Seal of God is the symbol which represents that the Spirit of God seals the spirit of the servants of the Lord, and reserves them those who are faithful to God for eternal life.

This mark, that of the beast, being also spiritual, therefore represents the spirit of bewilderment that the unrepentant receive from their disobedience to the Lord. All those who will have rejected the Lord will receive it and their finality being their condemnation and their final bath in the fire of hell.

It is vital to understand that when one chooses to transgress the law of God, therefore to commit sin, one becomes, willy-nilly, servants and children of the devil [*1 John 3 verses 8-12*], [*John 8 verse 44*].

In these texts we find that through their transgressions of the Word of God, surprising as it may seem, the Pharisees – who were however the elite of the people of God – became the servants and the children of the devil. It was the same for Caïen who nevertheless was born of a noble line.

We need to understand that there is a separation between God and us, when we become unfaithful, when the Spirit of God cannot live in us [*Isaiah 59 verses 1-2*], [*2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-16*], [*Matthew 7 verses 21-23*].

We therefore draw as a conclusion from his various verses that there can be no link between God and the infidels. In doing so, even if we work with power during our life for the Lord, while transgressing his word and especially his holy law, on the great day of the return of Jesus Christ we will be rejected by him. It is appalling but those who act like this, the Lord God says he does not know them!

So in the case of the mark of the beast on the forehead, all those who, being consecrated children of God, rebel against him, and practice and teach pernicious doctrines will lose the right to bear the seal of God.

This reality is especially true for those who while claiming the name of the Lord reject his holy Sabbath, for he who transgresses one commandment of the law has transgressed them all [*James 2 verses 8-13*].

Thus, since the Lord's commandments, His holy law, are one of the two keys to the divine seal, all those who do not keep the Sabbath – the fourth of the Ten Commandments – make themselves ineligible for God's sealing of having His law written on their hearts (*minds*), the verses quoted in support of this have amply emphasised.

Having rejected the Sabbath, and by extension the Lord as Creator, they reject the glory due to it. Therefore, the seal of God which is formed, as we have already seen, among others, of his holy law, cannot be kept on their foreheads.

In doing so, it will be torn from them and only the wilting left by the seal will remain, therefore the mark of the beast.

The most tragic of the story is that of "*good*" Christians, will have glorified, without their knowledge, the enemy of our souls, therefore Satan, by practicing these doctrines and will receive this mark on their foreheads, symbol of their spiritual acceptances, of all that contravenes the word of God and especially his law.

We have also seen it through the various biblical texts used, to act thus amounts to worshiping the creature in place of the creator, because they glorify, the little horn which established the laws desecrating the Sabbath, therefore the law of God.

For more information, you can refer to the *volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled "*Sunday as a day of rest for the glory of "the Eternal God" or of the "sun god"*". It is important to remember that, we have already seen that the Catholic Church to fulfill the prophecy of the little horn which in the Bible is the servant of the devil.

It is important to note that it is never without consequence that we worship the mortal creature, to the detriment of the eternal God our creator, this is what we are told in [*Romans 1 verses 18-30*].

We discover here, that those who, while knowing the word of God, choose to transgress it in order to glorify the creature – therefore Man (*their doctrines*) and by extension Satan – are before God worse than the pagans who do not know the Lord. This text teaches us about this and we can draw the following conclusion :

*Those who have knowledge of the word of God and who does not glorify the Lord are inexcusable and they will have to pay the price.*

As part of the third angel's message, it will be to receive the mark of the beast which is the ticket to enter to be thrown into the lake of fire.

It is important, at this stage, to understand the difference which exists between the sealing that God puts in place in the last days of this world and that of the beast, therefore of Satan.

As we have seen, the seal of God, representing his new covenant which He makes with us in Jesus Christ, is only affixed on the foreheads of His children, whereas on the contrary the mark of the beast, therefore of Satan is found both on the hand and on the forehead of his followers.

The difference between these two seals lies in the management mode of these two masters who dominate the world:

The difference between these two seals lies in the way of management of these two masters who dominate the world, so, to serve the Lord we must make a free choice. We must first study God's Word so that it touches our hearts [*Romans 10 verses 8-11*].

Then we must believe this word and then make the decision to be baptised [*Mark 16 verses 15-16*].

Before being baptised we must make our confession of faith where we recognise the Lord as our personal Saviour, as the Ethiopian eunuch did [*Acts 8 verses 26-39*] and only then do we become God's children.

*The Lord Jesus does not force anyone to follow Him.*

He does not violate our consciences, but stands at the door of our hearts (*minds*) and knocks [*Revelation 3 verse 20*].

If we agree to let Him in, by His grace He grants us the possibility of becoming God's children.

It is a conscious decision and a commitment of a good conscience [*1 Peter 3 verse 21*], which leads us to bind ourselves to the Lord.

Since we become God's children without any of our actions being considered or being able to get in the way, that is why the forehead is the only place where the Lord puts His seal on His children, as a sign of their voluntary adherence to His Word!

Before going any further, I want to inform you that it is vital for me to tell you to pay attention to the type of baptism you receive!



Some religions have perverted the sacrament of baptism, and some have ended up selling souls to the devil through their baptistries.

The worst thing in this matter is that here I am not talking about the Catholic Church, which as we know practices baptism by sprinkling, which does not conform to the word of God, but it is of a Protestant religion which is well established.

It sounds incredible but I have developed, Bible in hand, an argument that proves it in the *volume IV* of this book in the chapters entitled "*Discover the churches that commit the sins of Babylon and sell you to the devil through their satanic baptisms*" and "*The fateful choices of the precocious fledgling*".

Let us return to our study. Satan despises the freedom of human beings. He is a jailer [*Hebrews 2 verses 14-15*] who keeps captive in his nets anyone who is not bound to Jesus Christ or anyone from God's people who is unfaithful to the Lord [*1 John 5 verses 18-19*].

In doing so, these two kinds of marks of the beast, which will be affixed on the forehead or on the hand, will concern those who, like the Satanists, have deliberately chosen to serve the demon, or those who have chosen to reject the Lord and that spiritually or not.

Here is the fate that will be reserved for those who know the Lord and deny him: **"If anyone sins deliberately by rejecting the Savior after knowing the truth of forgiveness, this sin is not covered by Christ's death; there is no way to get rid of it.**

**There will be nothing to look forward to but the terrible punishment of God's awful anger, which will consume all his enemies.** *A man who refused to obey the laws given by Moses was killed without mercy if there were two or three witnesses to his sin.*

**Think how much more terrible the punishment will be for those who have trampled underfoot the Son of God and treated his cleansing blood as though it were common and unhallowed, and insulted and outraged the Holy Spirit who brings God's mercy to his people. For we know him who said, "Justice belongs to me;**

**I will repay them"; Who also said, "The Lord himself will handle these cases."** It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God". [*Hebrews 10 verses 26-31, Living Bible (TLB)*].

Those who, after knowing the truth, turn away from it will no longer be able to receive forgiveness, for it is the flames of hell that await them if they do not repent in time.

Indeed, we must realize that the door of grace that was manifested in Jesus Christ will not remain open forever.

In doing so, there will come a time when Christ will no longer be our intercessor, so he who is holy will continue to be so and so will he who is not and who is called "*defiled*" [Revelation 22 verses 11-12].

We are, still as I write this book, in a time when the grace of God is still manifest because the truth of the message of the three angels is not yet known to all. Thus, the Lord earnestly wishes to forgive all their times of ignorance where his word, especially his holy law and prophecy have been transgressed.

Here is what the Lord wants and promises: **"In the past, people did not understand God, and he ignored this [or God overlooked such times of ignorance]. But now, God tells [commands] all people in the world to change their hearts and lives [repent].**

*[Because] God has set [fixed; established] a day that he will judge all the world with fairness [righteousness], by the man he chose [appointed] long ago. And God has proved [or given assurance of] this to everyone by raising that man from the dead!" [Acts 17 verses 30-31, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

Once you have this knowledge, you will no longer be able to argue about your ignorance, that is the goal of this book. Therefore, your choice will determine your eternal becoming.

All those who will not be ready will be like the mad virgin and will not be able to claim to be saved. On this day, do not see any presumption on my part, while being unknown, I feel this duty to make a call to you, like that which God made to his people through Moses: "*Moses saw that the people were acting wildly [out of control].*

*Aaron had let them get out of control [act wildly] and become fools [the object of slander] in front of their enemies.*

**So Moses stood at the entrance [gate] to the camp and said, "Let anyone who wants to follow [Whoever is for] the LORD come to me."**

*And all the people from the family of [sons of] Levi gathered around Moses". [Exodus 32 verses 25-26, Expanded Bible (EXB)].*

On this day, I feel that the hour is serious, you must take your stand for the Lord, for his holy law and for prophecy. If you have not yet acquired all the convictions to do so, plunge back into the Holy Word.

This book that you have in your hands is also a good complement of study, as well as the first volumes of this book that I have already presented to you, they will help you, because I have enamelled them with biblical verses to facilitate your task.

You will understand that this study does not come from my own words but that they all come from the Bible. You need to realize that your salvation is at stake when you reject the law, especially the Sabbath, as well as prophecy, made up of dreams and visions.

By doing this it is the divine sacrifice of Jesus Christ, as well as the new covenant that the Lord makes to us in his son that you despise and that you reject.

As we have seen, this new covenant consists in the fact that the Holy Spirit can engrave in the hearts of the children of God his law and the faith of Jesus – the prophecy which is materialized by the new directives which he gives us by the Holy Spirit in dreams and visions –.

Those who reject these two seal of the Lord, which are the law and the prophecy, will have to face the wrath of God which will be applied without the filter of the mercy of Jesus being able to lessen the punishment.

In doing so, it is a dreadful thing to be among those who will receive God's vengeance as well as the retribution reserved for those who forsaken Him. The different elements developed in this part are crucial for our salvation.

Indeed, the two seals of God made up of his Holy Law – especially his fourth commandment asking to keep the Sabbath – and prophecy are the two axes of the Word of God for which the demon works to cover their tracks and even put in place specific plans to achieve this, we have already specified.

I have developed arguments on the law and the Sabbath, as well as on prophecy, of course with supporting Bible verses, throughout this book as well as in its *volume II*.

## 16.2 The prophetic reality that hides behind the symbols “buy” and “sell”

To begin this part I would say that the subject we are going to study here, has already been the subject of much ink, through the centuries, and this is easily understood because it is said that we can neither buy nor sell if we do not have the mark of the beast.

A large majority of those who speak about it presents this reality as a chip that America and Europe would implant in one of our hands and which would transform us into a contactless credit card.

Thus, according to this thesis, without this chip, no one will no longer be able to buy or sell, which, for sure, is a symbol of dearth and famine to come for all those who refuse the implantation of this chip.

If we do not attach ourselves to the Word of God and to it alone, we risk wandering, letting it distil in our minds that seems of truth orchestrated by our subtle enemy, the devil.

Remember how he seduced Eve, or attempted to seduce Jesus, by acting thus using a mixture of truth in which he instituted his precepts.

In the chapter entitled *"The reality of prophetic times"* I demonstrated, Bible in hand, how the devil, for centuries, let theologians believe, and by extension, to Christendom, that the times that had to be changed by the small Horn were those of the calendar when in reality, these are those of the prophecy.

The same applies to the reality that one cannot buy or sell without being branded with the mark of the beast. Let us now discover the true meaning of these two symbols *"to sell"* and *"to buy"*. Before going into the heart of the matter, I think it is important to make a point.

The complexity of these themes *"Buy"* and *"Sell"* has been exposed to me by a friend. While I had already completed the writing of this part, I made her read and she pointed out when she could not make the direct link between the terms *"buy"* and *"sell"* and the bases of salvation established in Jesus.

His misunderstanding came from the fact that she thought these symbols were to apply in a literal way.

It is indeed a mistake to seek to interpret prophetic symbols in a literal way, it always ends up leading to *"errating"*.

The following text is an example:

*"Then the Jews retorted, "What sign (attesting miracle) can You show us as [proof of] your authority for doing these things?"*

**Jesus answered them, "Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up."** *Then the Jews replied, "It took forty-six years to build this temple, and You will raise it up in three days?" But He was speaking of the temple which was His body". [John 2 verses 18-21, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

Here Jesus presents a prophecy, who had to be realized by his death and his resurrection, but those who heard him, considered his words textually and they have, therefore, could not understand him.

In this biblical context, the meaning of a text or prophecy does not find its *raison d'être* in word for word.

To grasp the meaning, decryption is necessary, as would be for a rebus. Thus, the first pieces (*words*) to be found are always the most difficult, the last ones *"take advantage of the lights of the first"*. So the more we have discovered elements, the more the mystery dissipates in order to let the truth hatch.

It is the same for the message of the third apocalyptic angel. These reflections of the most relevant of my friend, allowed me to realize that to better understand this topic of *"selling"* and *"to buy"*, it was necessary to make a return on notions already explained.

So I added to this part, the short summary that follows. Thus we have seen that these spiritual symbols that represent the beast mark and the seal of God should not be interpreted literally.

Clearly, it is the work of salvation manifested in Jesus Christ, some will accept it and receive the seal of God, others will reject it and inherit the brand of the beast.

It is important to note that in [*Apocalypse 13 verses 15-17*], it is specified that without the mark of the beast no can not buy or sell. Thus these two symbols of sell and buy, have no reason to be without that of the mark of the beast.

The latter representing the sealing of the impeniteents, the other two can also only cover a spiritual dimension. If I had to find a common denominator for all these symbols we just saw, I would say that the central point is the word *"salvation"*.

All these symbols present one and the same event, the sealing, spiritual of the two peoples, that of God and that of the demon.

Now that we have been able to put most of the pieces of this puzzle in place, we can continue our study one step at a time.

To do this we can come to the purpose of the symbols "*sell*" and "*buy*", which as we have seen, are directly related to the work of salvation manifested in Christ.

This automatically negates the literal meanings of "*sell*" and "*buy*" used by some doctrines. To present you with the reality inherent in these two terms, I would say that in life, the type of product that is sold determines where it is sold:

**Example:** *Vegetables will largely be sold in a market, whereas masterboards will usually be sold in a gallery.*

*In addition, the place of sale, determines for two articles of the same species their values and the type of acquirers can potentially buy them: Thus, consider a cars auction.*

*The chosen place will not be the same for the resale of cars that have been used by a rental agency only for the one for the luxury car fleet of a billionaire.*

*However, for these "buy" and "sell" symbols of our study, I would say that these funds are available, and it is not our good old nerve of the war, which is money, that we are talking about, because let's remember, is of salvation that is at stake.*

We arrive there, to understand the link that exists between "*buy*" and "*sell*" on the one hand and salvation, on the other hand, we must take into account this text:

**"The Lord says, "Come, everyone who is thirsty — here is water! Come, you that have no money — buy grain and eat! Come! Buy wine and milk — it will cost you nothing! Why spend money on what does not satisfy?"**

**Why spend your wages and still be hungry? Listen to me and do what I say, and you will enjoy the best food of all.**

*"Listen now, my people, and come to me; come to me, and you will have life! I will make a lasting covenant with you and give you the blessings I promised to David". [Isaiah 55 verses 1-3, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)].*

In order to fully understand this last text, which describes the symbols of buying for free, which also implies selling for free, we must refer to the covenant made by the Lord with David and which we find in this text. This is what it was all about:

*"And we are bringing you the good news of the promise made to our fathers (ancestors), that God has completely fulfilled this promise to our children by raising up Jesus, as it is also written in the second Psalm, 'You are My Son;*

**Today I have begotten (fathered) You.'** And [as for the fact] that He raised Him from the dead, never again to return to decay [in the grave], He has spoken in this way:

**'I will give you the holy and sure blessings of David [those blessings and mercies that were promised to him].'** For this reason He also says in another Psalm, **'You will not allow Your Holy One to see decay.'**

*For David, after he had served the purpose of God in his own generation, fell asleep and was buried among his fathers and experienced decay [in the grave]; but He whom God raised [to life] did not experience decay [in the grave].*

**So let it be clearly known by you, brothers, that through Him forgiveness of sins is being proclaimed to you"** [Acts 13 verses 32-38, *Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

In considering these texts, we realize that the term *"buy"* – and by extension that of *"sell"* – are closely linked with the plan of salvation that has been acted in Jesus. In the text of [Isaiah 55 verses 1-3], the most important term is *"buy free"*. We realize it, these two realities are antinomic, if we consider them in their literal senses.

Indeed, buying means paying, if the acquisition is free, it has the character of donation. We can not buy free because this action requires a counterpart financial (*money*) or other (*barter, gold, precious stones...*).

This term is very real, because this is what Jesus does by offering us salvation for free. Nevertheless, salvation was not free, and I would even say far from it, because its cost was pharamineux! We shall see!

To present this reality, I would call back that if Jesus had to redeem ourselves, it was because there was a fateful day where a meeting was between Adam and Eve and the snake [*Genesis 3*].

Before continuing, it seemed important to me to demonstrate by the Word of God that the serpent who seduced Eve was none other than Satan, because often we know it implicitly but let us specify it by these texts which we find in [*Genesis 3 verses 14-15*], [*Romans 16 verse 20*].

In the first text, it is reported on the curse that the Lord has decreed against the snake and in the second, this curse is presented as before falling on Satan. He is therefore the ancient serpent, who was a murderer from the beginning [*Revelation 12 verse 9*], [*John 8 verse 44*].

To continue, I would say that it is an unnamed tragedy that is played between the three protagonists of the Eden! The main actor of this scene is not the one that could be supposed.

It is neither Eve nor the snake that have in their hands the salvation of humanity, but it is Adam. Although Eve sinned first, the sin is named after her husband, for he was the repository of God's authority and the leader of the human race.

His wife was a helper placed at his side. That is why this greedy act with its iniquitous fragrance is called Adam's sin, even though he was not the first to bite into the forbidden fruit. By his action of eating this fruit, Adam sinned and here is the sanction that has been inflicted on him as well as to all humanity: **"For the wages of sin is death [...]"** [*Romans 6 verse 23, King James Bible*].

Complete with this: **"Therefore as sin came into the world through one man and death through sin, so death has spread to all men, because all have sinned. [...]"**

*Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of Adam's sin [...]*

*The gift is not like the result that came through the one who sinned. For the judgment from one sin led to condemnation"* [*Romans 5 verses 12, 14, 16, Modern English Version Bible (MEV)*].



By agreeing to eat the fruit Adam and Eve gave themselves up as captives to the one who held the keys of death, namely the devil.

This informs us about this: **"So then, as the children share in flesh and blood, He likewise took part in these, so that through death He might destroy him who has the power of death, that is, the devil"** [*Hebrews 2 verse 14, Modern English Version Bible (MEV)*].

By accepting to eat this Adam fruit has without the knowledge put into action certain biblical realities that he did not control and which are presented in this text:

**"Do you not know that to whom you yield yourselves as slaves to obey, you are slaves of the one whom you obey [...]"** [*Romans 6 verses 16, Modern English Version Bible (MEV)*].

This also informs us: **"[...] For we are slaves of anything that has conquered us"**. [*2 Peter 2 verse 19, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)*].

Thus, the one who is defeated by an opponent becomes his slave. In doing so, when Eve succumbed to the seductive words of the snake and ate the fruit, she was defeated by him and became his slave.

Adam, meanwhile, accepting to listen to his wife's voice – who herself was under the influence of the snake – and eating the fruit, was defeated by Satan.

The repercussion is that, by becoming his slave, he has also subjected all his descendants (*thus all humanity*) to him.

By his act Adam sold himself to the devil and also sold us, just as a person would sell himself and his family as slaves.

This text presents this reality: *"We know that the Law is spiritual. But I am merely a human, and I have been sold as a slave to sin"*. [*Romans 7 verse 14, Contemporary English Version (CEV)*].

This notion of *"been sold as a slave to sin"* and thus to the devil, which presents a deliberate act by which one chooses to become the slave of a third person, may seem abstract nowadays, but it existed in the reality biblical. Here's how she manifested itself:

**"And if a stranger or sojourner with thee be waxed rich, and thy brother be waxed poor beside him, and sell himself unto the stranger or sojourner with thee, or to the stock of the stranger's family; After that he is sold he may be redeemed:**

**One of his brethren may redeem him; Or his uncle, or his uncle's son, may redeem him, or any that is nigh of kin unto him of his family may redeem him; Or if he be waxed rich, he may redeem himself.**

*And he shall reckon with him that bought him from the year that he sold himself to him unto the year of jubilee: And the price of his sale shall be according unto the number of years;*

**According to the time of a hired servant shall he be with him. If there be yet many years, according unto them he shall give back the price of his redemption out of the money that he was bought for. And if there remain but few years unto the year of jubilee, then he shall reckon with him;**

**unto his years shall he give back the price of his redemption.**

*As a servant hired year by year shall he be with him: he shall not rule with rigor over him in thy sight.*

*And if he be not redeemed by these means, then he shall go out in the year of jubilee, he, and his children with him". [Lévétique 25 versets 47-54, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

It is important to emphasise that only a member of the family could redeem the one or ones who became a slave or slaves. Since humanity has become the slave of the devil, the same reality of redeem that is presented here applies to salvation, and this notion is even essential.

In doing so, only a close relative of Adam could redeem humanity, since we had been sold to the devil by Adam to become his slaves.

So an angel could not redeem humanity. God Himself could not redeem us from heaven, it was necessary to have a filiation for the redemption to be effective and legal. It was also necessary that the one who would come should be able to settle Adam's debt by paying the price established in the law for sin, which was death.

Moreover, when Adam sold himself as a slave to the devil (*to sin*), he received nothing in return, for he sold himself free of charge.

The redemption was also to be free, *neither silver nor gold nor any other human currency could be offered* as a counterpart to the devil so that he could set us free.

Here seemed to be a most thorny problem, for with all this in mind, no descendant of Adam could meet all these requirements, so neither God, nor an angel, nor a man could negotiate the redemption of humanity with Satan.

The only solution that remained was to pay the price that the law asked for sin, either death, and the one who had to realize this transaction could only be a direct descendant of Adam.

In addition, it had to be itself without sin, otherwise it should tirelessly, renew the sacrifice.

*That's what was happening with sacrificial animals.*

Therefore, for the redemption of mankind, there was no human currency that could meet the requirement of the Law and satisfy the devil. In order that all these terms could be fulfilled, the following was agreed upon:

**"For you know that you were not redeemed from your useless [spiritually unproductive] way of life inherited [by tradition] from your forefathers with perishable things like silver and gold, but [you were actually purchased] with precious blood, like that of a [sacrificial] lamb unblemished and spotless, the priceless blood of Christ.**

*For He was foreordained (foreknown) before the foundation of the world, but has appeared [publicly] in these last times for your sake" [1 Peter 1 verses 18-20, Amplified Bible (AMP)].*

Complete with this second text: **"Indeed, let this attitude be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus. Indeed, let this attitude be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.**

**Though he was by nature God, he did not consider equality with God as a prize to be displayed, but he emptied himself by taking the nature of a servant.**

**When he was born in human likeness, and his appearance was like that of any other man, he humbled himself and became obedient to the point of death — even death on a cross.**

*Therefore God also highly exalted him and gave him the name that is above every name, so that at the name of Jesus every knee will bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father".*

*[Philippians 2 verses 5-11, Evangelical Heritage Version Bible (EHV)].*

This text is also a good complement: **"The Law of Moses is like a shadow of the good things to come. This shadow isn't the good things themselves, because it cannot free people from sin by the sacrifices that are offered year after year.**

*If there were worshipers who already have their sins washed away and their consciences made clear, there would not be any need to go on offering sacrifices.*

**But the blood of bulls and goats cannot take away sins. It only reminds people of their sins from one year to the next.**

*When Christ came into the world, he said to God, "Sacrifices and offerings are not what you want, but you have given me my body.*

*No, you are not pleased with animal sacrifices and offerings for sin." Then Christ said, "And so, my God, I have come to do what you want, as the Scriptures say." The Law teaches that offerings and sacrifices must be made because of sin.*

**But why did Christ mention these things and say that God did not want them? Well, it was to do away with offerings and sacrifices and to replace them.**

**That is what he meant by saying to God, "I have come to do what you want." So we are made holy because Christ obeyed God and offered himself once for all".**

*The priests do their work each day, and they keep on offering sacrifices that can never take away sins. But Christ offered himself as a sacrifice that is good forever. Now he is sitting at God's right side, and he will stay there until his enemies are put under his power.*

**By his one sacrifice he has forever set free from sin the people he brings to God".** *[Hebrews 10 verses 1-14, Contemporary English Version Bible (CEV)].*

Thus it was necessary for the Son of God, who is God Himself, to take life in Mary, so that by becoming human He could claim to redeem humanity where Adam had sold himself to the devil and to sin.

From that moment on, the redemption could take place and humanity was redeemed at the highest possible price, through the blood and death of the Son of God on that foul cross.

This is what the Holy Book tells us about this: **"For if by one man's trespass death reigned through him, then how much more will those who receive abundance of grace and the gift of righteousness reign in life through the One, Jesus Christ.**

**Therefore just as through the trespass of one man came condemnation for all men, so through the righteous act of One came justification of life for all men. For just as through one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, so by the obedience of One the many will be made righteous.**

*But the law entered, so that sin might increase, but where sin increased, grace abounded much more, so that just as sin reigned in death, grace might reign through righteousness unto eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord". [Romans 5 verses 17-21, Modern English Version Bible (MEV)].*

We therefore understand that having been sold free of charge, the redemption could only be free. To do this Jesus had to pay the price that the law asked for knowing death. Here is what we can read about this: **"For thus saith the Lord: You were sold gratis, and you shall be redeemed without money". [Isaiah 52 verse 3, Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition Bible (DRA)].**

Complete with this other text: **"Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: Cursed is everyone who is hung on a pole". [Galatians 3 verses 13, New International Version Bible – UK (NIVUK)].**

The precious blood of Christ, he the Son of God who is himself God, was the supreme price that the the repurchase of humanity cost. So salvation is free in Christ, in the sense that we do not have to pay, but in reality it has not been free because it has already been paid by the divine blood of Jesus.

In doing so, those who enter the plan of salvation get it by grace that has been manifested in Jesus Christ and for which they have had nothing to pay. Here's how this reality is presented to us:

**"But God, being rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, even when we were dead through our trespasses, made us alive together with Christ (by grace have ye been saved), and raised us up with him, and made us to sit with him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus:**

*That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus: for by grace have ye been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not of works, that no man should glory.*

*For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God afore prepared that we should walk in them". [Ephesians 2 verses 4-10, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

As you can see, plans have been set up by God and by his son Jesus Christ, who are omniscient, well before the foundation of the world – so long before the sin enters our universe – so that Jesus can redeem humanity for free. *And that once and all!*

Thus, the symbols "*to buy*" or "*to sell*" are most interesting; They represent the basis of salvation that has been manifested in Jesus Christ and who is bought for free and by extension is also sold free.

We were sold into sin, and therefore each of us was condemned to pay the price which is death.

But Christ bought us back, accepting to die in our place. In doing so, he left a blank check that may be presented by those who wish it for free membership to salvation, remember, if it is needed, that salvation is not really free, because already acquitted by Jesus.

From now on, those who want to buy free salvation must endorse the blank check that Christ has left us and, to do this, they must be baptized [Acts 2 verses 38-39], [Marc 16 verse 16].

Let's take an image that for me illustrates the reality of salvation; Imagine that we hers from a big check with an impressive number of zeros after the head figure so that it looks like a rare pearl necklace.

This check is intended to pay all our debts and allow us to live as a prince. Thus is the salvation manifested in Jesus Christ.

*He signed a blank check for us, he has, at the cost of his life, acquitted that of salvation for all.*

This check of salvation can not become valid only once deposited in the bank of the sky, because so that the price of the divine sacrifice of Christ is credited to us, we must cash it by accepting Jesus by baptism.

It is by the baptism that we make alliance in Jesus with God and that we therefore acquire the eternal life that is in him.

Salvation is sold freely to all mankind, Jesus having already paid for it beforehand for us, allowing us to live in him in newness of life.

Salvation is sold free, it is necessary that there are sellers who realize this transaction. In doing so, the place of predilection for this trade can only be situated within the people of God, for it is to its church that the Lord gives to sale free salvation to humanity.

Those summoned to do this work of "*selling salvation*" are consecrated men established among God's people.

Here is how their work is described: "*And if he refuse to hear them, tell it unto the church: And if he refuse to hear the church also, let him be unto thee as the Gentile and the publican.*

**Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven".** [Matthew 18 verses 17-18, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

For greater clarity I find it interesting to discover this text in another version: "*If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the Church.*

*If he refuses to even listen to the Church, regard him as you would a pagan or a tax collector.*

**Really, I assure you, all those whom you exclude on earth will have been excluded in the sight of God and all those whom you welcome on earth will have been welcomed in the sight of God."** [Matthew 18 verses 17-18, Bible Semeur (translated into English from the original text)].

*Since salvation has already been paid for by Jesus Christ, it can be bought and sold for free and those who sell it in this way are the consecrated men who have been established over God's people.*

Here is how salvation is obtained in Christ – and therefore how it is bought for free: **"And Peter said unto them, Repent ye, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ unto the remission of your sins; and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.**

*For to you is the promise, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call unto him". [Acts 2 verses 38-39, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

It is through baptism that salvation is bought and sold. To keep our image of the big cheque, the one who is baptised presents the cheque that Jesus Christ has left for him and the one who baptises him receives this cheque and deposits it in the *"bank of heaven"*.

The transaction is as simple as a barter, one gives one thing (*his life of sin*) and one receives in return a new life, that of Christ. Thus, once linked to Jesus, one becomes one with him [*Hebrews 3 verse 14*].

Here we have the *"normal"* basis for handling the trade of the (*free*) sale and purchase of salvation, but this transaction can be altered, as one can have the cheque and it may not be in a condition to be accepted by the bank in the sky.

Let us return to our example. Imagine that the cheque is inadvertently left in the pocket of a piece of clothing that is going through the washing machine and it comes out as mush.

**Question:** *what happens to the fortune that was written on that big cheque?*

*Can you present the mush to the banker, arguing that it was a big cheque with lots and lots of zeros? Of course not!*

It is the same with salvation, this transaction may not be accepted by the Lord because of a formal defect.



To understand this, we must return to the reality of baptism [*Mark 16 verse 16*].

The one who will believe and will be baptized will become a child of God in whom the Spirit of God lives and guides [*Acts 2 verses 38-39*], [*Romans 8 verses 15-17*], [*1 Corinthians 6 verse 19*], [*1 Corinthians 2 verses 6-16*].

From then on the demon can not touch it, and that as long as it will keep itself by remaining faithful to the Lord [*1 John 5 verses 18*].

To others who have rejected the Lord they will not be saved.

This he remains individually a man or an "*animal*" woman who will have for the purpose of participating in the big community bath, where brand guests are invited, *Satan, the demons, the bestial lamb, the seven-headed beast and ten horns, etc.*

In summary, it appears from the various biblical texts presented that to be saved, it must be baptized but it is only a stage, because it is also necessary for the Holy Spirit to be received. It is only for this condition that baptism seals for eternal life.

Let's review this reality by reading this: "***And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption***". [*Ephesians 4 verse 30, King James Bible*].

In [*Acts 2 verses 38-39*], it appears that one of the realities of baptism is that our sin is forgiven when we receive the Holy Spirit.

This other text is much more explicit: "*And the Holy Spirit also beareth witness to us;*

*For after he hath said, this is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord:*

**I will put my laws on their heart, and upon their mind also will I write them; Then saith he, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.**

**Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holy place by the blood of Jesus, by the way which he dedicated for us, a new and living way, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; and having a great priest over the house of God;**

*Let us draw near with a true heart in fulness of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience: and having our body washed with pure water" [Hebrews 10 verses 15-22, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].*

Here the basis of the covenant that God makes in Jesus with those who will bind themselves to him through pure water cleansed of an evil conscience – here is the basis of baptism again – is that the Holy Spirit can write his law in their hearts.

It should be remembered that prophecy too is written in the hearts of those who make a covenant with Christ and both, law and prophecy, form the seals of God and of Christ.

It is therefore the ultimate goal of baptism, that the law of God and prophecy be inscribed in the heart of the newly baptized, all who do not receive them cannot be sealed. If the law of God is not written in the heart, sins cannot be forgiven, therefore the Spirit of God cannot bind itself to such a person.

The reason is obvious, it is quite simply that the Lord cannot ally himself with evil, with sin, or with infidels [2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-16], [James 1 verses 13-15], [Psalms 5 verse 5].

Furthermore, the Holy Spirit cannot dwell in an infidel, for it is only given to those who are faithful to the Lord.

Here is what we can read about it: *"And we are witnesses of these things; and so is the Holy Spirit, whom God has bestowed on those who obey Him."* [Acts 5 verse 32, Amplified Bible (AMP)].

Any baptism which is contracted without the law and prophecy being at the center of the teachings received, cannot be approved by the Lord. Anyone who practices human doctrines that he associates with the Word of God cancels that Word.

Here is a concrete example of this reality: **"You put aside God's command and obey human teachings."** And Jesus continued, **"You have a clever way of rejecting God's law in order to uphold your own teaching."**

*For Moses commanded, 'Respect your father and your mother,' and, 'If you curse your father or your mother, you are to be put to death.'*

*But you teach that if people have something they could use to help their father or mother, but say, 'This is Corban' (which means, it belongs to God), they are excused from helping their father or mother.*

**In this way the teaching you pass on to others cancels out the word of God. [...]"** [*Mark 7 verses 8-13, Good News Translation Bible (GNT)*].

In this text we discover that the doctrines of men – here it is a precept that was orchestrated to justify not honouring parents, but it can be any doctrine that contravenes the Holy Scriptures – nullify the word of God.

I want to stress that what is canceled is not the word of God itself, because it is eternal [*1 Peter 1 verse 23-25*].

What is canceled is the blessing which was to be received and which was recorded in the promise contained in this portion of the Holy Scriptures. We discover this reality in the life of Esau, to whom the blessing of the birthright had fallen and who by his actions lost it [*Hebrews 12 verses 16-17*].

Nevertheless, although he could no longer enjoy the birthright, the Lord's promise still remained. Yes, because it was his brother Jacob who inherited it [*Genesis 25 verses 29-34*], [*Genesis 27 verses 1-40*].

Now that point is done, we can continue. The doctrines of men which have been instituted in the sacrament of baptism nullify the latter. Not all who have been baptized under such conditions will be able to be sealed by the Holy Spirit.

The reality of the mark of the beast, without which one cannot buy or sell, is that spiritual leaders have come to pervert the bases by which access to salvation is to be made.

Most of Christendom, as we have seen, has rejected the law and/or prophecy or has perverted the biblical realities of prophecy by practicing the works of the apocalyptic false prophet.

To discover it, I invite you to read the chapter entitled "*The reality of the false prophet who is at the service of the apocalyptic beast, servant of the demon*". In doing so, the pre-baptismal teachings are not based on the two pillars of the divine sealing, the law and the prophecy, but on the doctrines of men.

To discover the basics of biblical baptism as well as the stage where the law and prophecy must be studied diligently in the pre-baptismal period, I invite you to read my book entitled "*The act of baptism and Christian growth (The reality of the latter rain that is to fall on God's people)*".

We will now see the literal application of the fact that one cannot sell or buy without the mark the beast.

However, before getting to the heart of the matter, it is imperative that we stop to provide you with an explanation. At the beginning of this chapter I introduced you to a friend who shared her questions with me, which is what allowed me to support this thorniest subject.

I'll tell you a little more about her, her name is *Nicole*. And there you have it, once I finished reading this part, she came back to me again and I will share with you the fruit of her thoughts.

She told me that she was very disturbed, because having understood that it was access to salvation, therefore baptism that it was about, she could not assimilate why in order to "*sell*" and "*buy*", you had to have the mark of the beast. Yes ! because it is said that no one will be able to sell or buy without this famous mark.

She even said to herself that it was rather the reverse, that in order to be entitled to salvation, one must not have the mark of the beast, hence her confusion. So, from what she read, it appeared that no one could be saved. She could not understand how it could be possible, that salvation must necessarily pass through the bestial two-horned lamb and through that filthy mark it gives.

She added that it wasn't until she got to the end of this part that things became clearer to her. In order to avoid that you do not find yourself in this same situation by asking yourself:

*"He was not mistaken?... but where does he get his assertions?" I therefore added the small part which follows, which was not originally part of the book. I would like to thank Nicole for her wise advice.*

To begin with, I would say to you that it is true that it is most disturbing to discover that without the mark of the beast, one can neither buy nor sell salvation for free.

But to understand how this reality is articulated, let us refer to the text which presents the obtaining of the mark of the beast and which we find in the message of the third apocalyptic angel [*Revelation 14 verses 9-13*].

From this message, we understand that two peoples will be sealed.

One in God, the other in Satan. Let's start with those who will receive the seal that I would call positive, the one in God, they are presented as saints, in the Biblical sense because they keep both the law of God (*his commandments*) and prophecy. In [*Revelation 14 verses 12-13*] we are told that even beyond death their works follow them.

This faithful people of the Lord to live in the last times is also presented in [*Revelation 14 verses 1-5*], how having the seal of God and that of Jesus on the forehead.

They are therefore already sealed. Remember that the teachings are symbolized by the name. That of God represents his holy law and that of Christ represents prophecy.

As the saints keep the law and the prophecy, and are thereby sealed in Jesus Christ, they do not have to suffer the various inconveniences which are linked to the mark of the beast.

In addition, their mode of sealing does not necessarily pass through the baptistery of a religion because it is based on law and prophecy. Cornelius in the Bible is an example.

This last statement can probably offend you and seem contradictory with my previous development, however, it is not, I simply invite you to refer to the study which is in my book entitled "*The act of baptism and Christian growth (The reality of the latter rain that is to fall on God's people)*" in the chapter "*The reality of the saints (the faithful people of God) in the face of the mark (of the wilting) of the beast*" which deals with this subject.

Now, let's move on to the other sealing, the one reserved for those who will not take a stand for the Lord for his commandments and for faith in Jesus Christ (*the prophecy*), they will receive because of their deeds the mark of the beast on their hands or on their foreheads.

This group also includes those who, while having made a covenant with Jesus, have chosen to be unfaithful to the Lord and have become slaves of the devil.

By their disobedience, they despise the divine sacrifice of Jesus Christ and they reject the only acceptable offering that God receives for sins [*Hebrews 10 verses 26-31*], [*Hebrews 6 verses 4-8*].

Let us turn to the rest of mankind, all those who remain on the outside, without making a choice for the good or for the evil, these are also under the control (*domination*) of the devil.

Here is what the Holy Book teaches us about this: "*We know that we belong to God, while the whole world is under the devil's thumb*". [*1 John 5 verse 19, Bible Semeur (translated into English from the original text)*].

Therefore there is no longer any offering for their sins, their fate is now to receive the mark of the beast. Before summarizing these two seals, let us remember that we are all born, in our capacity as creatures of God, as an "*animal man*", with his seal affixed to our hand.

With the spiritual choice to become a child of God and by accepting to recognize him as the creator of all things, his seal will be placed on our forehead, place of the spirit.

Moreover, as we move from the stage of animal man to that of being spiritual in whom the Spirit of God lives [*1 Corinthian 2 verses 9-16*], [*1 Corinthians 15 verses 44-49*], the seal of the Lord which was on our hand disappears to leave room only for its seal on our forehead.

It is important to note that as one cannot walk both by the flesh, therefore as an "*animal man*" and by the Spirit, therefore as a being sanctified by the Spirit of God [*Galatians 5 verses 16-17*], that is why the elect of God only the seal of God on their foreheads, for it works only by the Spirit. Conversely, the servants of the devil, or those who have rejected the Lord, receive the mark of the beast either on their hand or on their forehead.

So if we make the opposite spiritual choice to that of God's chosen, that of rejecting the Lord, while recognizing him as being God, this choice being spiritual, the mark of the beast will be affixed on our forehead.

What explains this reality is that at first, having accepted Jesus Christ for our personal savior, we went from the stage of "*animal man*" to that of being spiritual, which makes the seal on the hand disappear, so that it is only on the forehead.

Unfortunately, by having rejected the Lord, his seal is removed and therefore it is the trace of his wilting which remains on the foreheads of the unrepentant and which is the mark of the beast. Apart from that, all the rest of humanity, those who have not made a conscious choice but who have not positioned themselves for God lose the seal on the hand which is replaced by the mark of withering, in other words, the one of the beast.

We must keep in mind that there are two choices, either to be with God and recognize him as the Creator of all things, or to be with the enemy of our souls (*Satan*).

It is important to note that everything we have just seen regarding obtaining the seal of God or the mark of the beast, will not be definitively active until the apocalyptic three angels message has sounded all over the face of the earth. Until then there is still a possibility of taking a stand for the Lord, a bit like a second chance.

Nevertheless, it is important to understand that it is illusory to wait for a favorable moment to give your life to the Lord, because our life can stop at any moment, in doing so, we will be judged according to the good or the evil that we will have practiced.

Assured you therefore that when your last hour arrives, that your good works in the Lord will be testimonies which will play in your favor as presented in [*Revelation 14 verses 12-13*].

We have now come to the end of this item which was requested by my friend and ally Nicole.

I am aware of the complexity of this subject, which I have tried to clarify as best I could, I hope I have succeeded.

We can therefore resume the course of our study to present the reality of the fact that we can neither "*sell*" nor "*buy*" without the mark of the beast.

Let's start with the sell symbol. As we have seen, salvation is sold and those responsible for carrying out the transaction are consecrated men established among the people of God.

Thus, all those who will not agree to adhere to the doctrines of a religion, will not be consecrated Pastor or "*elder*", and those who, being already consecrated, will reject these doctrines after the fact will be removed from their functions. The authority necessary to baptize, therefore to sell salvation, will no longer be conferred on them.

Here's how it can be summed up. To sell salvation free of charge, in other words to baptize, it is necessary to be a consecrated person of the people of God, and by adhering to the doctrines of Men, we in fact embrace those *"of the beast with seven heads and ten horns"* proclaimed by the two-horned bestial lamb.

It therefore appears that no one will be able to baptize, or to be baptized, without *"defiling"* himself with the doctrines of men who transgress the Word of God.

Established by the Catholic religion, these doctrines are also practiced by Protestants. Anyone who wants the opportunity to work towards preaching and baptizing souls will have to stick to the patterns established by the various Christian religions.

By doing so they become unbelievers before God, in doing so the seal of God which they wear is taken away from them.

What remains therefore is the trace of the withering of their felony, the mark of the beast. So no one can sell any more in this century without having the mark of the beast.

The sad fact of this terrible reality is that Christianity as a whole, Catholics and Protestants are preparing proselytes for baptism with the finality of burning in hell. In the Bible we find a similar work which was accomplished by the scribes and the Pharisees. Here is what it was:

*"But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye enter not in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter. [...]"*

**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him twofold more a son of hell than yourselves".** [Matthew 23 verses 13 and 15, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

*And yet!* The Pharisees had perfect knowledge of the Word of God, for they were its custodians. Jesus presents in [Matthew 23 verses 1-3], them as being seated in the flesh of Moses, and calls to put into practice what they say, therefore his Word, nevertheless he asks not to *"copy their behavior"*.

Very often, in many Christian religions, the seed which is unfortunately sown in hearts is the weeds.



These doctrines of men composed of adulterated and anti-biblical teachings cannot seal the new baptized after baptism.

This expected renewal is replaced by the trace of withering. It is therefore the mark of the beast left by the infamy of these subversive doctrines that the newly baptized receives. Now let's move on to the "buy" symbol and now consider the literal bases meaning that no one will be able to buy without having the mark of the beast.

To do this, I would tell you that the two pillars (*the law and the prophecy*) allowing to have the seal of God not being taught to the followers of the baptism the choices which are offered are reduced.

The first, presents the reality of the saints, the faithful people of the Lord, who will not have the mark of the beast because they have already received the seal of God, so they are already sealed, we have seen it with the symbol "to sell".

This reality is presented in my book entitled "*The act of baptism and Christian growth (The reality of the latter rain that is to fall on God's people)*".

Because of the anti-biblical practices of the various Christian Churches, one of the choices of the candidate for baptism (*the one who wants to buy salvation*) is to refuse to adhere to these religious precepts and therefore not to accept baptism but this posture exposes him to remain an "animal man" who will not have life in him.

Indeed the Spirit of God who gives us to become his child cannot be given to him. Since the basis of salvation is through baptism, those who refuse to adhere to such doctrines are exposed to eternal death.

It is this reality which is presented in [*Revelation 13 verse 15*], where it is specified that the bestial lamb would cause all those who would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. The other choice is to adhere to religious doctrines and agree to be baptized.

In this case, since the teachings are not those of the Lord, the newly baptized cannot be sealed with God. What he will receive will be the mark of the beast on his forehead, a sign of his spiritual acceptance of the doctrines of Men who contravene the Word of God.

Among those who will have received baptism, some will abandon their Christian life, and like those who have always lived without God, they will also have the mark of the beast.

Summarizing the choices offered to us, due to the context of religions, the finding is overwhelming. Indeed, there is no religion which is faithful to the Lord. They've all got perverted, establishing anti-biblical doctrines. I report this harsh reality in *volume II* of this book and I continue in this volume.

It thus appears that the symbols "*to buy*" and "*to sell*" which are directly related to the mark of the beast, represent the adulterated bases of the salvation which Christianity practices in this century. In doing so, any action calling for a reaction, the good or the bad that one practices, "*will bear fruit*".

It is important to understand that those who will have the mark of the beast will have made the choice not to take a stand for the Lord, because we have seen it, the saints, biblically speaking, they will not have it. In order to present to you this choice that God offers us to make in complete freedom, consisting of receiving his seal and being saved or the mark of the beast and burning in the lake of fire and brimstone, I am going to picture them for you.

Imagine a rich landowner who decides to work against slavery and precariousness, in all magnanimity. In order for the business to be carried out efficiently, he hired stewards, to whom he entrusted a large sum, which was close to several billion.

These representatives that he has established have the task of going out to meet each slave in the country, in order to offer them, individually, to make a choice between two possibilities.

The first is to accept, that it be redeemed, thanks to the fund that their wealthy patron has established.

Those who opt for this solution can, following this interview, go free. So the money that was used to redeem these slaves is very real, but it is not put into the hands of those who will be redeemed, but is intended for their master.

This may remind some of a painful reality that existed, except that the rich patron of our example acted magnanimously, without any compensation, driven by the sole desire to make men free.

So, those who choose freedom, become free by the grace that this rich man gave them. They didn't have to pay anything on their own for it. Nevertheless, in order to ensure their future, they are also offered a job, which will allow them to live decently as a free man.

This pictorial example is very well represented in the text of [*Ephesians 2 verses 5-10*].

This text tells us that we are saved by grace in Jesus Christ. In doing so, we have no merit for it, all the glory goes to him.

In addition to salvation, the Lord offers us a job, which he has already prepared in advance, and which consists, among other things, in spreading the Gospel to all creation [*Matthew 28 verses 18-20*].

What we have just seen is what the Lord has established and wants for each of us! However, although we are made free by the divine sacrifice of Jesus, we are not obligated to accept our redemption.

We can, in our soul and conscience, refuse to use the blank cheque of salvation by grace that has been which has been put in place through the divine sacrifice of Christ.

To symbolize this reality, I am going to give you a concrete example, always drawing on our little story of this rich man who chooses to offer freedom to all the slaves in his country.

We have already considered the first choice that this man's stewards offered to slaves in order to access freedom, while having a job, which allowed them to live. Now, let's find out about the second option that is also offered to them. They have the possibility of choosing freely to remain a slave while receiving a fairly comfortable sum, in order to live decently. On the other hand, those who choose this option will never again be able to claim freedom!

I find this reality in this text which was intended in the law of Moses to literally manage slaves: **"But one of your slaves might say to you, 'I will not leave you.'** *He might say this because he loves you and your family and because he has a good life with you.*

**Make this servant put his ear against your door and use a sharp tool to make a hole in his ear. This will show that he is your slave forever. [...]"** [*Deutéronome 15 versets 16-17, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Here we find that a slave could refuse to be emancipated.

He had to act on his decision by accepting that his ear be pierced by his master, a sign of his belonging and of his choice to remain a slave until his death. *From then on no ransom could redeem him!* Spiritually it is the same!

The Lord being a God of freedom, He leaves the choice to each of us to accept, or not, to enter into the modalities that He has already established, in his son, Jesus Christ, for the redemption of the humanity. Here is how this choice is presented in the Holy Book:

*"And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation.*

**He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned".** [*Mark 16 verse 15-16, King James Bible*].

The governance adopted by Satan over his subjects is the opposite of that practiced by the Lord over his children. God wants us to come to him out of love, he leaves us free will.

Those who choose to serve and remain faithful to him, keeping his Word, receive his seal and are now part of his chosen people, his saints, in Jesus Christ. Conversely, the devil is a dominator who imposes his authority by force.

So that all those who have not taken a stand for the Lord, receive a spirit of bewilderment and therefore become slaves of the devil [*1 John 5 verses 18-19*], [*Hebrews 2 verses 14-15*].

In the following text, we rediscover what happens to those who reject the truth to practice the lie professed by the enemy of God: **"For the mystery of the iniquity is already acting; it is only necessary that the one who still retains it has disappeared.**

*And then will appear the ungodly, whom the Lord Jesus will destroy with the breath of his mouth, and which he will annihilate with the shine of its advent.*

**The appearance of this ungodly one will be, by the power of Satan, with all kinds of miracles, signs and lying wonders, and with all the deceptions of iniquity for those who perish because they have not received love of truth to be saved.**

**Also God sends them a power of misguidance, that they believe at lie, so that all those who did not believe in the truth, but who took pleasure in injustice, may be condemned".** [*2 Thessalonians 2 verses 7-12, Bible Louis Second (translated into English from the original text)*].

As we had already seen, those who did not like the truth – therefore the Word of God – and preferred to practice doctrines of Men, also called doctrines of demon [*1 Timothy 4 verses 1-5*] – receive a *power (Sprit) of deception*”, so that they may believe in error.

The goal being that they are not saved. So they will not be sealed by the Spirit of God in Jesus Christ. We find here the same basis as that of the mark of the beast, because both lead those who contracted them to burn in hell.

To continue, I would like to present to you a situation that the Spirit of God has used to trigger in me an urgent need to write on a subject that unleashes passions, I say no more, some will have already understood what, it's about.

While the writing of this chapter was finished in French and that the translation of the English version was also carried out – The only thing left to do was to correct both languages – I heard a news item on the news a short while ago that both *"chilled my blood"* and challenged me.

Then, the next day I received a *WhatsApp message*, which presented this situation as being the prophetic reality which specifies that without the mark of the beast, no one will be able to buy or sell.

Why, this reaction? Let us come to the point.

So, on *July 13, 2021*, the President of the French Republic solemnly declared that from *July 21, 2021*, certain collective spaces, such as museums, cinemas, shopping centers, etc., would only be accessible to vaccinated people *against COVID 19* or who have carried out a negative PCR test, the latter would no longer be reimbursed by social security (*French*).

This announcement, which suggests that some will no longer be able to do their shopping, *especially "food"* in these areas, has given rise to great anxiety and was the source of panic movements.

*"The vaccine would be the mark of the beast without which we can neither buy nor sell."*

This is how this affirmation, which was already well established among some people, has found, through this announcement by the president, *"the fertile ground"* to spread.

In addition, on this day, *November 28, 2021*, we live in Europe under the yoke of the vaccine, because those working in certain trades can no longer work if they are not vaccinated.

In France, this is the case for those working in the medical world, such as nurses, doctors, it is the same for firefighters etc.

All those who are in these professions and refuse to be vaccinated find themselves in a very precarious situation from one day to the next, because they lose their jobs without summation.

Thus, those forming part of trades which until then were among those providing a secure future, find themselves, often after decades of good and loyal service, unemployed.

The repercussion to this is that their purchasing power is impacted, because they no longer have a salary, so they can no longer buy.

For other trades such as those working in pharmacies, a PCR test is requested every *72 hours* so that employees can access their workplace. Without a negative PCR test or having been vaccinated, these people can no longer exercise, so they can no longer sell.

Things have become so critical that in order to defend those who find themselves in such situations, the unions of Martinique and Guadeloupe have set up a general strike, which is in the process of degeneration, because businesses are burn, others are plundered etc.

What I have just presented to you seems strangely to the reality of the "*mark of the beast*" because we find some people who can no longer buy and others sell without having either a sanitary pass or having been vaccinated.

We are now going to discover if such realities are those that the word of God presents as being the basis of the "*mark of the beast*", but before that, let's make a small stop in order to discover two examples, of the most telling with regard to what we have just seen.

For the first one, we will go to meet an iniquitous individual, whose market background is the suffering of others, he despoils, without mercy of their good the most destitute, he mistreats the poor and oppresses them, he got rich by selling drugs etc.

Fearing neither God, nor men, nor death, he chose not to be vaccinated, because he thinks he is invulnerable.

Let's take another case, that of a doctor who is a missionary, who works at the humanitarian level. For his part, he is a man of integrity and upright, who knows, reveres and fears the Lord.

However, in order to continue working he was vaccinated. He did not vaccinate because he was afraid of dying, or for lack of faith in the Lord, but being already an old man, he does not fear the possible long-term repercussions of the vaccine, but not being vaccinated is a symbol of obligation for him not to practice his profession.

The repercussion would be that all these people without resources that he helps, would be deprived of a doctor from one day to the next, so out of love for them, he got vaccinated.

Now these basics to ask, I ask you the following questions:

*If the vaccine or the sanitary pass to it is the mark of the beast, it would imply that the iniquitous man will not receive this mark, and will therefore inherit eternal life.*

*On the other hand, our doctor with a big heart, for his part, having been vaccinated would have received the "mark of the beast" and will have to burn for that in the flames of the lake of fire and sulfur. To you who are children of light, you understand that what we have just seen is heresy!*

Now these bases laid down we are going, Bible in hand, to discover other realities which will show you that the vaccine and the *sanitary pass* which is attached to it can in no way be the "*mark of the beast*".

To begin with, I would say to you, that as children of God, guided by his Spirit, we must always keep our eyes on Christ, therefore on the living word of God, which is the Bible, he alone has the capacity to guide us through darkness and fallacies which the devil generates and which covers the earth [*Psalms 119 verse 105*], [*2 Peter 1 verse 19*].

So in order to untie this new bag of knots, we are going to bring out, Bible in hand, certain realities which are directly linked to the mark of the beast.

To begin with, I invite you to read again [*Revelation 13 verses 11-17*], which presents these prophetic realities to us and we will consider an hypothesis by the absurd, that of the vaccine as being the mark of the beast.

In doing so, if the fact that we will no longer be able to buy or sell without the mark of the beast (*and therefore the vaccine*) is proven, the other realities of this prophetic text must also be.

The first and most terrible of all is that those who do not adhere to the philosophy of the beast - so in this case, who do not get vaccinated – must be killed.

*Incredible, no! How to imagine that this could be possible and especially what will be the method employed?*

We would come back to the concentration camps, as was the case during the bloody era of Hitler and the Nazis, this time it would be to suppress the recalcitrant who would not want to be vaccinated?

This would therefore be practiced in France as well as in all the countries which would put in place the vaccination obligation.

But first, in these nations and especially in France, which let us remember is the country of human rights, the death penalty should be restored for those who would not agree to be vaccinated.

*Hmm... I wonder??! Do you think this is possible? Me no!*

It feels like straight out of bad fiction. Some terrorists who have committed sordid crimes in France are imprisoned for life, without their life being threatened, because let us not forget the death penalty has been abolished in France!!!

Conversely, “good” French people who would have committed only one “crime”, that of bringing into play a French constitutional right which is this famous FREEDOM which goes with Equality and Fraternity, by deciding not to get vaccinated would be put to death because of it!

All this without their families, their friends and public opinion being able to move to prevent such an abomination. Well, it would seem that we are living in the fourth dimension or in a parallel dimension...

This first point, presenting the death of those who will not adhere to the beast system cannot be accepted, when it comes to the vaccine.

Let us continue with another point that our biblical text presents, the one generally put forward and which emphasizes the fact that those who will not accept the mark of the beast will not be able to buy or sell.



Thus, if the reality of the compulsory vaccine is indeed the mark of the beast, it would mean that the great nations of the earth and especially France will now be at the head of a vast famine operation aimed at the unvaccinated.

How then could France, the country of human rights, establish laws that would lead French people to become as skeletal as the children who are dying of hunger in third world countries?

The Charter of Human Rights prohibits such things. In doing so, France, which is a European nation, cannot deny access to nutrition to its people.

You understand that this scenario is not possible in France or in Europe, it is pure fiction imagined to demonstrate the unfoundedness of the comparison of the vaccine with the mark of the beast.

Another fact is also to be taken into consideration. The President of the Republic has certainly announced during his speech that shopping centers will not be accessible to the unvaccinated, nevertheless, access to local shops has not been prohibited to them.

Thus, there will be no worldwide embargo, like the bestial lamb presented to us as the master in place, so that without the mark of the beast no one will be able to buy or sell.

Thus, in view of the above, supported by the Biblical writings, the approach of the President of the French Republic, who seeks to impose vaccination on all cannot be compared to the mark of the beast. To understand the true reality of this compulsory vaccine, we must not lose sight of the fact that the devil is "*the*" great magician, he shows us something to blind us.

We have a plethora of examples but just cite the example of Eve in [*Genesis 3 verses 1-7*], where the devil leads her to believe that by eating the fruit she will not die, but that she and Adam will be like "*gods*".

But where it is subtle is that eternal life, and the knowledge they already had, came straight from the Lord.

But the subtle point is that they already had eternal life and the knowledge who their came straight from the Lord. The devil's tactics have not changed, he will always seek to instill in us doubt about things that we know to be the truth.

See how he acted with Jesus in [*Luke 4 verses 1-13*], where he confronted him with a simple reality: *if you are Son of God...*

Twice the devil used this little phrase to try, but in vain, to unseat Jesus. Thus, if the latter, even if only for a short moment, had doubted his descent from the Lord, he would have succumbed to the temptation of the devil and would have performed, out of complacency, a miracle, which would have been the fruit of pride, intended to demonstrate who he was.

It is important to note that these attacks of Satan, were made in a particular context, because Jesus had just spent forty days of fasting, which weakened him, because we are told that he was hungry.

The victory that Jesus Christ won over the devil was based on a single affirmation:

*It is written (or it is said). What concretely meant: It is written (or it is said), in the word of God...*

We must always keep our eyes riveted on the realities that are attached to the Bible so that we may be victorious over all the snares of the devil.

Thus, although the vaccine is not the mark of the beast, behind the approach of the French president, we find the spirit of Satan, because it is he who constrains human beings in spite of themselves. With God we have free will.

Furthermore, it is important to note that it is the devil who inspires iniquitous decrees, which the Lord cannot accept, to the leader of the nations, this is what happened to David [*1 Chronicles 21 verses 1-14*].

In doing so, the devil is using heads of state to arbitrarily impose vaccination on everyone.

As theologians eagerly await a worldwide consortium, made up of the various nations of the earth, whose goal will be to compel humanity to receive the mark of the beast, the compulsory vaccine is therefore one of the devil's Trojans.

By drawing everyone's attention to the mandatory vaccine, the devil was providing material for theologians and conspiracy tacticians, while in the shadows the real mark of the beast is being put in place.

I therefore invite you to analyze all things, including my writings, Bible in hand, in order to see if what is presented comes from the Lord, and to remember what is good.

*Don't let the demon fool you and steal your crown.*

## 17 The reality of the judges of the last judgment and the subtle plans of the demon by which he seeks to make these judges ineligible

**T**o begin this part, I would like to point out that in wartime the objective of each side is to disarm its enemy. To do this the strategy is often to turn your opponent's weapons against himself.

In big-budget war movies Hollywood has grasped this concept really well and likes to show us stockpiles of exploding weapons leading to their owners' defeat. In the spiritual world this situation also holds pride of place. Here is how it is presented:

**"When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace: But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils".** [*Luke 11 verses 21-22, King James Bible*].

The scenario presented here highlights the spiritual foundations leading to victory over our enemies. You have to dominate them first and then take away their weapons and then you can take possession of what they have. God's consecrated people has the capacity to apply this tactic against all of the forces of the devil, for we have received the power to dominate them from our master Jesus Christ.

Here are the promises he leaves us: *"These miraculous signs will accompany those who believe: **They will cast out demons in my name, and they will speak in new languages**".* [*Mark 16 verse 17, New Living Translation Bible (NLT)*].

To intensify our study let us also consider this: *"And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.*

**Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you".** [*Luke 10 verses 18-19, King James Bible*].

The truth presented in this text is a fact which must certainly be known to the devil. He knows those who are faithful to God and who have the power to drive him out. This text highlights this fact: "*And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain girl, having a pythonical spirit, met us, who brought to her masters much gain by divining.*

**This same following Paul and us, cried out, saying: These men are the servants of the most high God, who preach unto you the way of salvation. And this she did many days.**

**But Paul being grieved, turned, and said to the spirit: I command thee, in the name of Jesus Christ, to go out from her. And he went out the same hour".** [*Acts 16 verses 16-18, Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition Bible (DRA)*].

Let us also consider this text as additional proof: "*A team of itinerant Jews who were traveling from town to town casting out demons planned to experiment by using the name of the Lord Jesus.*

*The incantation they decided on was this:*

*"I adjure you by Jesus, whom Paul preaches, to come out!" Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish priest, were doing this. But when they tried it on a man possessed by a demon, the demon replied, "I know Jesus and I know Paul, but who are you?" And he leaped on two of them and beat them up, so that they fled out of his house naked and badly injured".* [*Acts 19 verses 13-16, Living Bible (TLB)*].

In the first text, while this woman who is possessed does not know Paul and his companions, she declares that they are God's servants.

It should be noted that the python is a serpent and the latter is presented in the Bible as being the devil [*Revelation 12 verse 9*].

In the second text, without Paul being there, the devil claims to know him. Here what the devil says is directly related to the fact that it was in Jesus' name that Paul preached that these men wanted to drive him out.

He tells them that he knows that Paul has the power to defeat him in Jesus' name. Thus, the devil knows that he cannot face a consecrated and faithful child of God head-on, so he uses another tactic. In order to discover the evil plans that Satan has hatched, it is important not to lose sight of who will be the judges of men and of the angels.

Just before developing this new theme it is important to go back to the basics already studied in my book entitled *"Inquisitiô (The three angels' message), tome II. The reality of the attack of the little horn of Daniel 7 against the Law of God and the times of prophecy. Historical part"* in the chapter *"Difference in the Bible between hell and hell of fire, and the human doctrines that have transvestite these notions"*.

In this book I show you, Bible in hand, that this judgment will be active at the end of this system of things in which we live.

I also present to you the finality of those who have rejected the Lord, which will be to end up in the lake of fire and brimstone. Those who land in this most inflamed place will be destroyed forever etc.

Now these bases acted, it is vital for the people of God to understand the reality which will be manifested during this divine judgment, because our future and that of the fallen angels (*demons*) depend on it. Understanding these things enables us to be better prepared to fulfill the role the Lord has assigned to us in this judgment as His people.

We have also discovered that before the judgment is active there will be a resurrection of the dead, so that all of us will be judged according to the good or the evil that we will have done in our lifetime.

Nevertheless, long before that, we will see that there will already have been a first resurrection, that of the faithful people of God.

We are therefore going to study this new base, Bible in hand.

*Before I continue, I want you to know that you have an angel, who is questions out to me so that I can nurture you and nurture him. Yes, this part, too, was not originally in this book but is the result of a special request, coming from who you know! Hmm... yes from Nicole!*

*She wanted to know who would be in the First Resurrection and how the Second Judgment and Second Resurrection would be different from the first.*

His questions are very relevant to me, because by understanding them we are better able to understand the importance of God's people in these judgments. To get to the heart of the matter, I would tell you that often we are children of God, but we ignore the power that the Lord places in our hands, especially the dominion that we have, in Jesus Christ over certain things.

This is how I feel about our role in the Last Judgment. We do not always have, in my opinion, a clear vision of what will happen and the role that we will have to play in it. First of all, it is important that I present to you a reality which is linked to the judgment of God and which materializes by the place, or by whom it will begin.

Let's read this in order to understand it: **"For the time [has arrived] for judgment to begin with the household of God; and if it begins with us, what will the end of those who do not respect or believe or obey the good news (the Gospel) of God?**

*And if the righteous are barely saved, what will become of the godless and wicked?" [1 Peter 4 verses 17-18, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].*

Regarding the judgment that all mankind will have to undergo, those who have made a covenant with the Lord will be the first to be judged, for the judgment of God will begin with his people.

The basis of this judgment will have a greater significance than that which the Lord reserves for the rest of mankind, for the people of God will not be able to invoke the times of ignorance as can those who do not know the Lord, in order to to justify himself.

Here is what we can read regarding the times of ignorance: **"God, regardless of the times of ignorance, now announces to all men, in all places, that they have to repent"** [Acts 17 verse 30, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].

The Lord does not take into account the times of ignorance.

Those who have in good faith practised unrighteous doctrines, while thinking they were serving the Lord, will not be held responsible for the things they practised during this time of ignorance, as long as they repent. The members of the people of God, for their part, can only claim from the time of ignorance on biblical points which were still unknown to them.

On the other hand, on all the biblical precepts where they were enlightened and which they rejected, accounts will be asked of them.

Being enlightened and able to judge these things, they are therefore more guilty than the Gentiles, who are in ignorance, when they knowingly transgress the things which the Lord has established. Thus, as a member of the people of God, we will be asked for tales of the knowledge that we acquire in the Lord, and the more we acquire, the greater our responsibility [John 9 verses 39-41], [James 3 verses 1].

Those who have known the truth and up turning away from it, despising the divine sacrifice of Jesus – he the word of God makes flesh. Their retribution will therefore be to wipe out the full force of the wrath of God [Hebrews 6 verses 4-8], [Hebrews 10 verses 26-31].

From the judgment that the Lord will operate among his people, two very distinct groups will be sealed, on the one hand those who bear the seal of God and that of Jesus.

On the other hand will be those who have rejected the word of God, they will receive a *power (Sprit) of deception*” which will lead them to believe in lies [2 Thessalonians 2 verses 9-12], and their finalities will be of the mark of the beast and eternal destruction.

We are not going to go into these realities in this chapter because I have given you a complete study on these themes in the chapters entitled *"The modalities of the sealing of the two peoples (that of God and that of the beast)"* and *"The prophetic reality that hides behind the symbols "buy" and "sell" "*.

To continue, I would say to you, that the fact that the Lord's final judgment begins with His people is not discriminatory against them.

This reality is a special mission that the Lord intends for those who will be acquitted at the end of this first judgment. This tells us:

**"Or know ye not that the saints shall judge the world? [...] Know ye not that we shall judge angels? [...]"** [1 Corinthians 6 verses 2-3, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

Those who will be called to judge men and angels are none other than the faithful people of the Lord, who are also called saints.

What we have just read is extraordinary for me, we mortals, we will be brought to judge both men and angels and all this while we do not have, for many, legal training. Are you aware of the great honour the Lord has in store for those who are sealed in him?

They will judge the fallen angels, therefore demons, as well as those who today have authority over the nations and the powerful of this world. To understand what makes them fit to become judges of men and angels, we must first understand who makes them eligible for this office. To do that, let's read this to find out:

**"Jesus told us to go and speak to the people. He told us to tell them that he is the one God chose to be the Judge of all who are living and all who have died".** [*Acts 10 verse 42, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Let's complete with this: **"For we [believers] have become partakers of Christ [...]"** [*Hebrews 3 verse 14, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

We learn here that basically the only one who is fit to be the judge of the living and the dead is Christ.

This ability he acquired through his divine sacrifice, in doing so no human being can hold this role of supreme judge of human beings.

I put you a study on this subject in the chapter entitled *"The obscure plans of the dominator of nations"*.

On the other hand, next to this supreme judge, who is Jesus, there are deputy judges, who have acquired this capacity by uniting themselves with him as closely as an organ or a branch which would have been grafted would be with the body or the tree that carries it [*Romans 11 verses 11-26*], [*1 Corinthians 12 verses 12-27*], [*John 15 verses 1-11*].

By making a covenant with Jesus, we will acquire from him abilities that are intrinsically unique to him.

Among them, that consisting in forgiving or withholding the sins of men [*John 20 verse 23*].



Regarding the role of judge that the faithful children of the Lord will hold beside Jesus, it is important to understand that it is not only those who will be alive when he returns, who will be eligible for it, but also all those who died in the Lord.

In order to better understand this reality, let's read the two texts that follow. Here is the content of the first: **"And I saw thrones and they that sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them.**

**And I saw the souls of them that had been beheaded for the witness of Jesus and for the Word of God, and who had not worshiped the beast, nor his image, nor had received his mark upon their foreheads or on their hands; And they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished.**

**This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: On such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years".** [*Revelation 20 verses 4-6, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

Let's complete with this second text: *"What we tell you now is the Lord's own message. Those of us who are still living when the Lord comes again will join him, but not before those who have already died. The Lord himself will come down from heaven with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet call of God.*

**And the people who have died and were in Christ will rise first. After that we who are still alive at that time will be gathered up with those who have died.**

*We will be taken up in the clouds and meet the Lord in the air. And we will be with the Lord forever".* [*1 Thessalonians 4 verses 15-17, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

Above all, it is important to specify that the rest of the text of the apocalypse that we have just read presents, among other things, the modalities of judgment and of the sanctions which will affect men, the devil and these henchmen [*Revelation 20 verses 10-15*].

Thus, we find that before the Last Judgment begins, all who have been faithful to the Lord and died before they return will be resurrected. So that the elevation to heaven with Jesus and by extension the judgment of the unrepentant will not happen without them, for they will first come to life before these things have started.

On the other hand, it is important to note that it is not all of God's people who will be resurrected in the first resurrection, but only those who will have been faithful to the Lord and who not received the mark of the beast. Now that we have clarified this, let us return to our substitute judges, who are to work alongside Jesus Christ.

It is because God gives his people the power to judge men and the angels, including the fallen angels of whom Satan is one [*Revelation 12 verses 7-12*], [*Jude 1 verse 6*] that the devil's most burning desire is to make them ineligible for this task. To do this Satan uses one of his strengths, which is his knowledge of God's Word, which he uses by twisting and bending it to his advantage.

This is what we find in [*Luke 4 verses 9-12*] where we see him using the text of [*Psalms 91 verses 9-12, (especially verses 11-12)*] in order to try, in vain, to unseat Jesus by his subtle temptation, which mixes truth with falsehood. Furthermore in [*2 Corinthians 11 verses 3, 13-15*] we see that the devil and his henchmen master the knowledge of God's word and use and abuse it.

With his knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, Satan plays on the fact that he knows that God cannot deny himself. For me this fact, concerning the Lord, is very explicit in the following text:

*"Jesus arrived at the other side of the lake in the country of the Gadarene people. There, two men who had demons inside them came to him. They lived in the burial caves and were so dangerous that no one could use the road by those caves.*

**They came to Jesus and shouted, "What do you want with us, Son of God? Did you come here to punish us before the right time?"** *Near that place there was a large herd of pigs feeding.*

*The demons begged Jesus, "If you make us leave these men, please send us into that herd of pigs."*

*Jesus said to them, "Go!" So the demons left the men and went into the pigs. [...]" [Matthew 8 verses 28-32, Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)].*

We are witnessing an incredible scene here as Jesus is confronted with demons and we see them speaking to him fearfully, but also with confidence, asking him if he intended to persecute them before the "right" time ("judgment day"). This text therefore demonstrates that the demons know the plans that God has put in place for their destruction and also present their knowledge of God's character.

Here is what is said about the Lord's character: **"God is not a man; he will not lie. God is not a human being; his decisions will not change.**

**If he says he will do something, then he will do it. If he makes a promise, then he will do what he promised".** [*Numbers 23 verse 19 Easy-to-Read Version Bible (ERV)*].

They know that the Lord cannot deny Himself by not acting in accordance with with what He Himself has established. God has decreed a day when all human beings and angels will be judged.

The final destination for all of those on both sides who reject the Lord will be the fires of hell. Since God cannot deny himself by violating his own Word, no angel and therefore by extension no devil, has been and will be killed or destroyed before the end of the world. Strengthened by this fact, the Lord is righteous in all that he does.

By doing so he does not deviate from what he says, because when he says something he does it.

The devil who, let us remember, is a fallen angel who has been close to the Lord, see [*Job 1*] and [*Job 2*] knows his character and uses the Lord's righteousness to destroy the unrepentant.

With regard to the election of those having to judge him, he the fallen angel, one of the weapons he uses is his knowledge of God's Word, as he knows that Lord cannot be united with those who practise sin and those who are idolaters [*Isaiah 59 verses 1-2*], [*2 Corinthians 6 verses 14-16*].

The transgression of God's Word being the basis of idolatry [1 Samuel 15 verses 22-23], And as an idolater can neither be united to the Lord nor accepted by him [Ephesians 5 verse 5], [Revelation 21 verse 8], [Revelation 22 verse 15] the devil therefore schemes so that all of God's people become unfit to judge him.

The devil's battle plans in this area are in two parts:

*The first is to make those who are to be these judges unfit for their role, because they have not mastered the basics of their jobs. The second is to make them ineligible to stand trial. The second is to make them ineligible to judge him.*

We will develop these two realities by starting with the plans that the devil to foment in order to render these judges unfit.

To understand this reality, we must not lose sight of who are those who will be substitute judges alongside Jesus Christ.

In [1 Corinthians 6 verses 2-3] we found out that it is the saints who will judge men and angels (*therefore Satan and these demons included*).

Here, the term "*the saints*" which is used, being related to the last judgment, those presented as to be these judges, are therefore part of the faithful people of God who will live in the last times and that the prophecy presents in [Revelation 14 verses 12-13].

As we have already seen, in this text, we discover that what makes recognize the saints is the fact that they keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus (*the prophecy*).

To rediscover the basis for qualifying Latter-day Saints, I invite you to read the chapter entitled "*The reality of the false prophet who is at the service of the apocalyptic beast, servant of the demon*".

What we have just seen is of importance and presents the omnipresence and importance of the law of God and of prophecy in the plan of salvation, which was recorded in Jesus Christ. Thus, the Lord being immaculate purity and truth, he does not lie, thus, as he declared that it is the saints who will hold this role of judges and that the law and the prophecy are their two elements of eligibility, the devil has set out to wage war on anyone who meets these two criteria.

To be clear about this, I invite you to read this: "[...] **For the accuser of our brethren is cast down, who accused them before our God day and night. [...] Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil has come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.**" [...]

*And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman who brought forth the manchild. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and he went to make war with the remnant of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ". [Revelation 12 verses 10, 12-13, 17, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)].*

This biblical chapter presents us, two very distinct battlefields, the first is presented in [Revelation 12 verses 7-11], and is the one that happened when Jesus Christ slaying the devil.

Then in the part of this chapter that we have just read, we discover the second which begins when the devil (*the dragon*) was cast down on earth and presents the war he is waging, since then, against the woman, therefore the people of God, especially against the faithful children of God (*his remnant*) who have to live in the last times.

This attack of the devil against them has three reasons, the first is that he knows he has little time left.

The other two are motivated by the fact that the "*remnant of God*", more commonly called, the "*remnant Church*" keeps the commandments of the Lord (*hence his law*) and they have the testimony of Jesus (*hence the prophecy*).

We should also note, that we have already studied that the seal of God which seals His faithful people is formed of law and prophecy.

As to be judges of men and angels one must be part of the saints, therefore be sealed with the seal of God, the devil therefore leads a frenzied war in order that no one is sealed.

To do this he put in place plans to remove these two things from the hands of the people of God, and to achieve his ends, through his bloodthirsty servant, the little horn (*the Catholic Church*), he has despoiled tortured and killed all who guarded these things.

This religion has during centuries bent the observers of the law and those who keep prophecy – whose basis we have seen are formed of dreams and visions – and has perverted the biblical bases which govern these two types of Word of God.

This work has been so successful that, as we have seen, Protestantism has taken the torch from the hands of the Papacy, and has thereby become that beast which has two horns like those of a lamb. What we have just seen is the high point of Satan's plan to ensure the eternal survival of him and his spawn.

Without these two elements, which are the law and the prophecy, there is no judge and without judge no judgment and, if there is no judgment, so the devil, the demons and all those who will receive the mark of the beast will be relaxed.

Nevertheless, despite all his Machiavellian plans that the devil had fomented, he knew that they would always remain irreducible, who would seek to observe both the law and the prophecy, so he made sure he had a backup.

The latter finds its reason for being in this biblical text: **"A person might follow all of God's law. But if he fails to obey even one command, he is guilty of breaking all the commands in that law.**

*God said, "You must not be guilty of adultery." The same God also said, "You must not murder anyone." So if you do not take part in adultery, but you murder someone, then you are guilty of breaking all of God's law". [James 2 verses 10-11, International Children's Bible (ICB)].*

Knowing that anyone who commits sin transgresses God's law and those who do not keep one commandment have sinned against all of the commandments, the devil's plan is to cause us to break the Lord's commandments. But as we have seen, he works in a subtle way, urging us to only reject the *4th commandment* asking us to keep the Lord's holy Sabbath day.

As soon as a Christian transgresses the Sabbath the devil's purpose is achieved. He knows that by doing this he becomes an idolater. And the repercussion is that he is separated from the Lord!

The result for the devil is that those who have done so will no longer be able to participate in his judgment. If possible the purpose of the devil and his minions is to even win God's chosen ones to their cause [*Matthew 24 verse 24*].

The purpose being that, at the appointed time, he would find himself in front of an empty court. It is important to understand that to win over God's chosen ones, the devil will have to come face to face with them in order to ask them to serve him as he did when he tried in vain to tempt Jesus.

*Or he may act in a more subtle way as he did with Eve.* We must never forget that the devil is the great conjurer and the Bible presents him as the Father of lies [*John 8 verse 44*].

He's well-versed in the art of deception. He knows how to dress things up and he is a diplomat, able to make you think bladders are lanterns. Eve had to experience this seductive and dark power [*Genesis 3 verses 1-6*].

Here is what we can read about it: **"But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve in his craftiness, your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity and the purity that is toward Christ"**. [*2 Corinthians 11 verse 3, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)*].

Just as he did with Eve, the devil has not changed and he still acts with subtlety! *See the mix of truth and falsehoods that he told Eve.*

*While God had only forbidden one tree, the serpent presented all trees to her as being forbidden! By doing so the objective of the evil one was to allow doubt to enter our minds. From then on we become vulnerable, because when doubt in our faith and our Saviour creeps in we lose our bearings.*

*This weakness leads us to turn in on ourselves and we are seduced, like Eve who in the end only saw the benefit that she could derive from the fruit.*

*Although forbidden, after the snake's story, it seemed so beautiful!*

*Which led her to forget that this fruit was the carrier of the virus of sin which ends in death.*

Be careful for the devil has become a great master in the art of distorting God's words.

He has experience, because before the earth was created, he already existed and had already undertaken, by perversion, to turn the angels away from the Lord and he succeeded in seducing a third of them.

I present this reality to you in chapter entitled "*The purpose of the plan of salvation through God's grace that was enacted by the crucifixion of Jesus Christ*". Never forget that he works to put doubt in our hearts. He seeks to use our selfishness, our ego, to dangle the benefit, as well as the glory that transgression may bring us.

This is what happened to the Pharisees who violated God's Word, not for pleasure, but in order to lay the foundations of a more practical religion [*Mark 7 verses 5-13*].

Because of their deeds, they served the devil in spite of themselves!

Getting back to our topic, I want to tell you that just as the lion knows he cannot slay an adult rhinoceros, so the devil knows that he cannot defeat one of God's children who remains faithful to the Lord. So he made plans to weaken the Lord's consecrated people.

To do this, the one that the demon powerfully used is the little horn which is a symbol representing the Catholic Church. As we have seen, behind this religion, it is Satan who is in charge, his goal being among other things to change the law. To understand the reason for this demonic work it is worth reading this:

**"Speak and act as those who are to be judged by the law of freedom. For judgment is without mercy to the one who has not shown mercy. Mercy triumphs over judgment".** [*James 2 verses 8, 12-13, Christian Standard Bible (CSB)*].

You must realise that one of the facets of God's Word that Satan dreads the most is his holy law, because it is by it that everyone including him will be judged.

Therefore the devil's goal is to no longer be exposed to the stipulation of the law which presents the wages of sin as death.



He therefore set up a counter-offensive so as not to be judged and by extension not to end up being burnt in the fire of Gehenna.

And it was in God's Word itself that he found the basis of his rescue plan. And here's what it's based on:

**"Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression".** [*Romans 4 verse 15, King James Bible*].

Without the law there is no transgression and no judgment. The devil therefore hopes to make this biblical reality prevail so as not to be destroyed. This is why the devil inspires one of the most dazzling attacks on God's Word in religious men in order to change God's law.

But this change was not intended to prevent the devil from being tried. The enemy of our souls knows that although in the eyes of men God's law has been tampered with, before the Lord it remains intact.

The devil's goal is to make those called to judge his followers and him ineligible. It is in order not to be judged that the devil has schemed to render unfit those who have to fulfil this role.

To do this the devil set up this clever stratagem, that we have just seen, to disarm those who will have to judge him. It is Satan who has the most to gain when men break God's law.

This is why he has worked and is working so that God's people can sanctify Sunday at the expense of the holy Sabbath day. The devil causes Christians to break God's law, so that they are considered idolaters and are judged by that law which they have broken.

Then, in order that they be lost, he accuses them before the Lord of having transgressed his word and especially his holy law. By doing so he can claim that they belong to him. I have already presented this situation in chapter *"The role that the law plays in the great cosmic conflict between the devil and his servants against God and his people"*.

And as we are slaves to that which has overcome us, we are either under God's protection or under the yoke of the devil [*Romans 6 verses 16-23*], [*2 Peter 2 verse 19*], [*Hebrews 2 verses 14-15*] and having rejected God's Word, we become the devil's slaves.

To achieve his ends the devil will always ensure to blind as many people as possible through doctrines that transgress God's Word.

In the Bible this type of doctrine is called "*the devil's doctrine*" [1 Timothy 4 verses 1-2].

When we hear about the devil's doctrines, we immediately think of the book of voodoo or those of witchcraft. If these books are of this ilk, we have just discovered in this text that the devil's doctrines are also those which are established to the detriment of God's Word!

Any man who appears to be religious, but who teaches pernicious doctrines that violate God's Word is in fact presenting the devil's doctrine. Therefore there is no need to invoke the devil or to pledge allegiance to him to become his henchman and practise the devil's doctrines.

In doing so, when Satan works through a religious man, it is very difficult to realise it, because the iniquitous deeds of these people are not manifested outwardly, but in their choice to violate God's Word.

To understand how he works through all of those who seek to establish their plans at the expense of the Lord's counsel, it is important to consider this: **"And Satan stood up against Israel, and moved David to number Israel. And David said to Joab and to the princes of the people, Go, number Israel from Beer-sheba even to Dan;**

*And bring me word, that I may know the sum of them. And Joab said, Jehovah make his people a hundred times as many as they are: but, my lord the king, are they not all my lord's servants?*

**Why doth my lord require this thing? why will he be a cause of guilt unto Israel? [...]** *And Joab gave up the sum of the numbering of the people unto David. And all they of Israel were a thousand thousand and a hundred thousand men that drew sword: and Judah was four hundred threescore and ten thousand men that drew sword.*

**But Levi and Benjamin counted he not among them; for the king's word was abominable to Joab. And God was displeased with this thing; therefore he smote Israel.**

**And David said unto God, I have sinned greatly, in that I have done this thing: but now, put away, I beseech thee, the iniquity of thy servant; for I have done very foolishly. [...]**

**So Jehovah sent a pestilence upon Israel; and there fell of Israel seventy thousand men".** [1 Chronicles 21 verses 1-3, 5-8, 14, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

To comment on this text, I will tell you that as soon as a man or a woman works without taking into account God's directives, he will certainly be guided in spite of himself by the evil one.

Notice that here David did not act without knowing what he was doing, since Joab had urged him not to do so. But certainly the intoxication of glory peaked his ego and made him want to count the number of subjects for which he was responsible.

We see that it was Satan who instilled this feeling and indiscriminate need in David. When there is a transgression of God's Word it is always the devil who pulls the strings. In order to understand how he acts and in order to know the weapons that are needed to defeat him, in the name of Jesus Christ, read my book entitled "*Raijo (Basis of the victory against demonic forces)*".

To continue I want to tell you that this foolish act, of which we have just learnt, was carried out by David, who was not just anyone in the sight of the Lord. He is presented in the following text as being a man after God's heart: "**[...] I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfil all my will**". [*Acts 13 verses 22, King James Bible*].

Although he was such a man, since he disobeyed the Lord, Satan led him to commit iniquitous acts. In this text we see that God struck down the people of Israel, because of King David who had trained them to sin. It should be emphasised that this text was not about acts of idolatry, such as the golden calf commonly practised by the people of Israel, but concerned the application of directives whose purpose was the better administration of the people.

The problem arose from the fact that what was put in place was not claimed or approved by the Lord. That is why King David incurred the Lord's wrath on both himself and God's people.

As soon as he listened to his heart and not to the Lord's counsel, he opened a door giving access to the devil who was thus able to possess him, leading him to accomplish his deeds by urging him to do the counting. We often live without being aware of the relationship between cause and effect that our actions generate and this sometimes leads to irreversible collateral damage. This truth can be seen in our daily actions, but also in the spiritual field.

As a whole religions have endeavoured, each in their own way, to seek to adapt God's Word so that it serves their doctrine. We will see this reality throughout this book as well as well as in its *volume II*.

Like the Pharisees, those who transgress God's Word become children (*and servants*) of the devil. Be vigilant for as you can see, Satan works mightily in the shadows, in order to destroy or desecrate all that is holy or divine in nature. All who adhere to these doctrines will become bewildered and be led to their destruction.

Thus, on the strength of all that we have studied so far in this book as well as in its other volume that I have just quoted to you above, the reality of the law of God in the plan of salvation is more than manifest.

My feeling, is that one of the consolations that the devil will have when he is thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, will be to see there a certain number of those who fought him, being children consecrated persons of the Lord.

[*Matthew 7 verses 21-23*], presents them as having the gift of casting out demons. To you who are clothed with the power of the Holy Spirit and who work with power for the Lord, I would like to bring you a reflection, based on what is presented here: **"Then Jesus said unto His disciples, "If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself and take up his cross and follow Me. [...]"**

**For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of Man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He shall reward every man according to his works".** [*Matthew 16 verse 24, 26-27, 21st Century King James Version Bible (KJ21)*].

To follow the Lord we must deny ourselves and take up our cross, which implies that we must live for the Lord, walking according to his Word. Know this, *you may preach the gospel to the multitudes, you may be clothed with the power of the Holy Spirit to raise the dead, to walk on water, to make money appear from a place as unlikely as in the mouth of a fish*, but if you transgress the law of God, which is to commit iniquity, your final fate will be like those described in [*Matthew 7 verses 21-23*].

You will be rejected by Jesus and will share the bath which is reserved for the devil and these henchmen, in the lake of fire and brimstone. So, what good is it to win the world if the finality is that we are not saved (*losing one's soul*)?

Anyone who denies Him in what they profess is not worthy of Him and in so doing Jesus will also deny them before His Father [*Matthew 10 verses 32-38*].

Anyone who professes to serve the Lord, but sets up man's precepts instead of God's word, or has them as a basis of faith, is not worthy to be with the Lord and works in vain [*Matthew 15 verses 6-9*].

Do not lie to yourself any more! On this day, at this precise moment when you are reading these lines, I invite you to reflect on your future, for what is the point of working with power for the Lord if the end is to be destroyed and not to inherit his kingdom.

Do not be fools and choose, on this day your destiny, because the Lord will vomit, therefore will reject those who are seated between two chairs, therefore those who are lukewarm, this is what presents [*Revelation 3 verses 15-16*].

You got to stop being weathervanes, sometimes working for the Lord, and sometimes transgressing His Word, and in doing so glorifying the devil. Until this day, many of you have been blinded and have rejected both the law of God and the prophecy, which I recall for the record are materialized by the fact that the Spirit of God gives us dreams and visions.

Nevertheless all is not lost for you because the times of ignorance are not taken into account [*Acts 17 verses 30*].

On the other hand, now that you know the truth, from now on you will make your choices in your soul and conscience, and you can no longer claim this time of ignorance, you must therefore choose who you want to serve.

Stop living a life of nonsense! You must either choose to remain faithful to the Lord by putting His Word and His Word alone into practice, or you choose to live a worldly life.

God will not hold it against you, because this is what happened to the rich young man [*Matthew 19 verses 16-26*].

The Lord respects those who choose not to revere Him, for they are steadfast in their belief.

On the other hand, he loathes those who are lukewarm, those who, while saying to serve him, transgress his Word, the worship they carry to him is an abomination before him [*Isaiah 1 verses 11-16*].

Now that you have discovered these truths, to whom do you decide to swear allegiance and worship, God or the devil?

Now choose the Lord by rejecting the doctrines that your fathers, physical and spiritual, instilled in you. Choose Jesus Christ for in him is life and blessing and live eternally, or reject him and accept that your finality will be the bath in hellfire. Now that point has been made, we will be interested in another reality linked to the Last Judgment, the return in glory of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

To do this, I'm going to tell you a little story:

*A few days ago I met a friend and brother in Christ whose name is Bertrand and whom I had not seen for nearly two decades. The last time we saw each other, we shared the same basis of faith. In time we both saw the errors of the religion, which at that time was ours, and we separated from it.*

*All this without knowing that the other had also done the same. Now decorate it planted, let's come back to Bertrand. When we met, so meet again, he presented me with these new basis of faith, and one of the points that appealed to me the most are the following: Bertrand, professes, that Jesus Christ will not return and that the kingdom of God is already active.*

*So that we no longer have to make a plan to be with Jesus, because his return is only an allegory. The Spirit of God therefore inspired me to complete this chapter in order to present to you what the word of God teaches on this subject.*

To begin with, to be clear with the second (*and next*) coming of Jesus Christ, we must come back to the texts of [*1 Thessalonians 4 verses 15-17*] that we have read above.

Let's go back to that part I want to highlight: **"The Lord himself will come down from heaven with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet call of God"**.

To reinforce this text let's read this: *"But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall be falling from heaven, and the powers that are in the heavens shall be shaken.*

**And then shall they see the Son of man coming in clouds with great power and glory. And then shall he send forth the angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven".** [Mark 13 verses 24-27, American Standard Version Bible (ASV)].

Before coming to our theme, it is important not to lose sight of the fact that the term *"son of man"* which is used in this text is a title which designates Jesus Christ, to understand it I invite you to read [John 6 verses 51-58], [Matthew 25 verses 21-26].

Now that point has been made let us return to our study. In these various texts, the reality that is presented to us is the return in glory of Jesus, the son of man. It is therefore his second coming that it is.

The word of God presents him to us returning with great glory and accompanied by these angels. What is presented here is clear to me, but some would like to pass these texts as being an allegory, a prophetic image intended to present something else.

To those, I invite them to read this: **"After he had said this, he was taken to heaven. A cloud hid him so that they could no longer see him. They were staring into the sky as he departed. Suddenly, two men in white clothes stood near them.**

*They asked, "Why are you men from Galilee standing here looking at the sky? Jesus, who was taken from you to heaven, will come back in the same way that you saw him go to heaven."* [Acts 1 verses 9-11, GOD'S WORD Translation Bible (GW)].

What we have just read is concrete, it is really what happened, it is not images, or a prophetic story. Here we find the apostles who witness the elevation of Jesus who ascends to heaven, then they see him disappear into the stratosphere. At that moment, certainly, all moved they continued to keep their eyes fixed on the sky, it is there that two men dressed in white (*two angels*) said to them:

*"Jesus, who was taken from you to heaven, will come back in the same way that you saw him go to heaven."*

Here what we are reading is simple for me, for Jesus ascended into heaven at this particular time, and we have the promise that he will return in this same way. In doing so, there is, therefore, no room for doubt, Jesus will therefore return as the word of God promises!

Another reality linked to the return of Jesus Christ is the resurrection of the dead. We have seen that there will be two resurrections of the dead, the first will be that of the Lord's faithful people also called the saints, and then it will be the case for the rest of humanity. If Jesus Christ does not return, that will mean that all those who died in him will not be resurrected!

Also if he does not return, death will not be defeated and eternal life will not be active. Yes because here is what should normally happen: **"But if there is no resurrection of the dead, then Christ has not risen; And if Christ has not risen, then our preaching is in vain [it amounts to nothing] and your faith is devoid of truth and is fruitless (without effect, empty, imaginary, and unfounded).**

**[...] For if the dead are not raised, then Christ has not been raised; And if Christ has not been raised, your faith is mere delusion [futile, fruitless], and you are still in your sins [under the control and penalty of sin];**

**And further, those who have died in [spiritual fellowship and union with] Christ have perished (are lost)! [...] But the fact is that Christ (the Messiah) has been raised from the dead, and He became the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep [in death].**

*For since [it was] through a man that death [came into the world, it is] also through a Man that the resurrection of the dead [has come].*

*For just as [because of their union of nature] in Adam all people die, so also [by virtue of their union of nature] shall all in Christ be made alive. But each in his own rank and turn:*

**Christ (the Messiah) [is] the firstfruits, then those who are Christ's [own will be resurrected] at His coming. After that comes the end (the completion) [...] Take notice! I tell you a mystery (a secret truth, an event decreed by the hidden purpose or counsel of God).**



**We shall not all fall asleep [in death], but we shall all be changed (transformed) In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the [sound of the] last trumpet call. For a trumpet will sound, and the dead [in Christ] will be raised imperishable (free and immune from decay), and we shall be changed (transformed).**

*For this perishable [part of us] must put on the imperishable [nature], and this mortal [part of us, this nature that is capable of dying] must put on immortality (freedom from death).*

**And when this perishable puts on the imperishable and this that was capable of dying puts on freedom from death, then shall be fulfilled the Scripture that says, Death is swallowed up (utterly vanquished forever) in and unto victory". [1 Corinthians 15 verses 13-14, 16-18, 20-24, 51-54, Amplified Bible, Classic Edition (AMPC)].**

The substance I want to take from this text is that if there is no resurrection of the dead to come, our faith is in vain!

Yes, because the very Ba.Ba of the Gospel is that Jesus Christ, who is the Son of God and is himself God, was made man and came to die for us on this filthy cross at Calvary. Then three days later he was resurrected from the dead, and now he gives eternal life to everyone who believes in him, and that, even if we die before he comes back.

Those who are in this case will be resurrected at the sound of the angelic trumpet, and they will be lifted up, alongside those who will be alive at the return of Jesus, into the air with Christ. In addition, the finality of our system of things is the end of death which will be destroyed, thrown into the lake of fire [Revelation 20 verses 11-15].

So, unless we live in an earth where there are no longer any deaths, the eternal kingdom of God cannot be on this earth where every day mourning and the loss of a loved one is mourned. In doing so, to the displeasure of my friend Bertrand, Jesus Christ soon returns in order to destroy death and render to each one according to these works, then he will take with him these faithful children.

To remain on my friend Bertrand who believes that our purpose is to live on this earth and because according to him, Jesus will not return, I would like to present this text: *"The Lord will soon fulfill his promise. Still, some say he's late.*

*In fact, he is patient with you, he doesn't want some to die forever, but he wants everyone to all arrive to change their life.*

**The day of the Lord will come as a thief. This that day, the sky will disappear with a terrible noise, the fire will destroy the stars of the sky, the earth and the actions of its inhabitants will be judged. Since all of this has to go, you understand well what kind of life you have to lead.**

*You must conduct yourself as God wills and remain faithful to him. You are waiting for the day of God to arrive and you wish toto come quickly. On that day, fire will destroy the sky, and the stars will melt in a burning heat.*

**God has promised a new heaven and a new earth where righteousness will dwell. [...]" [2 Peter 3 verses 9-13, Parole de Vie Bible (translated into English from the original text)].**

This earth, this planetary system, where we evolve will be destroyed, hence the fact that the Lord will take these elects with him. To you who read, know that the Lord loves you and has patience with you, me and the rest of mankind, for he would like us to be able to come to repentance and so that the greatest number be saved.

Have you noticed that here also the coming of the Lord is presented to us, thus his second coming, so he will come back as a thief, which symbolises an out of the blue coming. However, although the day and time of his coming is a secret, when he does return, he will not do it on the sly, but all eyes will see it. Here is what it will be:

*"And if those days had not been cut short, no one would be saved. But for the sake of the elect those days will be cut short. Then if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There he is!'*

**Do not believe him. For false messiahs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.**

**Remember, I have told you ahead of time. So then, if someone says to you, 'Look, he is in the wilderness,' do not go out, or 'Look, he is in the inner rooms,' do not believe him. For just like the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so the coming of the Son of Man will be. Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.**

**[...] Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and all the tribes of the earth will mourn.**

**They will see the Son of Man arriving on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he will send his angels with a loud trumpet blast, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other".** [*Matthew 24 verses 22-27, 30-31, New English Translation (NET)*].

One of the realities presented in this text is that Jesus Christ, our Savior, will not come in a hidden way. We are told here that if the one tell you, Christ is here in such and such a place do not believe it!

This reality therefore allows me to affirm that there will be no secret rapture, as certain religion does asserts. When he comes, Jesus will be seen from all over the earth as the lightning that passes from an instant from the the Orient to the Occident. His coming will be to the sound of resounding trumpets, which will resound throughout the earth.

Moreover, as we have seen, the living, those faithful children, will not depart with Jesus Christ, while the members of his faithful people who have died will remain in the dust of the earth, for the Lord will raise them first, and then, all these elect will be lifted up with him.

Thus, until the dead in Christ are resurrected and stand beside the chosen people who will be alive, at the return in glory of Jesus Christ, there will be no rapture. Otherwise, the fact of being lifted up with the Lord in heaven is not a disorganization, as if it were a trip that would have been prepared at the last moment, because here is what the word of God teaches us about it:

*“Do not let your heart be troubled (afraid, cowardly). Believe [confidently] in God and trust in Him, [have faith, hold on to it, rely on it, keep going and] believe also in Me. In My Father’s house are many dwelling places. If it were not so, I would have told you, because I am going there to prepare a place for you.*

**And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back again and I will take you to Myself, so that where I am you may be also. And [to the place] where I am going, you know the way.”** [*John 14 verses 1-4, Amplified Bible (AMP)*].

First of all, it should be noted that this text also specifies Jesus Christ will return.

He went to prepare a place for us in his father's house, and soon he will come back for us. It is not a butler who will come and get us, but our savior and master himself! *Yes !* The Lord is eager to be at our side, like the father of the prodigal son he runs to be next to these children redeemed by grace. It is this reality that the devil hates and does not want you to know, because he the demon will not be received with all this love, because his fate will be to burn.

So, do not let the devil deceive you by insinuating that the Lord will not return and that our becoming is to live forever on this earth.

Our Lord Savior and Master Jesus Christ, will soon return to seek us and on his return he will render to each one according to these good or bad works. Here is what we can read about it: **"For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then shall he render unto every man according to his deeds"**. [*Matthew 16 verse 27, American Standard Version (ASV)*].

The end of those who reject the Lord or who have not prepared themselves to meet him will be to burn at the side of the devil and his henchmen. You must understand that the devil does not want you to integrate this reality of Christ's return, because his objective is that we will not be ready when the Lord Jesus returns.

Through the story of the foolish virgins [*Matthew 25 verse 1-13*], and the contemporaries of Noah [*Matthew 24 verses 37-44*], the Lord exhorts us to prepare ourselves so that we are not surprised by his return, and that we are not ready.

To complete this study on the state of the dead, I invite you to read *Volume II* of this book in the chapter entitled *"Origin, reason and purpose of the worship of the immortality of the soul"*.

Strong from everything we have seen, be vigilant. Faithful people of God, prepare to meet your master, for he is coming soon. Make sure that if you die before his return in glory, that you may go down to the grave as a faithful servant, who when resurrected on the last day will be among those who will live forever with Christ!

The worst scenario of all would be to have walked all our life *"for"* Christ, but according to our human prerogatives and doctrines, to the detriment of what the word of God asks of us and that at his return the Lord rejects us as in [*Matthew 7 verses 21-23*].